

# **Our Friends The Jehovah's Witnesses**

Eric Bruce Price

Tenth Edition  
2004

[www.CreationismOnline.com](http://www.CreationismOnline.com)

## **Contents Page**

1. Working for Jehovah's Witnesses
2. Soul Winning Methods and Techniques
3. The History of the Watchtower Society
4. The Authority of the Watchtower Society
5. Jehovah's Prophet
6. False Prophecies
7. Altered & Discarded Teachings
8. The 1914 Date
9. The 1925 Date and Beth-Sarim
10. The 1975 Date
11. Chronology
  - Babylonian Chronology
  - Watchtower Chronology & Scholarship
  - The Astronomical Diary VAT 4956
12. The Second Coming of Christ
13. Parousia
14. The Millennium (Thousand Years)
15. Christ's Bodily Resurrection & Return
16. Man's Condition in Death
17. The Trinity
18. The Divine Names
19. The Only True God
20. The Deity of Jesus Christ
21. Is God More Than One Person?
22. The Personality of the Holy Spirit
23. Objections to the Trinity
24. Salvation
25. The 144,000 - Heavenly Class
26. The Memorial Service
27. War & Alternative Military Service
28. Attitudes to Governments
29. The Ten Commandments
30. The Sabbath
31. The Days of Creation
32. The Cross or "Torture Stake"?
33. Vaccinations & Blood Transfusions
34. Giving to Charities
35. Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days etc
36. Deity Of Christ In Isaiah
37. Deity Of Christ In Revelation
38. Watchtower Dates And History
39. Common Titles Of Jesus And Jehovah
40. The Deity of Christ In the Book of Isaiah
41. The Deity of Christ in the Book of Revelation
42. 100 Truths About Jesus
43. The Godhead In Scripture

## Preface

One of Jehovah's Witnesses, (then known as Bible Students) called on my mother in the late 1920's and began to share with her the teachings of the Watchtower Society. A warm friendship grew between the two. My mother was deeply impressed with the sincerity and zeal of this lady, but as time went on doubts began to grow concerning the organization she represented. The literature she brought to my mother was a mixture of Pastor Russell's publications. And those of the new society president, judge Rutherford. These publications contradicted themselves. Russell's books taught that Christ returned in 1874 and the resurrection took place in 1878. Now Rutherford was changing these dates to 1914 for Christ's return and 1918 for the resurrection. The earlier publications had large sections outlining the pyramid prophecies which supported the 1874 and 1878 dates. The later editions "re-measured" the pyramid passages to prove the new 1914 and 1918 dates. However the End had not taken place in 1914 as predicted, nor had Christendom been destroyed in 1918 or the Republics disappear in 1920. Such false prophecies could not be hidden from sincere seekers after Truth. My mother became suspicious something was seriously wrong!

During this time Judge Rutherford had also printed the book, Millions Now Living Will Never Die, in which he had foretold the end to come in 1925 and the Princes to be resurrected back on the earth. Details of exactly what was going to happen after 1925 was given in the book, The Way to Paradise. It even outlined how one would be able to call up Abraham and the other Princes in Jerusalem and make application to have loved ones resurrected. (See the Appendix for photocopies of these statements). However, this date had also passed, - to the further disappointment of the Bible Students. Finally in 1929, Judge Rutherford built the Beth Sarim mansion, for the long over due Princes. It was not built in Jerusalem but in Diego, California, with Judge Rutherford moving into it! By now my mother realized that if she was going to find the Truth she would have to look elsewhere. This was not God's organization!

A few years later Mother felt she had at last found the Bible Truth that she was looking for, and she joined the Seventh-day Adventist church. For the rest of her life she worked zealously to share with family and friends these truths. She had no doubt that they were the people described in the last days before Christ's Return: "Here are they that keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of Man." (See Revelation 14:12-15)

However, although my mother became a Seventh-day Adventist and never joined the Jehovah's Witnesses, she never lost her love and concern for them. From a small child she instilled in me this burden to work with pen and voice for these sincere and zealous people, who are perishing with bibles in their hands!

I view our friends, the Jehovah's Witnesses, as a special group of people. They are loyal to their organization, and sincerely follow what they are taught by the Watchtower Society. They did not become Jehovah's Witnesses because it is a popular organization. Most have made big sacrifices for it. Some have died for it. Among them, those needing a blood transfusion after being badly hurt in a car crash or a young mother hemorrhaging in child birth. Such sincere people deserve better than what the Watchtower Society teaches. They deserve Bible truth and every true Christian should share it with them.

In the forty five years of my ministry, I have seen thousands leave the teachings of the Watchtower Society. I have personally had the joy of witnessing the baptism of well over two hundred. These people have become very happy and dedicated Seventh day Adventists, where they have not only found Bible truth, but also friends, and a place where they could work for God. They are thrilled to once more be part of a vigorous organization, that is growing even much faster than the Watchtower Society. In 1975 both organizations had reached memberships over two million, but by 1997 while the Watchtower Society claimed just over five million members, Seventh-day Adventists had grown to well over nine million!

In 1968 the book, God's Channel of Truth - Is it the Watchtower? was published. In it I told the story and reasons why some Jehovah's Witnesses were baptized into the Adventist church. This book has now been translated in over twenty languages in over 300,000 copies. In 1973 I wrote the first edition of Our Friends: The Jehovah's Witnesses. Since then the Society suffered the 1975 date failure for the End of the world. When this false prophecy was added to those of 1874, 1878, 1914, 1915, 1918, 1920 and 1925, many took up the challenge with renewed vigor to show the Witnesses the errors of their organization and thousands left. The Society which once was so sure it had the Truth and could withstand any challenge or investigation, now discouraged its people from reading any literature other than their own. Those leaving the Society were cut off so they could not reveal to others the errors they had found in it. Many Witnesses today still have grave doubts about the Society, but are fearful of being dis-fellowshipped and cut off from family and friends.

However, there are still those who count Truth more important than anything else and they are ready to still search for it. I pray that this publication will help them find salvation and Bible truth as it is centered in the Lord Jesus Christ, "For there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12

Eric Bruce Price

August 1997 Sydney, Australia

# **1. Working With Jehovah's Witnesses**

Jehovah's Witnesses are known to be among the most hard working and sincere of all professed Christians. However they are also known as people who are perishing with Bibles in their hands! These special people need to be led to find Bible truth and salvation in Christ.

## **THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY**

The Watchtower Society of Jehovah's Witnesses has had a very interesting and unique history (see Chapter 3). It has been an organization that has made possibly more false prophecies and taught many erroneous doctrines (see Chapter 6) than any other professed Christian religion in the 20th Century. In one ten year period it was estimated that it changed or discarded 148 different prophecies, doctrines and teachings.

One unique teaching of the organization was that the Second Coming of Christ took place invisibly in 1874. Later this date was discarded for 1914. These dates were both "proved" by the Pyramid prophecies (see Chapter 7) which were also later discarded.

Prophecies were made for the End of the world such as 1914 and 1925, the last being in 1975 (see Chapters 8-10). Each time its members suffered disappointment and loss.

Of greatest concern are those doctrines which threaten life and the eternal salvation of its members.

## **DANGEROUS DOCTRINES**

The Society teaches that there is a heavenly class of only 144,000 people (see Chapters 24-26). Among the 5,167,258 who claimed to be faithful Jehovah's Witnesses in 1996, only 8,757 professed to belong to this class. It is taught that only this heavenly class are to be "born again" and allowed to take the emblems of the Lord's death at the Memorial/Communion/Lord's Supper which is held once yearly near Easter.

However, the Bible teaches in John 3:3, 5 that unless a person is "born again" they cannot be saved or enter into the kingdom of God. Furthermore John 6:53-54 says that if a person does not "eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood" which is the partaking of the emblems of the Lord's death, they will not be resurrected and/or have everlasting life.

This means nearly everyone (5,158,501 of the 5,167,258) who claimed to be one of Jehovah's Witnesses in 1996, had no hope of salvation and they are perishing with Bibles in their hands!

## **LIFE THREATENING DOCTRINES**

One tragic teaching of the Society was when it for over twenty years forbade vaccinations (see Chapter 33).

At the time diphtheria was epidemic. Many children of faithful Witnesses died. Years later the Society admitted in their publications that there was no scriptural proof to condemn vaccinations and they were then permitted. (At the time the Watchtower leaders were being refused entry into foreign countries to conduct big assemblies unless they were vaccinated!) The same happened with organ transplants. In 1967 they were condemned as being cannibalistic. For thirteen years those needing transplants suffered and others died, then in 1980 the Society admitted -there is no Biblical command forbidding it! However, the Society in choosing to condemn blood transfusions has never relented. This teaching has continued to cost many faithful Witnesses their lives as they have been involved in accidents or other life-threatening situations where only a blood transfusion could save them.

## **GOD'S CHANNEL and "PROPHET"**

The Watchtower Society makes the bold claim that it alone is God's Channel of Truth. Its members are thus expected to be loyal and submissive to it. (See Chapter 4)

Throughout its history the Society has claimed that Jehovah God gave it certain truths to proclaim and in 1972 it claimed that it was Jehovah's "Prophet" (See Chapter 5). This was despite all the false prophecies and erroneous teachings which they themselves had either changed or discarded entirely (See Chapters 6-10).

## **APOLOGIES**

Has the Society apologized for its mistakes and the traumas suffered by its members? Few admissions or apologies have been made. In 1993 the Society published the book, "Jehovah's Witnesses - Proclaimers of God's Kingdom, in it some of the false prophecies and changed teachings were excused as "adjustments." On page 635 a half apology for teaching that they would go to heaven in 1914 stated: "We merely inferred it, and evidently erred."

To also excuse its many errors and “adjustments” the Society often quotes Proverbs 4:18: “But the path of the righteous ones is like the bright light that is getting lighter and lighter until the day is firmly established.” (Emphasis mine) However, the Bible equates light with truth and darkness with error. This bright light is already truth not error that is getting lighter.

The Society taught for over forty years that the Great Pyramid in Egypt was “God’s Stone Witness and Prophet” and that God had “designed” it. Then suddenly it was denounced as “Satan’s bible, and not God’s stone witness”! (See Chapter 7) That is not bright light getting brighter!

## **DIFFICULTIES**

Jehovah’s Witnesses are now urged not to read any material that the Society has not published and screened.

After the 1975 date failure, tens of thousands left the organization (see page 16) as they began to examine their history and discover other false prophecies and errors that had been taught over the past century. Many felt bitterly betrayed that the Society they believed taught truth had taught so much error. They photocopied, reprinted and shared from the old Watchtower publications that they had found. This caused a panic in the once confident organization that had in 1968 encouraged people: “to examine, not only what we personally believe, but also what is taught by any religious organization with which we may be associated. If we are lovers of the truth there is nothing to fear from such an examination” Truth p. 13.

In 1972 they had invited a “review” of their record to prove they were Jehovah’s Prophet. The Watchtower p.197

After 1975 all that changed. By March 15, 1986 “The Watchtower” was warning their people to not read any literature other than that put out by themselves. They were not to even open it, but to destroy it immediately.

## **ADVANTAGES OF WORKING FOR WITNESSES**

Jehovah’s Witnesses are sincere people. They already believe in the inspiration of the Bible, Baptism by immersion, Creation and a number of other doctrines believed by Seventh-day Adventists. When they accept further Bible truth they will continue to study it and follow it enthusiastically.

With prayer, patience, Christian friendship and love, these people may be won to Christ and enjoy happy fellowship in the Seventh-day Adventist church.

## **2. Soul Winning Methods**

### **A. AS CO-LABOURERS WITH GOD.**

1. God’s Work is to: Convict, convert and finally judge. From the outset remember this and relax. All you have to do is the “sowing”, the results or “reaping- are in His hands!
2. Our Work is to:
  - a. Be Loving. You will never win any soul that you do not love. Pray that God will help you to do just that, even when it is difficult, and it can be!
  - b. Be Concerned. They are perishing with Bibles in their hands! It is a matter of life and death that they accept Christ for their salvation and follow Bible truth. It is essential that you show this loving concern to them.
  - c. Be Sincere. They must have complete faith in you as a guide, example and friend if they are going to finally leave the Watchtower Society and all their friends.
  - d. Be Positive. Let them see that you are positive that you have Bible truth and the promise of eternal life now in Jesus Christ (1 John 5:11-13).
  - e. Always Remain Calm. If you lose your temper, you will lose everything. If they cannot or will not see your point, leave them to the Lord. Remember He had to deal with the original “Jehovah’s Witnesses” (Isaiah 43:10) in His day, and they were more stiff-necked and frustrating than the group we have today. However, the words He lovingly spoke were remembered and under the mighty working of the Holy Spirit thousands accepted the Truth at a later date.
  - f. Never Argue. The Holy Spirit cannot work in that atmosphere. Calmly allow them to have their say on a certain point, and let them express themselves fully on it. Do not enter into what they are saying until they are finished. Then have your say, and they will then be more likely to listen to you and respect your rights to also be heard. If they say something you do not agree with, answer:

‘What the Watchtower Society teaches on this point could be right, but from my understanding of the Bible, I believe it teaches so and so...’ and present sound scriptural reasons in your answer.

9. Never Ridicule or Embarrass the Individual. They are not at fault. It is the Watchtower Society that has made the errors and mistakes. Do not say, “You teach” or “You believe” but rather The Society teaches or believed. Show love and sympathy towards the Witnesses, who you know to be sincere and lovely people. They have been deceived by the Society, and the blame is to be firmly but kindly laid at its feet.

## **B. THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY**

a. Its Authority. At the head of the organization is a small group of men who are believed to be of the 144,000 or “heavenly class”, and it is their responsibility to channel God’s truth for these last days to His people. Because of this fact, no article or book published by the Society has shown the name of the author, since the days of Judge Rutherford and Pastor Russell, who they also claim were God’s Channel of Truth in the Watchtower Society. Thus the Witnesses are taught that what the Watchtower publishes is truth, and they enjoy looking forward to this continual flow-of “new light” in this manner, even though it often contradicts “truths” it previously taught. The April 1, 1972, Watchtower magazine even made the bold claim, that it is “Jehovah’s Prophet- for these last days. (See the article in Chapter 5, on page 9.) Thus one of the major problems in winning Jehovah’s Witnesses is their faith in the authority of the Society. In reality they are more loyal to the Society than Roman Catholics are to the authority of the Pope. It is therefore essential to break their confidence in the Watchtower Society as a reliable spokesman for God, and their means of salvation. The Watchtower’s mistakes and false prophecies are abundant, but the Witnesses are taught to love the Society and be loyal to it, so it often takes a lot of tactful and undeniable evidence to accomplish this task. When this is done you can then lead them to Christ for salvation. Acts 4:12, 1 John 5:11-13.

b. Show a Willingness to Learn from Them. Sometimes you can only study with a “mature” Witness on this basis. You then have to present your position by saying, “I would be very happy to be a Jehovah’s Witness but these are my problems. I could not have faith in an organization that has made so many false prophecies or does not keep all of God’s commandments. It teaches two Gods and not one true God. I would not be able to partake of the emblems of Christ’s body, and so there would not be a resurrection for me.” etc.

c. Loan Them Literature to Read. Do not give it. Loan them a book or paper and ask them to read it and tell you where it is wrong. If you give them literature they are likely to either burn it or not read it. With this approach, however, they will read and study it, if they think their answers will help you. Many have been won in this way, as they have studied out the issues, thinking they were helping another to find the Truth.

d. The Personal Doubts of Witnesses. Many Witnesses have secret doubts about some of the Society's teachings, although they will not admit to it. These doubts vary greatly with the different people. Some will be disturbed when they learn of false prophecies or changed teachings, whereas it will not worry others who are more concerned because they do not keep all of the commandments, or partake of the emblems of the Lord's Supper etc. Thus there is no rule as to which doctrine to commence with, to show them they have not all the truth. You must discover these yourself. As you do, be careful to avoid issues that they are personally dogmatic about, and build on those where the truth is beginning to dawn. For years the Society has emphasized that if one doctrine in an organization is wrong, then the whole is wrong.

a. Encourage Them to Investigate Their Own Teachings. Agree with them on the statement made in the Watchtower book, "The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life."(11968) page 13:

“We need to examine, not only what we personally believe, but also what is taught by any religious organization with which we may be associated. Are its teachings in full harmony with God's Word, or are they based on the traditions of men? If we are lovers of the truth, there is nothing to fear from such an examination.” (emphasis supplied).

f. Know Their Teachings and Publications. It may be necessary to let the Witnesses give you a few studies or sessions to tell you briefly of their beliefs. Also get acquainted with their books and publications past and present.

Books which have been written by former Witnesses can also be helpful. However, some of these can be biased and even so bitter, their facts have been distorted because of personal hurts. One book that is of real value, however is, Crisis of Conscience by Raymond Franz. He was a member of the governing body, and his book is very factual.

## **C. DOCTRINES MOST HELPFUL IN WINNING JW'S**

1. The Society's False Prophecies. "Believe it not" Matthew 24:24.

2. Chronology. The basis of the 1914 date is 19 years in error.
3. Commandments of God. God's people keep them all. Revelation 14:12. This includes the seventh-day Sabbath.
4. Creation Days. It is unscriptural and impossible for each day to be a period of 7,000 years. See Genesis 1.
5. Godhead. There is only one true God - not two: an Almighty God and a Mighty God.
6. Salvation. Only those who are "born-again", can be saved, but in the Society only the 144,000 claim to be. Then it means the rest are lost. John 3:3, 5; Romans 8:6-14.
  
7. Lord's Supper/Memorial Service. There is no resurrection for those who do not partake of the emblems of Christ's body and blood. John 6:53, 54.
8. Christ's Second Coming/Presence/Parousia. This did not happen in 1914, but is still future.
9. Signs of the Second Advent. These show that Christ's Coming is near not here. Matthew 24:33.
10. The New Jerusalem. It is a literal city which comes to this earth, where the wicked surround it. Revelation 20:5, 9; 22:15.
11. Millennium. "The rest of the dead" do not live until the 1,000 years has ended. They are not resurrected during it. Revelation 20:5.
12. Organization. Not all are to be ministers, teachers etc. All have different gifts to use for God, as they bear witness to Him. 1 Corinthians 12:12-20, 27-30.
13. Attitude to Rulers and Those in Authority. This has improved since early 1960s when this teaching was changed. However, honor is still not given to those to whom honor is due. Romans 13:1, 2, 7; 1 Peter 2:13-18.
14. War Question. While in times of war or peace, Christians are not to kill, they are still to follow Christ's example of doing a work of healing, even to those involved. See Luke 7:2-10.
15. Blood Transfusions. The WT teaching is unscriptural. A transfusion is not eating blood, or it would be given by the mouth. On the other hand to refuse a life-saving measure could be the same as breaking the commandment "Thou shall not kill" or commit suicide.

## ***D. SOUL-WINNING AIDS***

1. The Use of Watchtower Publications. Since most JW'S will only use and accept Watchtower publications, it is essential to know and use them. You should underline and index at the back of each publication, passages of interest for future reference.

a. Old Publications. These are now very difficult to obtain but this kit has some photos and copies of portions of some of the most useful. Many J.W'S have never seen these old books, and have no idea what they contain. This includes their false prophecies as well as previous teachings such as the Pyramid Prophecies, the 6,000 years ending in 1872, (they now teach it ended in 1975!), the Beth Sarim house for Abraham, Isaac etc. to occupy when they were to be resurrected after 1925 etc.

The Witnesses today are inclined to pass off their old publications with these false prophecies and teachings, as entirely irrelevant to the organization today, which they believe is continually getting brighter light. However, The Watchtower, April 1, 1972 has an article (included in this Kit) entitled, "They Shall Know a Prophet was Among Them", in which they claim to be Jehovah's Prophet and invite one to -review the record" since 1914, to prove their claim, that they worked under -angelic direction and support", and -were directed from heaven." (Practically every Watchtower publication has been published or reprinted since 1914, including Pastor Russell's "Millennium Dawn" or "Studies in the Scriptures" series).

a. New Publications. These are comparatively easy to obtain, and are essential to have. You need a copy of:

1. The New World Bible.
2. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures. This contradicts and clearly shows many errors in the NW.



3. Babylon the Great is Fallen. For Chronology.
4. Truth. Has interesting comments on the commandments.

Further publications are mentioned in this kit, and it is to your advantage if you can add them to your library.

2. Use Charts, Pictorial Aids etc. Display them as soon as possible and leave them up throughout the entire study or discussion. They will do much to re-orientate their Watchtower thought concepts, especially on the subject of the Millennium and Second Coming.

## ***E. THE SUPERIORITY OF ADVENTIST WORK AND TEACHINGS.***

1. Seventh-day Adventists are a faster growing organization. See comparison growth chart - chapter on 1975.
2. Seventh-day Adventists have Never Set Dates. The church was organized in 1863, and has emphasized Christ's warnings that dates were never to be set for, the end or Armageddon.
3. Adventists carry on a much more thorough world-wide work. They work in more places, with more languages as well as air over 7,000 weekly radio and TV programs in these languages, to every country in the world.
4. Adventists have more avenues for their members to work and witness. They recognize from 1 Corinthians 12 that all the members of Christ's body or congregation are different, and have different gifts. They work happily where they can use these gifts, such as in the following programs and outreaches: Door-to-door work, personal evangelism, welfare work, Sabbath Schools, Public evangelistic crusades, Radio-TV work, SHF work, Hospitals, Clinics, Youth work, Health and Temperance Programs, Foreign Mission etc.
5. Adventists have excellent facilities for children and youth. They have excellent programs in their church activities, and a church school program that can take children from Primary to University level.

## ***F. SHOW WHY J.W'S CAN BECOME HAPPY SDA'S.***

Some of the reasons why Jehovah's Witnesses can join the Seventh-day Adventist Church and become happy members is because they look for an organization that is:

- a. Bible centered.
- b. Strongly evangelistic.
- c. A growing organization.
- d. Working in all the world.
- e. Encourages but does not force its members to work and witness.
- f. They find above all else, Jesus Christ as their personal Savior.

## **3. The History of the Watchtower Society**

### ***GENERAL HISTORY***

The history of the Watchtower Society is an interesting one. Could Christ have had it in mind when He warned that in the last days there would be false prophets?

1870. Pastor Russell began to study with date setting Second Adventists, who had set the date, 22nd October 1874 for the visible return of Christ.

1874. Christ did not come as expected. The group were disappointed.

1876. Pastor Russell convinced by N. H. Barbour that Christ did come in 1874 but it was invisible.
1877. Russell begins to teach publicly the 1874 date and 1878 is set for the literal resurrection of the saints, 1914 is set for the end of the world.
1878. Disappointment because no literal resurrection took place. It was then concluded that it did take place but it was invisible!
1879. Zion's Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence commenced on July 1.
1886. First volume of the Millennial Dawn series. (Called Studies in the Scriptures [SS] in 1904)
1914. Another date failure when they had not been taken to heaven by this date and the End/ Armageddon did not take place. (See Ch. 8)
1915. A further disappointment when Abraham Isaac etc. were not resurrected as predicted to take up the Kingdom on earth. (Seep. 61)
1916. Pastor Russell died and went to heaven to direct the Society from there. (SS, Volume 7 p. 144) Judge J.F. Rutherford becomes the second president of the Watchtower Society.
1917. He releases The Finished Mystery Volume 7 of SS, It confirms the dates 1874 and 1878 and adds the 1918, 1920 and 1925 dates.
1918. Christendom and its churches were not destroyed as foretold in SS Volume 7 p. 485.
1920. The republics did not disappear in the fall of that year as foretold in SS Volume 7 p. 258. The book Millions Now Living Will Never Die, was published outlining how Abraham, Isaac and the Princes of Hebrews 11 would be resurrected and the Kingdom set up. (See pages 62-62)
1924. The book Way to Paradise published. In it a description is given of what would take place next year in 1925, and how people would call up Abraham in Jerusalem and arrange to have their loved ones resurrected. (See pages 65-67)
1925. Another major date failure when again what the Society had predicted failed to take place.
1927. Creation p.325 explains that the world had ended 'legally' in 1914. The Society also discovers that the Resurrection took place in 1918 and not in 1878. (Paradise p. 192)
1928. It is estimated that in the past ten years 148 points of doctrine or interpretations of scripture have been changed by the Watchtower Society. (Another Gospel, by Ray W. Johnson)
1929. The house Beth Sarim is built for the Princes who were expected in 1925. This is to cover up for that date failure and ease the disappointment. The Princes will still come!
1930. Light Volumes 1 & 2 explain many new teachings. The events of Matthew 24 are now to be applied to the events after 1914 not before!
1931. The name Jehovah's Witnesses adopted. Vindication Volume 1 p. 338-339 admits the date failures of 1914, 1918 and 1925 caused disappointment. The Society now says it had 'learned to quit fixing dates for the future.'
1934. A new class, originally called Jonadabs was created of people who were not "born again" and would have an earthly not heavenly hope.
1935. Vaccinations condemned.
1942. Rutherford died of cancer at the Both Sarim mansion in San Diego, California, USA. He is succeeded by N. H. Knorr.
1945. About this time blood transfusions were for condemned.



1950. New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures released. It was written by members of the Society, and is a biased translation which has added and altered many Bible texts to agree with Witness teachings.

1958. The Watchtower p.575, vaccinations are now permissible, but not blood transfusions.

1963. Babylon the Great Has Fallen! Misquoted Harper's Bible Dictionary to support the erroneous chronology of the Society. (See page 24)

1966. Baptisms are at an all time low so articles in the Watchtower and Awake magazines, and Life Everlasting in Freedom of the Sons of God, set a new date that End will come in 1975. This increases baptisms. (See pages 16 and 17)

1969. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures. It uses the Greek text revised by Westcott and Hort and has in its margin the New World translation. This reveals many errors and contradictions, including words added and other mistranslations. The Greek text used is also a very questionable one (See article on next page) 1972. Society claims it is "Jehovah's Prophet" (See Chapter 5)

1975. "The wicked world's end' does not come as expected. (See Chapter 10)

1977. N. H. Knorr dies after witnessing the devastating effect of the 1975 date failure. He is succeeded by Frederick W. Franz.

1978. The Society suffers a -1.4% membership loss as a result of the 1975 date failure. In 1974 it had enjoyed a 13.5% increase. (See page 16)

1983. Raymond Franz writes Crisis of Conscience which has a devastating effect on the Society, as it reveals many "inside' problems and errors.

1984. The Watchtower, May 15, features the article, '1914 - The Generation That Will Not Pass Away'

1995. The above teaching which has been the motivation of Witnesses for over fifty years is now discarded, by new light revealed in The Watchtower, November 1. (For further details see the article on the next page)

## **THE NEW WORLD BIBLE**

The New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures containing the 27 books of the New Testament, first appeared in 1950.

Concerning the translators of this Bible, Crisis of Conscience p. 50 says:

"The New World Translation bears no translator's name and is presented as the anonymous work of the 'New World Translation Committee.' Other members of that Committee were Nathan Knorr, Albert Schroeder and George Gangas; Fred Franz, however, was the only one with sufficient knowledge of the Bible languages to attempt translation of this kind. He studied Greek for two years in the University of Cincinnati but was only self-taught in Hebrew."

The master Greek text chosen was that of Westcott and Hort. These men have been described by conservative Protestants as both 'unbelievers' and "heretics".

They did not believe in Bible infallibility, New Testament miracles, Creation, Literal devil, Heaven, Second Coming, Christ's substitutionary death, or Inviting people to receive Christ as Savior.

Some of the things that they believed in were: Mary worship, purgatory, prayers for the dead, sacrament devotion, communism, in contacting demons, and decided between variant readings on the basis of their "inner consciousness". See their biographies by their sons (Hort 2:248)

They based their texts mainly on the Vaticanus and Sinaiticus manuscripts of the notorious fourth century, when Constantine had corrupted and changed copies of the Bible made to suit the apostasies which were entering into the Christian church at that time.

For instance it was Constantine who passed the first law changing the Sabbath of the commandment to Sunday.

Thus Rev. 22:14 (KJV) was changed from:

"Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city"

... to read as it appears in the New World bible...

"Happy are those who wash their robes, that the authority to go to the trees of life may be theirs and that they may gain entrance into the city by its gates."

However, Tertullian (AD 200) Cyprian (AD 248-258) and Tertonian (AD 390) all quote Revelation 22:14 as "do his commandments". The first to use "wash their robes" was Athanasius, Bishop of Alexandria (AD 326-373)

Westcott and Hort rejected the Received Text which is based on 95% of the manuscripts in favor of the 5% such as the Vaticanus which leaves out words and whole clauses at least 1491 times and the Sinaiticus manuscript which was worse. Both manuscripts contained the Apocrypha which supports prayers for the dead.

## **THE 1914 GENERATION**

For many years the Watchtower Society applied the words of Jesus in Matthew 24:34: "Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur." To refer to the generation who were living in 1914:

"This generation is getting up in years now. A great number of them have already passed away in death. Yet Jesus very pointedly said: "This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur. Some of them will still be alive to see the end of this wicked system. This means that only a short time is left before the end comes! (Psalm 90:10) So now is the time to take urgent action if you do not want to be swept away with this wicked system." YOU CAN LIVE FOREVER IN PARADISE ON EARTH, Page 154, 1988 Edition.

"The Watchtower" May 15, 1984 featured on its front cover a picture of elderly Witnesses with the caption, "1914 - The Generation That Will Not Pass A way". (See it on the back cover) In 1968 the Society in the Truth book p.95 was using this (see above) to urge the Witnesses to greater activity. This was their great argument that time was short!

As the years passed and the "1914 generation" were passing away, efforts had to be made to extend the starting age of the generation:

1968. The October 8, Awake p. 13-14 set the starting age at 15 or over

1980. The October 15, The Watchtower, p.31 reduced the starting age to 10 years of age.

1984. The May 15, The Watchtower, p.5, the starting age was reduced to new born babies!

By 1995, this "1914 generation" of those born in 1914 were now over 80 years of age, The Biblical lifetime - (not merely generation) of "threescore years and ten, and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years..." (Ps. 90: 10) had been exceeded. Once again the Watchtower Society was in trouble. What would they do?

1995. The November 1, The Watchtower, p. 17, announced: "The term 'generation' as used by Jesus refers principally to contemporary people of a certain historical period."

With this new "truth" and the urgency of the generation limitation gone, worldwide service hours in 1996 dropped by 10 million hours. In 1997 steps are being made to rectify this.

## **4. The Authority of the Watchtower Society**

Throughout the history of the Watchtower Society, its presidents and Governing Body have wielded tremendous authority and control over the members. This has been accomplished by this small select group claiming to be the faithful and discreet slave class of Matthew 24:45-47. They not only claim to be "God's Channel of Truth" and His "spokesmen", but have even made the bold claim of being Jehovah's Prophet.

In his book, Crisis of Conscience (1983) Raymond Franz, the author, who was a former member of the Governing Body tells how this select group function:

"Not that we are the masters over your faith, but we are fellow workers for your joy, for it is by your faith that you are standing." -2 Corinthians 1:24.

"The above quoted statement of Paul repeatedly came into my mind during the nine years of my participation in the Governing Body of Jehovah's Witnesses. I could wish that all Witnesses might have the experience of participation. Perhaps then they could understand what words alone cannot convey.

To clarify what the Governing Body is:

Jehovah's Witnesses understand that Christ Jesus, as Head of the congregation, feeds and governs his congregation by means of a "faithful and discreet slave" class. This class is now composed of a remnant of the 144,000 persons anointed as heirs of Christ's heavenly kingdom. But from among such class there is a small number of men who act as a Governing Body and perform all administrative functions for the global congregation, not only for the present number of 9,500 "anointed ones" out of whom these men are drawn, but also for the more than two million other persons associated who are not considered to be among the heavenly heirs. It seemed an awesome responsibility for me when I became one of eleven members of the worldwide Governing Body in 1971 (the number later grew to as many as eighteen in 1977 and today stands at... "

We would urge our readers to add this book to their library. In it he tells of the way the lives of Jehovah's Witnesses are controlled by the Society. He also gives an insight into the tragedies the organization has caused by enforcing upon the members restrictions, and then altering such requirements. At all times members are expected to be loyal to the Society and submissive:

“Those who recognize Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, therefore, must recognize and accept this appointment of the "faithful and discreet slave" and be submissive to it.” - The WATCHTOWER, page 590, 1967.

“Therefore, in submitting to Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, we must be in full and complete agreement with every feature of its apostolic procedure and requirements.

#### UNITY MAINTAINED BY SUBMISSION

“Do not fear that you might lose your identity or freedom by submission. Members of the first-century Christian congregation willingly submitted themselves to the direction of the organization through its governing body.” -The WATCHTOWER, page 592, 1967.

## **THE FAITHFUL AND DISCREET SLAVE**

Matthew 24:45, (NW) “Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time?”

For over a century the Watchtower Society has claimed to be that faithful servant:

“The WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY is the greatest corporation in the world, because from the time of its organization until now the Lord has used it as His channel through which to make known the Glad Tidings.” - THE FINISHED MYSTERY, (1917) p.144.

The above claim was made even though 1914 and all that they had prophesied for it had failed to come to pass! (See the chapter on 1914). Sixty years later in 1977, at the masthead of The Watchtower magazine was the following claim:

“A watchtower enables a person to see far into the distance and announce to others what is coming. Can a magazine serve similarly in our day? Yes, from its first issue (July 1879) onward, The Watchtower, published by Jehovah's Witnesses, has done just that. November 15, 1977, Volume 98, Number 22.

This was made two years after 1975 had passed and left tens of thousands of faithful Witnesses so devastated they were leaving the organization! (See the chapter on 1975). It is still the cornerstone of the Society's teachings today:

“(Matthew 24:45-47) On his return in Kingdom power in the year 1914, did Christ find a "faithful and discreet slave" class providing spiritual "food," or information? Yes, he found such a "slave" made up of the remaining ones on earth of his 144,000 "brothers." (Revelation 12:10; 14:1-3) And since 1914 millions of persons have accepted the "food" they provide, and have begun practicing true religion along with them. This organization of God's servants is known as Jehovah's Witnesses.” - You Can Live Forever In Paradise on Earth, (1982) p. 193.

## **HAS THIS SOCIETY BEEN FAITHFUL?**

The Watchtower Society has always claimed to have been faithful in carrying out what it believes is its God-given commission. However, the history of the organization presents a very different picture. Its past is literally strewn with false prophecies and erroneous and discarded teachings. Truth should be built upon truth, but in the case of the Watchtower Society it has often been one error added to another.

Those who have joined the Society should have another look at it, and certainly those who have not yet joined. Since this organization makes such bold claims, every lover of Truth should investigate its history and teachings. When that is thoroughly done, there will be no doubt that it is numbered among those of whom Jesus warned: “Believe it not” Matthew 24:23-24.

## **5. Jehovah's Prophet**

From: “The WATCHTOWER”, APRIL 1, 1972, pages 197-200.

“JEHOVAH GOD Is Interested In having people know him. Though he is Invisible to human eyes, he provides various ways by which they can know his personality. They can know what to expect from Him and what He expects of them.

One can come to understand that Jehovah is a God of surpassing wisdom by observing creation. This also reveals the loving care with which he designed things for man's welfare and enjoyment. A second way to know God Is through his Word of truth, the Bible. Herein one finds the full expression of Jehovah's purpose toward mankind-why man is on the earth and the blessings that God has in store.

A third way of coming to know Jehovah God is through his representatives. In ancient times he sent prophets as His special messengers. While these men foretold things to they also served the people by telling them of God's will for them at that time often

also warning them of dangers and calamities. People today can view the creative works. They have at hand the Bible, but it is little read or understood, So, does Jehovah have a prophet to warn them of dangers to come?

## IDENTIFYING THE PROPHET

These questions can be answered in the affirmative. Who is this prophet? The clergy of the so-called "Christian" nations hold themselves before the people as being the ones commissioned to speak for God. But as pointed out in the previous issue of this magazine, they have failed God and failed as proclaimers of His kingdom by approving a man-made political organization, the League of Nations (now the United Nations), as "the political expression of the Kingdom of God on Earth."

However, Jehovah did not let the people of Christendom, as led by the clergy go without being warned that the League was a counterfeit substitute for the real kingdom of God. He had a "prophet" to warn them. This "prophet" was not one man, but was a body of men and women.

It was the small group of footstep followers of Jesus Christ, known at that time as International Bible Students. Today they are known as Jehovah's Christian Witnesses. They are still proclaiming a warning, and have been joined and assisted in their commissioned work by hundreds of thousands of persons who have listened to their message with belief

Of course, it is easy to say this group acts as a "prophet" of God. It is another thing to prove it. The only way this can be done is to review the record. What does it show?

During the World War 1 period this group, the International Bible Students, was very active in preaching the good news of God's kingdom, as their Leader Jesus Christ had set this work before them in his prophecy at Matthew 24:14. They took literally Jesus' words to the Roman governor Pontius Pilate: "My kingdom is no part of this world." (John 18:36) They also took to heart Jesus' words to his followers: "You are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world." They expected to suffer for living according to that rule, just as Jesus went on to say, "on this account the world hates you." (John 15:19) Hatred toward them grew into violence during World War 1.

These Bible Students had long been concerned with Ezekiel and his prophecy. In 1917 they published a book entitled "The Finished Mystery" explaining the book of Ezekiel as well as that of Revelation. This book was criticized by the clergy as false to the Word of Jehovah.

Notes on Page 197:

The claim on this page to be "Jehovah's Prophet" is plain and unmistakable. The thing however, that is even more remarkable is the invitation to review the record! That is the last thing the Watchtower Society should have done, with its history down through the years with failed dates, false prophecies and changed teachings! In this Kit we will be accepting the Society's invitation to review the record.

Notes on Page 198:

It is incredulous to read here that the Watchtower Society would even mention the book, The Finished Mystery, in connection with proving they are a prophet. See the list of false prophecies made in this book, which have been photocopied in this Kit.

Notes on Page 199:

On this page the Society claims- "It is significant that, in 1931, after twelve years of faithful service..."

In view of what transpired in those twelve years, from 1919 to 1931, one is staggered to read this claim! It was during these years that the 1925 date was set, through the book, Millions Now Living Will Never Die, and other publications, including The Way to Paradise. Excerpts from both of these books are included in this Kit at the back. When this date failed, thousands became discouraged and left the Society. Rather than be faithful and admit their mistake, the Society instead, built the house Beth Sarim as a cover-up!

Notes on Page 200:

Here the Society is claiming that what they are doing is under angelic direction and support. Then they go on to claim:

"And since no word or work of Jehovah can fail, for he is God Almighty, the nations will see the fulfillment of what these witnesses say as directed from heaven."

The Society was so sure of what was going to happen in 1975 they felt they could make this bold claim and challenge. Finally they claim:

"Jehovah is interested not only in the vindication of his own name, but also in vindicating his prophet."

These extravagant claims were made in 1972 when the Society was confident the End would come in 1975.

## **6. False Prophecies**

One of the outstanding features of the Watchtower Society from its inception, has been its date-setting. The failure of these dates has been the cause of much anguish to its people, and huge losses in membership. The altering of its teachings has also caused embarrassment, and membership losses.

### **DATE-SETTERS**

When Pastor C.T. Russell first associated with the group of date-setting Second Adventists, they were teaching Christ's Return was about to take place in October, 1874. Despite the fact that the time passed and they were disappointed, Russell continued to set dates, and this has become one of the features of the Watchtower Society. When one set of dates fail, and the Society has survived the trauma, then another set is made to replace them. The most recent date to be set was 1975, which just completed a century of date setting. When this date failed, thousands left the Society. For a few years after 1975, the Society lost more members than it gained, - see Chart with the section on 1975.

### **SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS & DATE-SETTING**

By the time the Seventh-day Adventist church was organized in 1863, it was taking a very strong stand against date setting. Many of its leaders had experienced the 1844 date failure, and knew the tragedy that it can bring. As early as 1847, the group who were later to become Seventh-day Adventists published their first book, *Early Writings* and on page 22, they were strongly counseled against setting times for Christ's return.

The Second Adventists, who set the date 1874, (thirty years after 1844, to parallel, the thirty years before Christ commenced His ministry on earth) were a group who kept the first-day of the week as their Sabbath. It was concerning them that Pastor Russell wrote:

“There for the first time (1868), I heard something of the views of Second Adventism, by Jonas Wendell, long since deceased. Thus confess indebtedness to Adventists as well as to other Bible students.” *The Finished Mystery*, (Volume 7) page 53.

The Biblical reason why Seventh-day Adventists opposed date-setting was:

Matthew 24:36, "But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only."

If Jesus chose not to know the time of His return, and state the fact, then His followers were to take His example.

### **WARNING OF FALSE PROPHETS**

Matthew 24:24, warns of false prophets in the last days. The people who set these dates, and make these false prophecies, the Bible warns us against. It even says that if it were possible such organizations could deceive the very elect. Of all organizations living in these last days, none possibly have made more false prophecies than the Watchtower Society.

### **CLAIM TO BE JEHOVAH'S PROPHET**

One of the most astonishing claims that the Watchtower Society ever made appeared in the April 1, 1972 issue of *The Watchtower* magazine. At that time the organization was in a state of excitement and expectation that the End was going to occur in 1975. They were very confident of their predictions and frequently referred to the fact that they had taken their calculations from very reliable Bible chronology. It was in this climate that they made the claim that they were: Jehovah's "Prophet."

(See the previous chapter, and note the extravagant claims that the Society made! The most astounding thing was the invitation to review the record to prove they had acted as a prophet of God!) Of course one who makes predictions in the name of God, must be a "Prophet". The question is, What type of

Prophet?" As the record is reviewed, one will be left in no doubt to the answer to this question!

### **SOME FALSE PROPHECIES AND TEACHINGS**

At the back of this Kit are photocopied sections of old out-of-print Watchtower publications. These can be studied to see exactly what the Society did predict and teach. It is almost impossible to secure any of these books today:

*Millennial Dawn*, Volume 2, "The Time is at Hand"

*Millennial Dawn*, Volume 3, "Thy Kingdom Come"

Studies in the Scriptures, Volume 4, "The Day of Vengeance"  
Millions Now Living Will Never Die  
The Way to Paradise  
Salvation

## 1776

**1776** "And this long persecution, in which 'many were purified and made white and tried,' and in which the Mother of Harlots was 'drunk with the blood of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus' (Rev. 17:6) ended as we have already shown, practically in **1776**.." {**BATT** 584} [Also see **1799**]

## 1780

**1780**  
"signs in sun, moon and stars [of] Matthew 24:29" {**WR** Jan 1885 711}  
**1780**

"Are these signs to be regarded as literal or as symbolic? and have they yet been fulfilled? We answer that they have had a literal fulfilment, and are now having a symbolic fulfilment much more momentous. On May 19, **1780** (still 'in those days,' the 1260 years of Papal power, but after that power had begun to wane and the brunt of the tribulation had passed) a phenomenal darkening of the sun occurred, for which scientists of that time and since have never been able to account.. This unaccountable day, except as a sign from the Lord, is reckoned to have extended over 320,000 square miles - an area about twenty-five times the size of Palestine, to which the signs of the first advent were limited. Indeed, the fact that these signs were chiefly confined to the New England and Middle States need not surprise us, when we remember that the first movement amongst the 'Virgins'\* (Matt. 25:1-5) was chiefly in the same locality. And that God should use the 'land of liberty' for sending the message of these signs to the world, is no more wonderful than that he has been pleased to send from the same quarter many of the modern blessings and inventions and lessons, recognized by the whole world, and aptly emblemized by the gift of the great French artist, Bartholdi, to New York harbor - the statue of 'Liberty Enlightening the World.'" {**BATT** 585-8}

## 1798

**1798** "Start of 'the last days'" [i.e. after the end of 1260 days of Rev 12.] {**HOTW** 1147}

## 1798 - 1799

### 1798-1799

"Having thus furnished grounds for establishing the identity of this character (Napoleon), whose deeds mark the beginning of the 'Time of the End,' the prophecy proceeds to show which particular event of that time is to be understood as definitely marking the exact date of the beginning of the 'Time of the End.' This event is shown to be Napoleon's invasion of Egypt, which covered a period of a year and nearly five months. He sailed May, **1798** and, returning, landed in France Oct. 9, **1799**. This campaign is graphically described in a few words in verses 40-44. Verse 40: 'And at the (fixed) Time of the End shall the king of the South (Egypt) fight against him, and the king of the North (England) shall come against him like a tempest, with chariots and with horsemen (the Egyptian Mamelukes, etc.) and with a great navy. (The English forces consisted of a navy under Admiral Nelson.) And he (Napoleon) shall enter into the countries, and shall destroy and pass through (victoriously).'" {**TKIC** 44-5}

### 1798-1799

"Napoleon began this Egyptian campaign in **1798**, finished it and returned to France on October 1, **1799**. The campaign is briefly, yet graphically, described in the prophecy, verses 40 to 44 (Daniel 11:40-44); and being completed in **1799** marks, according to the Prophet's own words, the beginning of the 'time of the end'" {**THOG** 228-9, **CREA** 293}

## 1799

**1799**  
"After the three and a half years, 1260 days, when Elijah returned from the wilderness, the errors of Jezebel's priests were manifested, the true God was honored, and copious rains followed. 1 Kings 18:41-45. At the end of 1260 years the power of the truth and its witnesses was manifested (A.D. **1799**)" {**TIAH** 256}



**1799**

".. this great apostasy or falling away mentioned by Paul has come, and that this Man of Sin has been developed, has sat 'in the temple of God' (the real, not the typical), has fulfilled all the predictions of the apostles and prophets concerning his character, work, etc., has been revealed, and now, since A.D. **1799**, is being consumed by the spirit of the Lord's mouth (the truth), and will be utterly destroyed during this day of the Lord's wrath and revelation with flaming fire of retribution, already beginning." {**TIAH** 272-3}

**1799**

"Henceforth we deal with the Antichrist, whose gradual development and organization from secretly working ambition are a fitting prelude to the terrible character displayed after the coveted power had been grasped - from 539 A.D. to **1799** A.D., 1260 years." {**TIAH** 296}

**1799**

"**1799** .. start of 'the last days'" {**WR** Jan/Feb 1889 1093}

**1799**

"THE 'Time of the End,' a period of one hundred and fifteen (115) years, from A.D. **1799** to A.D. **1914**, is particularly marked in the Scriptures.. Though our information pointing out the date of this period is furnished in Daniel's prophecy, we know that he understood nothing at all concerning it, as he said: 'I heard, but I understood not.' (Daniel 12:8). In answer to his anxious inquiries he was told that the words were closed up and sealed until the Time of the End. It follows, therefore, that no one could understand the prophecy before **1799** .. But **1799** was only the beginning of the period known as 'the Time of the End,' within the limits of which every vestige of that system shall pass away.. We have thus shown that **1799** began the period called the Time of the End; that in this time Papacy is to be consumed piece-meal" {**TKIC** 23-4/48/59} [Did every vestige even of the Papacy pass away in **1914**?]

**1799**

"The length of time this persecution was to continue is not stated here, except that it will be concluded as appointed, at the Time of the End. From other scriptures we learn that it was a period of 1260 years, which ended with A.D. **1799**, a date prominently noted by Daniel and the Revelator as well as in history." {**TKIC** 38}

**1799**

".. the Lord's little flock of consecrated followers, now living, enjoy greater enlightenment than was ever the privilege of any of their forerunners; for in this period all the rays of prophetic testimony reach a grand focus, illuminating to the eye of faith the plan of God, including its developments, past, present and future. Since the beginning (**1799**) of the Time of the End, God has been preparing his consecrated 'holy people,' his 'Sanctuary,' for the great blessings he intended to pour upon them during these forty years of harvest: which blessings are also intended as special preparation for their entering with Christ into full joy and joint-heirship with him, as his bride. At the exact 'time appointed,' **1799**, the end of the 1260 days, the power of the Man of Sin, the great oppressor of the Church, was broken, and his dominion taken away. With one stroke of his mighty hand, God there struck off Zion's fetters, and bade the oppressed go free. And forth came, and are coming, the 'Sanctuary' class, the 'holy people,' weak, and halt, and lame, and almost naked, and blind, from the dungeon darkness and filth and misery of papal bondage. Poor souls! they had been trying to serve God faithfully in the very midst of the lurid flames of persecution, clinging to the cross of Christ when almost every other truth had been swept away, and courageously endeavoring to emancipate God's 'Two Witnesses' (the Old and New Testaments), which had so long been bound, and which had prophesied only under the sackcloth of dead languages. 'Rev. 11:3'. In his wisdom, God did not overpower them with the great flood of light now granted to the saints..." {**TKIC** 122-3} [The last sentence means, it was all hidden - predicting events which cannot be verified is relatively safe! **TIAH** 256 and **WR** Apr 1880 87 have the same theme]

**1799**

"The predicted Man of Sin, the Antichrist, has also made his appearance, and accomplished his long and terrible reign; and at the exact 'time appointed' (**1799**) his dominion was taken away. The cleansing of the sanctuary was also accomplished as predicted." {**TKIC** 129}

**1799**

"At the end of 1260 years the power of the truth and its witnesses was manifested (A.D. **1799**) .. The saints will be changed from earthly to heavenly conditions.. The present little season, before the storm-cloud bursts upon the world, is a most favorable time for the work of the Elijah class, and corresponds to the successful days of both Elijah and John." {**TIAH** 256-7}

**1799**

"We have noted the fulfilment of the 1,260 days, or the time, times and half a time, of Papacy's power to persecute, and the beginning there, in **1799**, of the Time of the End." {**TKIC** 306}

**1799**

"The Papal dominion (and much of the abject reverence of the people for ecclesiasticism in general), as already shown, was broken down at the beginning of the Time of the End - **1799**; and, though the subsequent process of consumption has been slow, and there have been occasional signs of apparent recovery, which never seemed more flattering than at present.." {**BATT** 37}

**1799**

"The fact is that the entire Gospel age has been a period of tribulation referred to in Matt. 24:9-12, and now in verse 29. (1) The early Church was persecuted by civil Rome, while later, when Papal Rome got control, all who refused to approve her abominations were

persecuted by her (Jezebel) directly, or indirectly by the civil powers to which she was wedded (Ahab). And they were given into her power, and she wore out the saints of the Most High for a time, times and a half time - 1260 years - until A.D. **1799**. And this long persecution, in which 'many were purified and made white and tried,' and in which the Mother of Harlots was 'drunk with the blood of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus' (Rev. 17:6) ended as we have already shown, practically in **1776** and actually in **1799** when the Pope and his authority were humiliated before the World." {**BATT** 584}

### **1799**

"The time of the end' embraces a period from **1799** A.D. to the time of the complete overthrow of Satan's empire and the establishment of the kingdom of Messiah." {**CREA** 319}

### **1799**

"Twelve hundred and sixty years from 539 A.D. brings us to **1799**, which is another proof that **1799** definitely marks the beginning of 'the time of the end'. This also shows that it is from the date 539 A.D. that the other prophetic days of Daniel must be counted." {**CREA** 294}

### **1799**

"The time of the end' embraces a period from **1799** A.D." {**THOG** 236}

### **1799**

"The time of the end is from **1799**.." {**WT** Nov 1 **1922** 333/346}

### **1799**

"The indisputable facts, therefore, show that the "time of the end" began in **1799** .." {**WT** Mar 1 **1922**}

### **1799**

"In Biblical symbology a time means a year of twelve months of thirty days each, or 360 days. Each day is considered for a year.. Here are mentioned, then, three and a half times of 360 prophetic days each, or a total of 1260 prophetic days, equal to 1260 years. The Prophet then was shown that 1260 years would mark the beginning of the time of the end of this beastly order. Twelve-hundred sixty years from A.D. 539 brings us to **1799** – another proof that **1799** marks the beginning of the 'time of the end'. This also shows that it is from the date 539 A.D. that the other prophetic days of Daniel must be counted." {**THOG** 229-30}

### **1799**

"Some Roman Catholics have claimed that Jesus Christ's thousand Year Reign ended in **1799** when French armies captured Rome and deposed the pope as its ruler, so that he was deported as a prisoner to France, where he died." {**WT** Sep 1 **1989** 12}

## **1800**

**1800** "As, prior to the year 800, Papacy was rising, supported by the Roman 'beast' (people) and by its 'horns' (powers), so since **1800** it has been cast off from temporal authority over kings and peoples, and has been torn and pillaged by those who formerly gave it support. (Rev. 17:16,17)" {**TIAH** 354-5}

## **1829**

### **1829**

[End of the 1290 years (from 539 A.D.) of Daniel 12:11, when W.Miller's movement started.] {**TFIM** 40/60/163, **OLOR** 27}

### **1829**

"Though our information pointing out the date of this period is furnished in Daniel's prophecy, we know that he understood nothing at all concerning it, as he said: 'I heard, but I understood not.' ('Daniel 12:8') In answer to his anxious inquiries he was told that the words were closed up and sealed until the Time of the End. It follows, therefore, that no one could understand the prophecy before **1799**; and before leaving the subject we shall show that the prophecy indicates that it would not begin to be understood before **1829** .. We have seen how the 1,290 days marked the beginning of an understanding of the mysteries of prophecy in the year **1829**." {**TKIC** 24/306}

### **1829**

"And note, further, that both of these measures are given in answer to Daniel's question as to what would occur to God's holy ones after their power (the truth) would be released from Papal crushing, (that is, after **1799**), and before the setting up of the kingdom of Messiah - Michael. The reply in substance is that Daniel need not hope to understand further, but that in thirty years after the beginning of the Time of the End (1260 + 30 = 1290), a purifying, cleansing, refining work would begin among the holy people, in connection with which an understanding of the prophecy would be granted to the wise among this tried, cleansed, separated class; yet the knowledge would be so communicated that the ungodly and unpurified would not receive or believe it. It was shown, further, that the right understanding of the vision would be far from complete or full; in fact it would be deficient in some of its chief

elements until 45 years later (1290 + 45 = 1335), or 75 years after the beginning of the Time of the End, A.D. **1799** (1260 + 75 = 1335). This is clearly indicated by the Hebrew text, which represents the matter as though the watchers, who already have seen something, and are waiting patiently, would suddenly (when '1335 days' had passed) get a full, clear view, far beyond their expectations. 'Oh! the blessedness of him!'. Reckoning from A.D. 539, the 1290 symbolic days ended in **1829** .. A religious movement.. generally known as 'Second Adventists' and 'Millerites,' .. began about **1829**.. Thus it will be seen that the separating work of the 'Miller movement' had its beginning at the time foretold - at the end of the 1290 days, **1829**." {TKIC 83-4/88}

**1829**  
" Those who choose might without inconsistency say that the century or generation might as properly reckon from the last sign, the falling of the stars, as from the first, the darkening of the sun and moon: and a century beginning **1833** would be still far from run out. Many are living who witnessed the star-falling sign. Those who are walking with us in the light of present truth are not looking for things to come which are already here, but are waiting for the consummation of matters already in progress. Or, since the Master said, 'When ye shall see all these things,' and since 'the sign of the Son of Man in heaven,' and the budding fig tree, and the gathering of 'the elect' are counted among the signs, it would not be inconsistent to reckon the 'generation' from **1878** to **1914** - 36 1/2 years - about the average of human life today." {BATT 604-5} ["the genea of **1833**"]

**1829**  
"This message concerning Michael's Kingdom, gradually opening from **1829** onward, is symbolically represented in the book of 'Revelation (chap. 10:2,8-10)' as a 'little book,' which the 'wise' of the 'holy people,' represented by John, are instructed to eat" {TKIC 89}

## **1833**

**1833**  
"signs in sun, moon and stars [of] Matthew 24:29" [had their fulfillment in a mysterious event in **1833**] {WR Jan 1885 711}

**1833**  
"Half a century passed before the next sign appeared, the falling of the stars from heaven, as when a fig tree casteth her unripe fruit when shaken of a mighty wind. Our Lord's words found a fulfilment (though not their complete and only fulfilment, as we shall see later) in the wonderful meteoric showers of the early morning of Nov. 13, **1833**. Those inclined to quibble by urging that 'the fixed stars did not fall' are reminded that our Lord said nothing about fixed stars falling, and that fixed stars could not fall: their falling would prove that they were not fixed. the event of **1833** seems to have accomplished the purpose of the sign; and indeed, in connection with the preceding sign, it evidently had considerable to do with the first arousing of the Virgins to meet the Bridegroom, prophesied in the next chapter. Matt. 25:1-5.. these literal signs served their designed purpose in drawing general attention to the Time of the End" {BATT 589-91}

## **1840**

**1840**  
"We need not here repeat the evidences that the 'seventh trump' began its sounding A.D. **1840**, and will continue until the end of the time of trouble" {ZWT Nov 1880 1}

## **1844**

**1844**  
"But in each case only a few are able to recognize the Deliverer and enlist under his banner in the service of the truth. In the Jewish harvest, there was a going forth of many to meet the Lord when all men 'were in expectation' of him (Luke 3:15), at the time of his birth, thirty years before his anointing as Messiah at the beginning of his ministry; and so there was a corresponding expectation and movement on the part of many (afterward called Adventists) led mainly by a Baptist brother named William Miller, in this country, and by Mr. Wolff and others in Europe and Asia. This culminated in the year A.D. **1844**, just thirty years before A.D. **1874**, when Christ the Bridegroom and Reaper actually came, as shown by the Jubilee's teaching. In this we find another striking time-parallel between these ages; for those thirty years corresponded exactly to the thirty years from the birth of the babe Jesus unto Messiah the Anointed - baptized, and introduced as Bridegroom and Reaper, at the age of thirty. Matt. 3:11; John 3:29. In both cases there was a disappointment and a tarrying-time of thirty years, during which all slumbered, and only a few in each case awakened at the proper time to a realization of Messiah's presence. The great nominal mass in both houses fail to recognize the visitation, because overcharged and lukewarm, neglecting the command to take heed and watch. Thus will be fulfilled the prediction by the Prophet -- 'He shall be for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offense to both the houses of Israel.' (Isa. 8:14) The fleshly house stumbled because they had made void the law of God through giving attention to traditions ('Mark 7:9,13'), and so had not a proper conception of the manner and object of the first advent. For that reason they were unprepared to receive him in the way he did come, and so stumbled over him and his work of sacrifice." {TIAH 240-1, also references in WR Oct **1879** 3941, TKIC 84}

## 1846

**1846**  
"Then, 1810 years (prophetic, symbolic days) must be the measure from the close of the seventy weeks to the time when the Sanctuary class will be cleansed from the various defilements of Papacy--the desolating abomination which has for so many centuries defiled the temple of God. The death of Messiah, as shown, was in the spring of A.D. 33; and this was the midst or middle of the last week of the seventy, the full end of which was therefore a half week, or three and a half years later--in the autumn of A.D. 36. Therefore, 1810 years from the autumn of A.D. 36, viz., the autumn of **1846**, marks the end of the vision of the 2300 days, and the date when the Sanctuary was due to be cleansed. This prophecy being fulfilled, we should expect, in this as in other cases of fulfilled prophecy, to find the facts proving its fulfilment clearly set forth on the pages of history; for, though historians are often unbelievers in the Bible and the God of the Bible, yet, unknown to them, God has overruled their work, so that wherever a prophecy has been fulfilled, the facts have unmistakably passed into history, and always on good and reliable authority. And so it has been in this case of the cleansing of the Sanctuary." {TKIC 107-8}

**1846**  
"We have marked, too, the fixed dates to which the Prophet Daniel calls attention. The 2,300 days point to **1846** as the time when God's sanctuary would be cleansed of the defiling errors and principles of Papacy; and we have noted the cleansing there accomplished." {TKIC 305-6}

**1846**  
[Start of] "spiritistic" "evangelical alliance" [between protestant churches.] {TFIM 163}

**1846**  
"Although the Evangelical Alliance was organized in **1846**, it has not been able to accomplish its purpose, because it did not know how to operate." {BATT 9}

## 1872

**1872**  
"In this chapter we present the Bible evidence which indicates that six thousand years from the creation of Adam were complete with A.D. **1874**; and hence that, since A.D. **1872**, we are chronologically entered upon the seventh thousand or the Millennium - the forepart of which, the 'Day of the Lord,' the 'day of trouble,' is to witness the breaking into pieces of the kingdoms of this world and the establishment of the Kingdom of God under the whole heavens." {TIAH 1913 ed 33}

**1872**  
"THERE ARE EVIDENCES THAT - Six thousand Years from Adam ended in A.D. **1872**." {DPOA A17}

**1872**  
"No, they are not accidental: undoubtedly the same all-wise One who taught us through the Chronology that six thousand years from Adam's creation ended with A.D. **1872**, and that the seventh thousand, the Millennial age, began there; who through the Jubilee cycles taught us that the Lord would be present and the Times of Restitution begin in the fall of **1874**; and who through the Times of the Gentiles showed us that we must not expect these things to be done in haste, but by seemingly natural means covering a period of forty years, has in these Parallel Dispensations marked by Israel's 'double' given us evidence which not only itself teaches clearly the Lord's presence, the harvest and the restitution (beginning with favor to fleshly Israel), but at the same time furnishes a proof of the correctness of the other prophetic evidences and of the Chronology. For be it distinctly noticed that if the Chronology, or any of these time-periods, be changed but one year, the beauty and force of this parallelism are destroyed. For instance, if the Chronology be altered but one year, more or less - if we add one year, say to the period of the Kings or the Judges, or if we make it one year less - it would spoil the parallelism. If we should add one year it would make the first of Israel's periods **1846** years long, and the double or other half of it would thus be thrown one year later, while, on the contrary, by such a change of the Chronology the Jubilee cycles would be thrown one year earlier, i.e., A.D. **1873**; and it would make the 6000 years end in A.D. 1871, while the Gentile Times would not be affected by it at all. All can see that the harmony or parallelism would thus be utterly destroyed. Or, if one year should be deducted from the chronological reckoning the confusion would be just as great, the changes to the several periods being in an opposite direction. Thus these various time prophecies corroborate each other, while the parallelism of the two dispensations clinches their testimony." {TIAH 241-2} [So exactly A.D. **1872** is.. it]

**1872**  
".. the exact Bible Chronology points to October **1872** as the beginning of the seventh thousand years, or Millennium.." {TKIC 1905 ed 127}

**1872**  
".. six thousand years from the creation of Adam.. ended with the Jewish year which began in the autumn of A.D. **1872**, and we are, therefore, already in 'the great day of the Lord'; or seventh thousand." {HOTW 67}

**1872**  
"We are already living in the seventh millennium - since October **1872**." {TIAH 1915 ed 363}

**1872**  
"Six thousand Years from Adam ended in A.D. **1872**." {DHMB 6 from end}

## **1872- 1873**

**1872-3**

".. showing the year **1872** A.D. to be the year of the world 6000, and **1873** A.D. the commencement of the seventh thousand-year period, the seventh millennium.." {**TIAH 1913** ed 53-4}

**1872-3**

"Here we furnish the evidence that from the creation of Adam to (but not including) A.D. **1873** was six thousand years. And though the Bible contains no direct statement that the seventh thousand will be the epoch of Christ's reign, the great Sabbath Day of restitution to the world, yet the venerable tradition is not without a reasonable foundation." {**TIAH 39**} [the venerable tradition referred to is of a Lutheran minister from Philadelphia named Joseph A. Seiss, editor of *The Prophetic Times*, in whose Jan 1870 issue Volume VIII No 1 p 12-3 appears "1870 brings us to the commencement of the Seventh Thousand of the years since the present world began.. We lay no great stress upon the arithmetic of prophecy; because the starting-points, as well as many of the integers of the calculations, lack in certainty.. It has been a very old, and a very widely accredited theory, that the world, of which Adam was the beginning, is to continue 6000 years in its secular, ailing and toiling condition; and that the seventh thousand is to be one of glorious sabbatic rest, ushered in by the winding up of this present age or dispensation." ] **1873**

[Six thousand Years of man's existence ends in A.D. **1873**] {**WR** Apr 1880 88}

**1873**

"Here we furnish the evidence that from the creation of Adam to A.D. **1873** was six thousand years. And though the Bible contains no direct statement that the seventh thousand will be the epoch of Christ's reign, the great Sabbath Day of restitution to the world, yet the venerable tradition is not without reasonable foundation.. If, then, the seventh thousand-year period of earth's history be an epoch specially noted as the period of Christ's reign, we shall, by showing that it began in A.D. **1873**, be proving that we are already in it." {**TIAH 1915** ed 39-40}

**1873**

"Thus the Word of God corrects the few slight errors which have crept into it by any means.. God has so guarded his Word that the few trivial errors of copyists are made very manifest, and the full harmony of his Word gives ample foundation for faith .. So, then, whereas Usher dates A.D. 1 as the year 4005 from the creation of Adam, it really was, as we have shown, the year 4129, according to the Bible record, thus showing the year **1872** A.D. to be the year of the world 6000, and **1873** A.D. the commencement of the seventh thousand-year period, the seventh millennium, or thousand-year day of earth's history. {**TIAH 53-4**}

**1873**

"The Bible chronology herein presented shows that the six great 1000 year days beginning with Adam are ended, and that the great 7th Day, the 1000 years of Christ's Reign, began in **1873**." {**TIAH 1916** ed Foreword 2}

**1873**

"If, then, the seventh thousand-year period of earth's history be an epoch specially noted as the period of Christ's reign, we shall, by showing that it began in A.D. **1873**, be proving that we are already in it." {**TIAH 1915** ed 40}

## **1873 - 1874**

**1873-4**

"For instance, as we look back and note that the Scriptures marked **1873** as the end of six thousand years from Adam to the beginning of the seventh thousand, and the fall of **1874** as the beginning of the forty-year harvest of the Gospel age and day of wrath for the overthrow of all the institutions of 'this present evil world (or order of affairs),' we can see that facts have well borne out those predictions of Scripture." {**WR** Jul 15 **1894** 1675}

## **1874**

**1874**

"The Scriptures show that the second presence [of the Lord] was due in **1874** .. This proof shows that the Lord has been present since **1874**" {**WT** Mar 1 **1923** 67}

**1874**

The next chapter will present Bible evidence that **1874** A.D. was the exact date of the beginning of the 'Times of Restitution,' and hence of our Lord's return." {**TAIH 170-1**}

**1874**

"Hence the 2500th year, which would be the great 50th Jubilee, must be the antitype, the real Jubilee or Restitution. But instead of being a year, as in the type, it will be larger; it will be the beginning of the great thousand-year Jubilee - the Millennium. Just so it has been in the fulfilment of every type in which time was a feature. Thus the Pentecostal outpouring of the holy Spirit came upon the typical day of Pentecost - or fiftieth day. Christ, our Passover sacrifice, died in the same night in which the typical lamb was



appointed to be killed - a day before or a day after would not answer. So here, not the year after nor the year before the 2500th, or closing of the typical cycle, would do; but that very year, beginning October, **1874**, must have begun the antitype of Restitution times." {TIAH 181}

**1874**  
"We have marked with special delight the 1,335 days, pointing, as they do, to **1874** as the exact date of our Lord's return; and we have since that time experienced the very blessedness promised--through the clearer unfoldings of the wonderful mysteries of the divine plan." {TKIC 306}

**1874** "Christ came in the character of a Bridegroom in **1874** .. at the beginning of the Gospel harvest." {WT Oct **1879** 4}  
**1874**

"[Entering] age of .. Laodicean church.. C. T. Russell is .. messenger or 'angel' of [that] church." {WR **1918** 6212} **1874**  
"The fact of our Lord's second coming is definitely settled by the Scriptures.. The Scriptures show that his second presence was due in **1874**.. This proof shows that the Lord has been present since **1874** .. The indisputable facts, therefore, show that.. the Lord's second presence began in **1874**." {WT Mar 1 **1922** 67-}

**1874**  
"The Lord did not come in **1844**, and the world was not burned up with fire .. this was a great disappointment to those 'holy people' who had so confidently looked for Christ ('Michael') then to appear and to exalt them with him in power and glory. But, notwithstanding the disappointment, [Miller's] movement had its designed effects - of awakening an interest in the subject of the Lord's coming, and of casting reproach upon the subject by reason of mistaken expectations. We say designed effects because without a doubt the hand of the Lord was in it. It not only did a work corresponding to that of the first advent movement, when our Lord was born, when the wise men came from the East and when 'all men were in expectation of him' ('Matt. 2:1,2'; 'Luke 3:15'), but it corresponded with it in time also, being just thirty years before the anointing of our Lord, at thirty years of age, at the beginning of his work as Messiah.. we recognize that movement as being in God's order, and as doing a very important work in the separating, purifying, refining, and thus making ready, of a waiting people prepared for the Lord. And not only did it do a purifying and testing work in its own day, but, by casting reproach upon the study of prophecy and upon the doctrine of the Lord's second advent, it has ever since served to test and prove the consecrated.. it was the beginning of the right understanding of Daniel's visions, and at the right time to fit the prophecy. Mr. Miller's application of the three and a half times (1260 years) was practically the same as that we have just given, but he made the mistake of not starting the 1290 and 1335 periods at the same point. Had he done so he would have been right. On the contrary, he started them thirty years sooner - about 509 instead of 539, which ended the 1335 days in **1844**, instead of **1874**." .. The disappointment of **1844** is briefly recorded in the parable, by the statement that 'the Bridegroom tarried' - i.e., he seemed to the expectant ones to tarry. And the confusion and darkness experienced by all, and the many false and visionary views entered into by some who were there disappointed, are shown in the parable by the statement: 'While the Bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.' Yea, and in their darkness and slumber many of them dreamed strange, unreasonable things. But the parable shows a second movement, similar, and yet different, among the same virgins. The same general class is referred to but not necessarily the same individuals. As the first movement was the result of light upon the prophecy, regarding the time for Messiah's second advent as the Bridegroom of the Church, so was the second movement. But there are several differences. In the first, the lamps of all the virgins burned alike, and the company expecting the Bridegroom was mixed; whereas in the second movement, while all will be aroused, only those will be led out who have the spirit of the truth in their hearts, as well as a knowledge of the Bible - a trimmed lamp. Disappointment was predicted for the first movement, and waiting for the 1335 days was necessary; but the second was not a disappointment, and a waiting was no longer necessary; for fulfilment came exactly at the close of the 1335 prophetic days - in October **1874**." {TKIC 85-93} **1874**

[Division between the "wise and foolish virgins" was over the **1874** date of the return of the bridegroom] {WR Apr 1880 88} [This matter was not raised when C. T. Russell was divorced by his wife for sexual misconduct with a maidservant/secretary]

**1874**  
"Our Lord, the appointed King, is now present, since October **1874**, A.D., according to the testimony of the prophets .." {BATT **1913** ed 621}

**1874**  
"We have seen that God has a set time for every feature of his plan, and that we are even now in this 'Day of Vengeance,' which .. began in October, **1874**" {BATT 546}

**1874**  
[end of the] tarrying time [of Christ, corresponding to 30 years from Jesus' birth to his baptism]" {TIAH 240, WR Oct **1879** 3941}  
[also Adventist's end of the world per W.Miller]

**1874**  
"Prophecy can not be understood until it has been fulfilled or is in the course of fulfillment. From **1874** to **1914** the prophecy concerning the Lord's coming was being fulfilled and could be understood, and was understood, by those who were faithful to the Lord and who were watching the development of events, but not by others." {CREA 290} **1874**

"Thus we find that the twenty-five hundredth year began with the beginning of the year A.D. **1875**, which in Jewish civil time, by which this is reckoned (Lev. 25:9), began about October, **1874**. So, then, if the great Jubilee were to be only a year, like its type, it would have commenced October, A.D. **1874**, at end of 2499 years, and would have ended October, A.D. **1875**. But this is not the type, but the reality; it was not a Jubilee Year, but the antitypical Thousand years of Restitution of all things, which commenced October, A.D. **1874**." {TIAH 187}



## 1874

"Bible prophecy shows that the Lord was due to appear for the second time in the year **1874**. Fulfilled prophecy shows beyond a doubt that he did appear in **1874**. Fulfilled prophecy is otherwise designated the physical facts; and these facts are indisputable." {WT Nov 1 1922 333}

## 1874

"Applying the same rule then, of a day for a year, 1335 days after 539 A.D. brings us to **1874** A.D. at which time, according to Biblical chronology, the Lord's second presence was due." {CREA 298} [the day for a year basis is a technique used in Astrology known as Progressions]

## 1874

"We have no doubt whatever in regard to the chronology relating to the dates of **1874** .." {WT May 15 1922 150} **1874**

"The most important thing to which all the prophecies point and for which the apostles looked forward has been the second coming of the Lord. It is described by the Prophet as a blessed time. Daniel then says: 'Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days.' (Daniel 12:12). The watchers here, without question are those who were instructed by the Lord to watch for his return. This date, therefore, when understood, would certainly fix the time when the Lord is due at his second appearing. Applying the same rule, then, of a day for a year, 1335 days after 539 A.D. brings us to A.D. **1874**, at which time, according to Biblical chronology, the Lord's second presence is due. If this calculation is correct, from that time forward we ought to be able to find some evidences marking the Lord's presence." {THOG 229-30}

## 1874

"No one can properly understand the work of God at this present time who does not realize that since **1874**, the time of the Lord's return in power, there has been a complete change in God's operations." {WRT Sep 15 1922 278}

## 1874

"The Scriptural proof is that the second presence of the Lord Jesus Christ began in **1874** A.D." {PROP 65}

## 1874

"The Scriptural proof is that the period of his presence and the day of God's preparation is a period from A.D. **1874** forward. The second coming of the Lord therefore began in **1874** .." {CREA 310}

## 1874

"[C. T. Russell taught that **1874** marked] "the start of the Battle of Armageddon" {TIAH 101}

## 1874

"(Revelation) 3:20. Behold, I stand at the door. Some of the Scriptures, which, when understood in their connections and significance, prove that the Lord's Second Advent occurred in the fall of **1874** are as follows: [a jumble of Biblical verses follow as 'proof'] and these are but 88 of the proofs hastily collected." {TFIM 68-71}

## 1874

"Surely there is not the slightest room for doubt in the mind of a truly consecrated child of God that the Lord Jesus is present and has been since **1874**." {WT Jan 1 1924 5}

## 1874

".. this measurement [of a length of an interior passageway discovered inside the Pyramids - it has no reference in Scripture] is 3416 inches, symbolizing 3416 years.. This calculation shows A.D. **1874** as marking the beginning of the period of trouble" {TKIC 1897 ed 342} [In ZWT Nov 1 1904 326, he further justified the "3416 inches" by writing "We cannot therefore see how any longer measure for the passage could be possible." It is strange then that TKIC 1916 ed was changed to read: "We find it to be 3457 inches, symbolizing 3457 years.. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of **1914** will be the beginning of the time of trouble .." It should be noted that C.T.Russell, the founder of the Watchtower Bible and tract Society, was a pyramidologist, a spiritist, a Knights Templar (Free)Mason (of York Rite, Allegheny Pa.), and believed in healing-handkerchiefs, phrenology, the Winged-Sun-Disk, Enochian Magical planes and many other strange things, a few of which are illustrated by quotations later in this text. There is space for less than 1% of what could have been included! The symbolisation of years as inches is a complete nonsense, as the ancient Egyptians never used the inch as a measuring unit!] **1874** "From year A.D. 1 to A.D. **1875** (Jewish time, beginning Oct. **1874**) .. Thus, the year which began October **1874** was the 2500th [calculated as 50 x 50 Jubilee cycles] year, but since the antitype is larger than the type - 1000 years instead of one year - **1875** (beginning Oct. **1874**), instead of being a Jubilee year was the first of the 1000 years of Jubilee." {TIAH 186}

## 1874

"And since the entire number of typical Jubilees, designed to precede the antitype, is thus proved to be seventy, we are thus furnished another means of calculating when the antitype is due to begin. The calculating of this prophetic statement of the entire number of Jubilees is simple and easy; and, as we should expect, its results agree exactly with those already obtained by the method of counting furnished by the Law. The entire number being seventy, and nineteen of these having been observed in a half-hearted way by Israel before the desolation, it follows that the remaining fifty-one (70-19=51) mark the period from the last Jubilee which Israel imperfectly observed, down to the great antitype. But here note a difference in the manner of counting. Under the Law reckoning, we counted the future as well as the past cycles of forty-nine years with the fiftieth or Jubilee Year added; for the Law shows things as they would have been, had Israel carried them out properly. But prophecy records things just as they will actually occur. We are now examining the prophetic statement, remember, and hence should now reckon these cycles as they have occurred - cycles of forty-nine years, without Jubilees; for Israel did not observe a Jubilee since their nineteenth one. The first nineteen cycles had Jubilee Years, but the fifty-one since have had none; hence we must reckon fifty-one cycles of forty-nine years each, or 2499 years (49 x 51 = 2499), from

the last typical Jubilee observed by Israel to the antitype. This calculation, though entirely distinct from the other, ends exactly as shown by the Law method of reckoning previously examined - October, A.D. **1874**." {**TIAH** 193} [actually, all that he is saying is that  $50 \times 50 = 2500$  and  $(50+1) \times (50-1) = 2499$ , which differ by 1. He seems unaware this would happen no matter what number was used in place of "50"!] **1874** [Significance of this date was proven by measurements of the Tabernacle] {**WT** May 15 **1919** 159}

#### **1874**

"The time of the end' embraces a period .. to the time of the complete overthrow of Satan's empire and the establishment of the kingdom of the Messiah. The time of the Lord's second presence dates from **1874**, as above stated. The latter period is within the first named, of course, and in the latter part of the period known as 'the time of the end.'" {**THOG** 236}

#### **1874**

"It is on the basis of such and so many correspondencies - in accordance with the soundest laws known to science - that we affirm that, Scripturally, scientifically, and historically, present-truth chronology is correct beyond a doubt. Its reliability has been abundantly confirmed by the dates and events of **1874** .. Present-truth chronology is a secure basis on which the consecrated child of God may endeavor to search out things to come." {**WT** Jun 15 **1922** 187}

#### **1874**

"The Scriptural proof is that the period of his presence and the day of God's preparation is a period from **1874** A.D. forward. The second coming of the Lord, therefore, began in **1874** .." {**CREA** 289/310}

#### **1874**

".. the battle of the great day of God Almighty.. so great is our confidence in the Word of God and in the light of present truth shining upon it, that we could not have doubted its testimony whatever had been the appearances..beginning dating from October, **1874**." {**ZWT** Jan 15 **1892** repr 1355}

#### **1874**

".. the beginning of the Times of Restitution in **1874**" {**TFIM** 64}

#### **1874**

"Actual Presence of the Lord as Bridegroom and Reaper - October, A.D. **1874**." {**TIAH** **1923** ed 247}

#### **1874**

"Nor will we here, again present the conclusive Bible proof that our Lord came for his Bride in **1874**, and has an unseen work as Reaper of the first-fruits of this Gospel Age." {**ZWT** Nov 1880 1}

#### **1874**

".. the Lord became present in October, **1874** .." {**TKIC** **1923** ed 235} [many other references in **HOTW**, **TIAH** 170, **OLOR** 27, **HIS2** 133]

#### **1874- 1878**

##### **1874-8**

"Our Lord's presence as Bridegroom and Reaper was recognized during the first three and a half years, from A.D. **1874** to A.D. **1878**." {**TIAH** **1913** ed 239}

##### **1874-8**

"Our Lord, the appointed King, is now present, since October **1874**, A.D .. and the formal inauguration of his kingly office dates from April **1878**, A.D." {**BATT** 621}

##### **1874-8**

"The natural harvest was used by the Lord to illustrate his harvest of Christians. In the Jewish natural harvest it was customary to glean the field after the regular harvest was over. We should therefore expect to find a harvest period from **1878** to **1918**, and thereafter for a time a gleaning work to be done, which we will indicate. The question now is, Do we find a period of harvest in the gospel age after **1874** which serves as a fulfillment of the prophecy of the Lord?" {**TFIM** 236}

##### **1874-8**

"The Scriptures disclose a complete parallel concerning the Jewish and gospel ages. The parallel exists with reference to time as well as events. The Jewish age ended with a harvest, which harvest began with the ascension of our Lord in the year A.D. 33. By the term 'harvest' here used is meant the gathering of the remnant of the Jews to Christ. Jesus' statement plainly is that the gospel age will end with a harvest, during which time he would be present, directing the work of that harvest. In the earth three and a half years from the time of his consecration and baptism, Jesus was preparing the Jews for the harvest of that age. We should expect to find a parallel of this reference to the harvest of the gospel age, and we do find it. Counting three and a half years from **1874**, the time of his presence, brings us to **1878**. During the presence of the Lord from **1874** to **1878** he was making preparation for the harvest of the gospel age."

## **1875**

### **1875**

"Besides, when we shall shortly show that, reckoned from the beginning of the seventy years desolation under Babylon, the great cycle ends with the year A.D. **1875**, it will be manifest to all that it could not have commenced at an earlier date, prior to that Babylonian captivity; for if we place it even one Jubilee earlier, it would locate the termination of the cycle fifty years earlier than A.D. **1875**, namely A.D. 1825; and surely no Jubilee age of restitution began with that year." {**TIAH** 183-4}

**1875**  
"[End of] Great Jubilee Cycle .. End of 1335 days in Dan 12:12 .. The invisible resurrection of the saints started" [C. T. Russell held that the "Biblical year" **1875** started in Oct **1874**, later both replaced by **1878**] {**HOTW**}

## **1876**

**1876**  
"For forty years the Lord has been present, feeding those who have been hungering and thirsting for righteousness. For forty years Pastor Russell - that faithful servant of the Lord - has set forth clear and unmistakable evidence of the presence of the Master. He nailed the banner of Christ's presence on the title page of The Watch Tower; and it shall never come down until the kingdom is known in the earth." {**WR** Dec 15 **1916** 6015} [the banner came down in **1939**, and now the **WT** banner only claims 'Announcing Jehovah's Kingdom']

**1876**  
"Furthermore, the remnant of spiritual Israel had for decades, yes, since **1876**, been looking forward to the ending of the Times of the Gentiles .." {**MSWD** 136}

**1876**  
"CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.. The number of years since A.D. 1, necessary to complete the cycle of 2500 years - **1875** years" {**TIAH** 185}

## **1877**

**1877**  
"The End Of This World; that is the end of the gospel and the beginning of the millennial age is nearer than most men suppose; indeed we have already entered the transition period, which is to be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation Daniel 12:3." {**HOTW** 17}

## **1878**

**1878**  
"So it was in this harvest also up to A.D. **1878** the time prophecies and the fact of the Lord's presence, substantially as here presented, though less clearly, was our message. Since then the work has widened, and the view of other truths has become brighter and clearer; but the same fact and scriptures, teaching the same time and presence, stand unchallenged and incontrovertible." {**TIAH** **1915** ed 236}

**1878**  
"[In this year] Christ Jesus is present [and has] assumed office of King.. choosing a 'servant' [identified in the same article as clearly being C.T.Russell] on earth to represent him." {**WR** 1906 3811} [Article written by Mrs. C. T. Russell]

**1878**  
"Be not surprised, then, when in subsequent chapters we present proofs that the setting up of the Kingdom of God is already begun, that it is pointed out in prophecy as due to begin the exercise of power in A.D. **1878**, and that the 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Rev. 16:14), which will end .. with the complete overthrow of the earth's present rulership, is already commenced." {**TIAH** **1915** ed 101}

**1878**  
"Until **1878** the nominal church had been in a sense God's sanctuary or temple" {**TFIM** 484}

**1878**  
"End of gospel age .. the rapture of the saints .. to heaven" {**HOTW** 68, **HIS2** 632, **HIS1** 19} [in **1881**, C. T. Russell explained rapture was invisible and occurred at death of individual saints]

**1878**  
"in the spring of **1878** all the holy apostles and other 'overcomers' of the Gospel age who slept in Jesus were raised spirit beings .. we, therefore, conclude that their resurrection is now an accomplished fact.. the God of heaven will set up a Kingdom, and that the setting up of that Kingdom has actually been in progress since the year **1878**; that there the resurrection of all the dead in Christ was due; and that therefore, since that date, not only is our Lord and Head invisibly present in the world, but all these holy messengers

are also with him." {TKIC 1923 ed 234/305} [By contrast, Matt 24:23-27 says the Lord would come like "lightning" and Rev 1:7 says even his enemies would see him]

**1878**  
"the awakening of the sleeping saints in the Spring of **1878**.. The awakening of the sleeping saints, A.D. **1878**, was just halfway (three and one-half years each way) between the beginning of the Times of Restitution in **1874** and the close of the High Calling in **1881**." {TFIM 64}

**1878**  
"And it was in **1878**, then, that the process of setting up the kingdom began. There our Lord raised the sleeping saints from the tomb and joined them to himself.." {WT Jun 1 1922 174}

**1878**  
"And though, in a sense, the grandeur and blessing of the new dispensation began at the birth of Jesus ('Luke 2:1014,25-38'), yet the Great Pyramid should, in some way, indicate the full length of Israel's favor. This we finally found to be most ingeniously shown. The granite 'Plug' proved to be the exact length to fill out this period to the very limit. Then we knew why that 'Plug' was so securely fixed that none had succeeded in displacing it. The great Master-Builder had placed it there to stay, that we might hear its testimony today corroborating the Bible, as to both its plan and its chronology. In measuring this passage with its 'Plug,' we should consider it as though it were a telescope, with the 'Plug' drawn out until the upper end reaches the place originally marked by the lower end of it. The distance downward from the north entrance of the 'Grand Gallery' to the lower end of the granite 'Plug' is 1470 inches, to which if we add the length of the 'Plug,' 179 inches, we have a total of 1649 inches, representing 1649 years; and the one inch-year of difference between this and the 1650 years shown by the Bible chronology of that period is easily accounted for when we remember that one end of this granite 'Plug' had been considerably chipped by those who endeavored to force it from its fixed position in the passageway. Thus, exactly, does the stone 'Witness' corroborate the testimony of the Bible, and show that the period from the exodus of Israel from Egypt until the full end of their national favor, A.D. 36, was 1650 years. But let none confound this period with the period shown in the Parallels of the Jewish and Christian dispensations - showing the two ages to be each 1845 years in length, the one from the death of Jacob to A.D. 33, and the other from A.D. 33 to A.D. **1878**." {TKIC 346-7}

**1878**  
[Many other references to Heavenly resurrection of dead saints, 3 1/2 years of Christ's ministry on earth, a "sifting out" is occurring among those who don't accept **1878** as the coming of the Bridegroom, and God's favor returning to the Jews, with the Kingdom of God starting to exercise power] {WT Oct 1879 repr 39-41, TNCR 1904 ed 663, MLND 27-8, THOG 236/44} [references are omitted in THOG 1928 ed]

## **1878 - 1881**

**1878-81**  
"The same year, **1881**, is prophetically marked as the time for the final withdrawal of favor from the churches, a favor which had begun to be withdrawn in **1878** - the year in which the clergy were cast off as representatives of the Divine Word, and when Pastor Russell began his work by the publication of 50,000 copies of Object and Manner of the Lord's Return. In **1878** the stewardship of the things of God, the teaching of Bible truths, was taken from the clergy, unfaithful to their age long stewardship, and given to Pastor Russell. In the interim, until **1881**, the new steward was setting the things in order, getting the truths of the Bible in logical and Scriptural form for presentation, until the last great item of the Hebrew tabernacle types, was ready. Then, in **1881**, he became God's watchman for all Christendom, and began his gigantic work of Witness." {TFIM 1921 ed 386-387}

## **1879**

**1879**  
"[God's] position is contrasted with men and angels, as he is Lord of both, having 'all power in heaven and earth'. Hence it is said, 'Let all of the angels of God worship him' (that must include Michael, the chief angel, hence Michael is not the Son of God) and the reason is, because he has 'by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.'" {WT Nov 1879, bracketed comment in the original} [So Jesus is the chief angel, Michael. But Heb 1 says that Jesus is definitely not an angel. The Watchtower and the Bible cannot both be correct. Also, the apostle John says Jesus possesses the very substance and nature of God, though not the Father]

## **1880**

**1880**  
"But understanding genea here, as elsewhere, to mean generation, and recognizing that our Lord's words were a prophecy covering the entire Gospel age, we have no difficulty in understanding the statement to mean - 'This generation (which will witness the signs inquired for by the apostles and just enumerated by our Lord - namely, the darkening of the sun and moon and the falling of the stars) - this generation shall not pass away until all these things be fulfilled.' In other words, the signs mentioned will occur within a generation-epoch in the close of the age. The sprouting of the fig tree may have been but a casual remark, but we incline to think that it was not. The peculiar circumstance narrated of our Lord's curse upon a fig tree which bore no fruit, and which withered away

directly (Matt. 21:19,20) inclines us to believe that the fig tree in this prophecy may be understood to signify the Jewish nation. If so, it is being signally fulfilled.. A 'generation' might be reckoned as equivalent to a century (practically the present limit) or one hundred and twenty years, Moses' lifetime and the Scripture limit. (Gen. 6:3) Reckoning a hundred years from **1780**, the date of the first sign, the limit would reach to **1880**; and, to our understanding, every item predicted had begun to be fulfilled at that date .. {**BATT** 603-4} **1880**

"A truth presented by Satan himself is just as true as a truth stated by God .. Accept truth wherever you find it, no matter what it contradicts, and rely for ability to afterwards harmonize it with others upon "the spirit of truth, which shall guide you into all truth," {**WR** Jan **1880** 8-9}

1880

"[Restoration of Jews to Palestine and the conversion of 144,000 literal Jews due before **1914**.] {**WT** Jun **1880** 108}

## **1881**

**1881**

[Rapture of the Saints, including C. T. Russell and other Bible Students] {**WT** Jan **1881** repr 180, **WT** Dec 1880 repr 172} [denied from **WT** May **1881** 224]

**1881**

"the close of the High Calling in **1881**." {**TFIM** 64}

**1881**

"[C. T. Russell supports the] Faith Cottage Pink Cure" {**WR** **1881** 226}

**1881**

[Close of "high calling" to be among the 144,000 .. Fall of Babylon] {**HIS2** 632} [In **1922** "**1881**" replaced by "**1918**", later to "**1935**", see **WT** Jun 15 **1992** 23, **HIS2** 166]

**1881**

"The Christian congregation is not an organization who subscribe to man made creeds." {**WT** Nov/Dec **1881** 8-9}

**1881**

"Further, where the special favor of the general Gospel call ceased (October, **1881**), the blessing upon the world would seem to be due to have a beginning. The 'Well,' which marks at its upper end the ransom which secures the coming blessing, should, it would seem, at its lower end (where it connects with the downward passage) mark the date when restitution blessings would begin to reach the world. It seems to say, Here the benefits of the ransom will begin to bless all the families of the earth, when the elections or selections of the Jewish and Gospel ages are completed. Now if we adopt the clearly marked close of the special call and favor of the Gospel age, **1881**, as the date at which the call to restitution blessings was due to have a beginning, and if we regard the lower terminus of the 'Well' as marking that date (**1881**), we find something of interest by measuring back along that 'Entrance Passage' to the original entrance of the Pyramid. This distance we find to be 3826 pyramid inches, thus representing 3826 years. And if our supposition be well founded, 3826 years before A.D. **1881** some notable event must have occurred. And as we search the historic records of God's Word to see if any notable event occurred at that time, we find a remarkable confirmation of our supposition; for, just 3826 years before A.D. **1881**, which would be B.C. **1945**, Isaac, the typical seed of promise, became the heir of all his father Abraham's wealth, and was thus in position to bless all his brethren - Ishmael, the son of Hagar (type of fleshly Israel), and the many sons and daughters of Keturah, Abraham's second wife (typical of the world in general). Thus the 'Entrance Passage,' from the outside edge down to the nearest edge of the passage connecting with the 'Well,' marks in year-inches the period of time from the day the typical Isaac (in whom typically centered the promise of blessing to the world) became heir of all, B.C. **1945**, to A.D. **1881**, when the blessing was actually due to the world through the antitypical Isaac - the Christ, the heir of all things. Gal. 3:16,29. We measure the time from the date of Isaac's inheritance, and consequent privilege of blessing his brethren, to the year A.D. **1881**, thus: Isaac came into possession of his inheritance at the death of his father Abraham, which occurred 100 years after the Abrahamic Covenant was made (for Abraham was 75 years old when the Covenant was made, and he died at the age of 175 years). Then from the Covenant to the death of Jacob, Isaac's son, was 232 years; and from the time that Isaac came into his inheritance - 100 years after the Covenant was made - to the death of Jacob would be 132 years (232 years less 100 years). To this we add the 1813 years from the death of Jacob to our Anno Domini, and we have the date **1945** B.C., the date when the typical Isaac came into possession of all that Abraham had. ('Gen. 25:5') And this **1945** years B.C. added to the **1881** years A.D. makes the 3826 years indicated in the Pyramid inches as the length of time that must elapse between the typical blessing of his brethren by the typical seed, Isaac, and the blessing of the whole world through the antitypical Isaac, the Christ. Does the question arise with any, what beginning of restitution work was marked by October, **1881**? We answer: Nothing occurred which the world could discern. We still walk by faith and not by sight. All the preparatory steps toward the great restitution work since the date **1881** are to be reckoned as droppings of the great shower of blessing which shall ere long refresh the whole earth. That which occurred in **1881**, like that which occurred in **1874**, can be discerned only by the eye of faith in the light of God's Word. It was the date of the close of the high calling, and hence the date for the beginning of restitution announcement - the Jubilee trumpet. About that date the author, and, so far as he knows, no one else, had noticed the distinction between the call to the divine nature, open during the Gospel age, and the opportunity for restitution of human perfection and all that was lost in Adam, due at the close of the Gospel high calling." {**TKIC** 365-7}

**1881**



"To our understanding the general call to this joint heirship with our Redeemer as members of the New Creation of God, ceased in **1881**." {**TNCR 1915** ed 95} [Route to heaven closed in **1881** - but there are many changes in mind in the future on this one!]

**1881**

"As in the type that date - three and a half years after the death of Christ - marked the end of all special favor to the Jew and the beginning of favor to the Gentiles, so we recognize A.D. **1881** as marking the close of the 'high calling,' or invitation to the blessing peculiar to this age - to become joint-heirs with Christ and partakers of the divine nature." {**TIAH 1915** ed 235}

## **1883**

**1883**

"Christian is the only name we need to be called." {**WT Mar-Apr 1883** 458}

**1883**

"God [had] placed the Great Pyramid [of Gizeh in Egypt]" {**WR Sep 1883** 525} [compare with claim that Great Pyramid of Gizeh in Egypt was built under direction of Satan, made in {**WT 1928** 339-45/355-62}]

## **1886**

**1886**

"The outlook at the opening of the New Year has some very encouraging features. The outward evidences are that the marshaling of the hosts for the battle of the great day of God Almighty, is in progress while the skirmishing is commencing.. The time is come for Messiah to take the dominion of earth and to overthrow the oppressors and corrupters of the earth, (Rev. 19:15 and 11:17, 18) preparatory to the establishment of everlasting peace upon the only firm foundation of righteousness and truth.. In the battle already beginning, we are clearly told that there will be a general division of the world into two contending parties. The kings, chief men, and mighty or influential men, the wealthy and the worldly great, are all on one side the battle, and with them the symbolic beast (Papacy) and Protestantism." {**ZWT Jan 1886** repr 817}

## **1888**

**1888**

"we present proofs that the setting up of the kingdom of God is already begun.. that the 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Rev. 16: 14) which shall end .. with the complete overthrow of earth's present rulership, is already commenced." {**TIAH 101**}

## **1892**

**1892**

".. the battle of the great day of God Almighty.. so great is our confidence in the Word of God and in the light of present truth shining upon it, that we could not have doubted its testimony whatever had been the appearances.. It is already in progress .." {**ZWT Jan 15 1892** repr 1355}

## **1893**

**1893**

"There is no organization today clothed with authority." {**WT Sep 1 1893** 1573}

## **1894**

**1894**

"A few more years will wind up the present order of things, and then the chastened world will stand face to face with the actual conditions of the established Kingdom of God. And yet the course of the Church is to be finished within the space of time that intervenes." {**WT 1894** 56}

## **1895**

**1895**

"Beware of organization.. it is wholly unnecessary." {**WT Sep 15 1895** 1866}



## 1897

1897

"The distillery, the brewery, the saloon, the brothel, the pool-room, all time-killing and character-depraving business will be stopped; and their servants will be given something to do that will be beneficial to themselves and others.. Similarly, the building of war-vessels, the manufacture of munitions of war and defense will cease, and armies will be disbanded. The new Kingdom will have no need of these, but will have abundant power to execute summary justice in the punishment of evil doers .. The banking and brokerage business, and other like employment's, very useful under present conditions, will no longer have a place; for under the new conditions the human race will be required to treat each others as members of one family, and private capital and money to loan and to be needed will be things of the past. Landlords and renting agencies will find new employment also, because the new King will not recognize as valid patents and deeds now on record.. namely, that with present conveniences, if the whole people were put to work systematically and wisely, not more than three hours labor for each individual would be necessary." {**BATT** 633-635}

## 1898

1898

"Notice that there is no command in the Scriptures against military service" {**WT** Aug 1 **1898** 231} [And re-supported in **1903** in "There could be nothing against our conscience in going into the army. Wherever we would go we could take the Lord with us, the Captain of our salvation, and wherever we would go we could find opportunities to serve him and his cause" {**WT** Apr 15 **1903** 120}. So what is the gigantic objection now?]

1898

"God .. evidently has been a respecter of races, and has specially blessed and favored certain branches of the Aryan race in Europe and America.. the white race has been more abundantly blessed with the light of the Gospel than others .. the elect Church will probably be composed chiefly of the highly favored white race.." {**EVOL** 30-1}

## 1900

1900

"There are probably as many as a hundred colored brethren on the Watch Tower lists, some of them very clear in the truth, and very earnest in its service, financially and other-wise .. [but they are not allowed to participate in the "pioneer work" as] although we have received letters from several of these, who had intended engaging in the volunteer work, expressing surprise that in the call for volunteers in the March 1, **1900** issue we restricted the inquiry to white Protestant churches. .. The reason is that so far as we are able to judge, colored people have less education than whites - many of them quite insufficient to permit them to profit by such reading as we have to give forth. Our conclusion therefore is based upon the supposition that reading matter distributed to a colored congregation would more than half of it be utterly wasted, and a very small percentage indeed likely to yield good results. We advise, therefore, that where the Watch Tower literature is introduced to colored people it be not by promiscuous circulation, but only to those who give evidence of some ear for the truth. We avoid, so far as possible, putting the pearls of present truth into the hands of the vicious and depraved .." {**ZWT** Apr 15 **1900** 122}

1900

"From Black to White He Slowly Turned.. Rev. William H. Draper.. gave a living affirmative answer to the famous Biblical question, 'Can the Ethiopian change his skin or the leopard his spots?' Though once as black as charcoal, the Rev. Mr. Draper is now white. His people say that his color was changed in answer to prayer. Many years ago Draper was employed by a fair-skinned man, and he was often heard to remark that if he could only be white like his employer, he would be happy. While in the white man's service Draper 'experienced' religion. From that day forward he prayed constantly and fervently that he might become white.. He first experienced a prickling sensation on his face, and upon close investigation found a number of small white spots scarcely larger than the point of a pin. He became alarmed, thinking he had some peculiar disease but he did not suffer and aside from the prickling sensation felt nothing unusual. Gradually the white spots became larger and extended themselves, until now, after the change has been in progress for over 30 years, Draper has not a single dark spot on his body." {**ZWT** Oct 1 **1900** 296-7} [It is alleged that Michael Jackson was previously associated with the Jehovah's Witnesses but disassociated himself circa **1987**]

## 1901

1901

"It too often happens that, while the negro rapidly masters the rules and regulations of the Christian religion, he still continues to be gross, immoral, and deceitful. They (missionaries) may have succeeded in turning their disciples into professing Catholics, Anglicans, or Baptists; but the impartial observer is surprised to find that adultery, drunkenness, and lying are more apparent among the converts than among their heathen brethren.' And again: 'I regret to say that, with a few - very rare - exceptions, those native African pastors, teachers, and catechists whom I have met have been all, more or less, bad men. They attempted to veil an unbridled immorality with an unblushing hypocrisy and a profane display of mouth-religion which, to an honest mind, seemed even more disgusting than the

immorality itself. While it was apparent that not one particle of true religion had made its way into their gross minds, it was also evident that the spirit of sturdy manliness which was present in their savage forefathers found no place in their false, cowardly natures.." [Given as a quotation by Russell without adverse comment] {ZWT Aug 15 1901 266}

## 1902

1902  
"The Book of Ruth [is] not prophetic" {WR Nov 15 1902 3110} [But in {PRES 169/175-6} it was "not prophetic"!]  
1902

"The Negro Not a Beast.. that Ham's characteristics which had led him to unseemly conduct disrespectful to his father, would be found cropping out later, inherited by his son, and prophetically he foretold that this degeneracy would mark the posterity of Canaan, degrading him, making him servile. We are not able to determine to a certainty that the sons of Ham and Canaan are negroes; but we consider that general view as probable as any other.. We are not to forget, either, that Africa is inhabited by various tribes or nations of negroes - some more and some less degraded than the average.. While it is true that the white race exhibits some qualities of superiority over any other, we are to remember that there are wide differences in the same Caucasian (Semitic and Aryan) family.. The secret of the greater intelligence and aptitude of the Caucasian undoubtedly in great measure is to be attributed to the commingling of blood amongst its various branches; and this was evidently forced in large measure by circumstances under divine control. It remains to be proven that the similar commingling of the various tribes of Chinese for several centuries would not equally brighten their intellects; and the same with the peoples of India and Africa." {ZWT Jul 15 1902 216}

## 1903

1903  
"The second runner, Cushite, or literally a Cushite - that is, a negro - was probably one of the king's household servants .." {ZWT Nov 1 1903 410-1}

## 1904

1904  
"Can The Ethiopian Change His skin color? No. But.. what the Ethiopian cannot do for himself God could readily do for him. The difference between the races of men .. have long been arguments against the solidarity of the human family. The doctrine of restitution has also raised the question. How could all men be brought to perfection and which color of skin was the original? The answer is now provided. God can change the Ethiopian's skin in his own due time.. Julius Jackson, of New Frankfort, Montana, a negro boy of nine years, began to grow white in September, 1901, and is now fully nine-tenths white. He assures us that this is no whitish skin disease; but that the new white skin is as healthy as that of any white boy, and that the changed boy has never been sick and never has taken medicines.." [and so God can and will change blacks to whites in the New World]" {ZWT Feb 15 1904 52-3}

1904  
"Even though Christmas is not the real anniversary of our Lord's birth, but more properly the annunciation day or the date of his human begetting (Luke 1:28), nevertheless, since the celebration of our Lord's birth is not a matter of divine appointment or injunction, but merely a tribute of respect to him, it is not necessary for us to quibble particularly about the date. We may as well join with the civilized world in celebrating the grand event on the day which the majority celebrate - 'Christmas day.'" {WT Dec 1 1904 364} [What changed?]

1904  
"..hence, the several races of humanity will probably find their spiritual interests as New Creatures best conserved by a measure of separateness." {TNCR 490}

## 1907

1907  
"Phrenology [occult belief that one can read a person's character from the peaks and valleys of their skull] so far as understood fully corroborates the picture given us in the arrangement of the Tabernacle of Israel surrounded by the camp. Thus:- If we imagine the human skull as spread out flat, we find that the central part would correspond to the Tabernacle and its court; for in the very center of the head on top lies spirituality, and directly in front of it lies veneration. The latter organ would correspond well to the court, the former to the holy. As to enter the holies it was necessary to pass through the court, so to enter into a proper heart-appreciation of the spiritual things it is necessary that we enter in through veneration.. Surrounding these two central organs are others which correspond well to the different divisions of the tribe of Levi .. Thus may be illustrated the philosophy of what is known as conversion. Thank God it has not been necessary to understand the philosophy of conversion in order to have and to enjoy that blessing, otherwise very few would have been thus blessed.. So with the converted heart and head. Previously sometimes selfishness would be in the center and

in control, sometimes conscience, sometimes acquisitiveness, sometimes hope and sometimes fear would occupy the center, around which the various organs would group themselves." {WR Jul 15 1907 4028} [More in 1913 and 1915!]

## 1908

1908

The negro and Latin races will probably always be inclined to superstition." {ZWT Apr 1 1908 99}

## 1909

1909

"Mrs. Russell's request that the monthly allowance [alimony] be increased from \$40 to \$100, which was allowed by the Court, but which we were unable to comply with, because all of our property, except that which brought the income of \$40 per month (which Mrs. Russell had been receiving), had been donated to the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY." {WR Jul 1 1909 4424} [Donate your funds to WTBTBS to escape paying alimony]

## 1910

1910

"If the six volumes of 'Scripture Studies' are practically the Bible topically arranged, with Bible proof-texts given, we might not improperly name the volumes - the Bible in an arranged form. That is to say, they are not merely comments on the Bible, but they are practically the Bible itself since there is no desire to build any doctrine or thought on any individual preference or on any individual wisdom, but to present the entire matter on the lines of the Word of God. We therefore think it safe to follow this kind of reading, this kind of instruction, this kind of Bible study. Furthermore, not only do we find that people cannot see the divine plan in studying the Bible by itself, but we see, also, that if anyone lays the 'Scripture Studies' aside, even after he has used them, after he has become familiar with them, after he has read them for ten years - if he then lays them aside and ignores them and goes to the Bible alone, though he has understood his Bible for ten years, our experience shows that within two years he goes into darkness. On the other hand, if he had merely read the 'Scripture Studies' with their references, and had not read a page of the Bible, as such, he would be in the light at the end of the two years, because he would have the light of the Scriptures." {ZWT Sep 15 1910 298}

1910

[Expected "Rapture of the Saints", based on measurements in corridor in the Great Pyramid of Gizeh] {TKIC 364} [Omitted in TKIC post-1910 editions]

## 1911

1911

"According to our expectations the stress of the great time of trouble will be on us soon, somewhere between 1910 and 1912" {TNCR 1904 ed 579}

1911

"Rather we should seek for dependent Bible study, rather than for independent Bible study." {WT Sep 15 1911 4885}

## 1912

1912

"Sister Smith of Nebraska recently discovered one stalk of beans which she declares yielded so prolifically that she calls it the Millennial Bean.. Sister Smith writes that they should be planted one bean to the hill, and the hills six feet apart. They should be planted in April. They keep bearing right along for weeks, and five should supply a small family." {ZWT Jan 15 1912 26}

1912

"It is known that only about three out of every one hundred operated upon for appendicitis really have a diseased appendix needing removal. We give below a simple cure for appendicitis symptoms. The pain in the appendix region is caused by the biting of worms near the junction of the transverse colon with the small intestines, low down on the right side of the abdomen. This remedy is recommended also for typhoid fever, which is also a worm disease. The medicine is Santonine dose, 3 grains, an hour before breakfast; repeated for four mornings, or until all the symptoms disappear. Then one dose per month for three months to eradicate all germs. This recipe is of INCALCULABLE VALUE. Not only will it save the surgeon's and hospital fees of perhaps \$200, but it saves weeks of ill health, inconvenience, convalescence and loss of salary." {ZWT Jan 15 1912 26}

## 1913

### 1913

"Some have a strong desire to worship God, others have a weak desire, and others have no desire at all. This difference is due to the shape of the brain. Mankind are born with differences in this respect. -Psa. 51:5" {WR Mar 15 1913 5201} [Returning to phrenology, belief that shape of the skull and hence the brain determine character - see 1907 and 1915]

### 1913

"just use the Bible [and reject all developed theology in the history of Christianity]" {WR 1913 5156} You are kindly invited to look up the references at your local Kingdom Hall.

## 1914

### 1914

"In this chapter we present the Bible evidence proving that the full end of the times of the gentiles, i.e., the full end of their lease of dominion, will be reached in A.D. 1914; and that the date will be the farthest limit of the rule of imperfect men. And be it observed, that if this is shown to be a fact firmly established by the Scriptures, it will prove; Firstly, that at that date the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, Thy Kingdom come, will obtain full, universal control, and that it will then be set up, or firmly established, in the earth, on the ruins of present institutions.. It will prove that he whose right it is to thus take the dominion, will then be present as earth's new Ruler; and not only so, but it will prove that he will be present for a considerable period before that date .. It will prove that some time before the end of A.D. 1914 the last member of the divinely recognized church of Christ, the 'royal priesthood' 'the body of Christ,' will be glorified with the Head.. It will prove that from that time forward Jerusalem shall no longer be trodden down of the Gentiles, but shall arise from the dust of divine disfavor, to honor .. It will prove that by that date, or sooner, .. the full number from among the Gentiles, who are to be members of the body or bride of Christ, would be fully selected.. It will prove that the great 'time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation,' will reach its final culmination, and end, at that date.. The condition of things spoken of in symbolic language as raging waves of the sea, melting earth, falling mountains, and burning heavens, will then have passed away.. It will prove that before that date, God's kingdom, organized in power, will be in the earth, and will have smitten and crushed the Gentile image .." {TIAH 76-8}

### 1914

"And, with the end of A.D. 1914, what God calls Babylon, and what men call Christendom, will have passed away, as is already shown from prophecy." {TKIC 153}

### 1914

"Let us remember that this date limit - A.D. 1914 - must not only witness the completion of the selection and trial and glorification of the entire body of Christ, but it may also witness the purifying of some of that larger company of consecrated believers." {TKIC 364} ["must not" changed to "may not" in {TKIC 1915 ed 364}, the expected events having not happened]

### 1914

"The time of the end is .. to 1914." {WT Nov 1 1922 333/346}

### 1914

"The Watchtower, and its companion publications of the society, for forty years emphasized that fact that 1914 would witness the establishment of God's kingdom and the complete glorification of the church. During that period of forty years God's people on earth were carrying on a witness work, which work was foreshadowed by Elijah and John the Baptist. all of the lords people looked forward to 1914 with joyful expectation. when that time came and passed there was much disappointment, chagrin and mourning, and the lords people were greatly in reproach. they were ridiculed by the clergy and their allies in particular, and pointed to with scorn, because they had said so much about 1914, and what would come to pass, and their prophecies had not been fulfilled." {LIT1 194}

### 1914

"The 'Time of the End', a period of one hundred and fifteen (115) years, from A.D. 1799 to A.D. 1914, is particularly marked in the Scriptures." {TKIC 1923 ed 23}

### 1914

"In this chapter we present the Bible evidence proving that the full end of the times of Gentiles, i.e., the full end or their lease of dominion, will be reached in A.D. 1914; and that that date will be the farthest limit of the rule of imperfect men.. That at that date the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, 'The Kingdom come,' will have obtained full, universal control, and that it will then be 'set up,' or firmly established, in the earth.. Church taken home in a rapture.. It will prove that some time before the end of A.D. 1914 the last member of the divinely recognized Church of Christ, the 'royal priesthood,' 'the body of Christ,' will be glorified with the Head; because every member is to reign with Christ, being a joint-heir with him of the Kingdom, and it cannot be fully 'set up' without every member." {TIAH 76-7}

### 1914

"It is on the basis of such and so many correspondencies - in accordance with the soundest laws known to science-that we affirm that, Scripturally, scientifically, and historically, present-truth chronology is correct beyond a doubt. Its reliability has been abundantly confirmed by the dates and events of .. 1914 .. Present-truth chronology is a secure basis on which the consecrated child of God may endeavor to search out things to come." {WT Jun 15 1922 187}

### 1914

"we present proofs that the setting up of the kingdom of God is already begun.. and that the 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Rev. 16: 14) which shall end in A.D. **1914** with the complete overthrow of earth's present rulership .. The gathering of the armies is plainly visible from the standpoint of God's word." {**TIAH 101**} [**TIAH 1915** ed contains '**1915**' instead of '**1914**']

**1914**  
".. the overthrow of the professedly Christian kingdoms, really 'kingdoms of this world', and the full establishment of the Kingdom of God in the earth at A.D. **1914** .." {**TKIC 1905** ed 126}

**1914**  
"Can It Be Delayed until **1914**? .. Seventeen years ago people said, concerning the time features presented in Millennial Dawn, They seem reasonable in many respects, but surely no such radical changes could occur between now and the close of **1914**: if you had proved that they would come about in a century or two, it would seem much more probable. What changes have since occurred, and what velocity is gained daily? 'The old is quickly passing and the new is coming in.' Now, in view of recent labor troubles and threatened anarchy, our readers are writing to know if there may not be a mistake in the **1914** date. They say that they do not see how present conditions can hold out so long under the strain. We see no reason for changing the figures-nor could we change them if we would. They are, we believe, God's dates, not ours. But bear in mind that the end of **1914** is not the date for the beginning, but for the end of the time of trouble. We see no reason for changing from our opinion expressed in the view presented in the Watch Tower of January 15, '92. We advise that it be read again." {**ZWT Jul 15 1894** repr 1677}

**1914**  
"The 'Gentil Times' prove that the present governments must all be overturned about the close of A.D. **1914**  
" {**TIAH 242**} ["**1914**" changed to **1915** in {**TIAH 1915** ed 242}]

**1914**  
"As far back as **1876**, Jehovah's Witnesses realized that Bible prophecy marked the year **1914** C.E. as a time when major events would take place that would have far-reaching effects on human affairs. They gave the reason for this fact wide publicity." {**TPAS 70**}

"Remember that the forty years' Jewish Harvest ended October A.D. 69, and was followed by the complete overthrow of that nation; and that likewise the forty years of the Gospel age harvest will end October, **1914**, and that likewise the overthrow of 'Christendom,' so-called, must be expected to immediately follow." {**TIAH 245**}

**1914**  
"THE COLOR LINE FOUND NECESSARY. WE might have anticipated that many colored people would be deeply interested in THE PHOTO-DRAMA OF CREATION. But it did not impress itself upon us until gradually their number increased to about twenty-five per cent of the whole audience. Of course, we were glad to see them, glad that they were interested in the DRAMA. We had the same feeling respecting them as others; but it was quickly discerned that it was not a case of feeling, but that, whereas the colored people of New York City are about five per cent of the population, in our audiences they are about twenty-five per cent and the number increasing. What shall we do? As the attendance of the colored people would increase, proportionately the number of the whites would decrease; for explain it how we will, a majority of whites prefer not to intermingle closely with other races. Recognizing that it meant either the success or the failure of the enterprise of the DRAMA as respects the whites, we have been compelled to assign the colored friends to the gallery, which, however, is just as good for seeing and hearing as any other part of The Temple. Some were offended at this arrangement. We have received numerous letters from the colored friends, some claiming that it is not right to make a difference, others indignantly and bitterly denouncing us as enemies of the colored people. Some, confident that Brother Russell had never sanctioned such a discrimination, told that they believe it would be duty to stand up for equal rights and always to help the oppressed, etc. We were obliged to explain the facts, assuring all of our loving interest in the colored people, and of our desire to do them good, and not injury. We again suggested that if a suitable place could be found in which the DRAMA could be presented for the benefit of the colored people alone, we would be glad to make such arrangements, or to co-operate with any others in doing so. Our explanations were apparently entirely satisfactory to all of the fully consecrated. To these we explained that it is a question of putting either the interests of God's Cause first, or else the interests of the race first. We believed it our duty to put God first and the Truth first - at any cost to others or to ourself! We explained that we thought that all the colored brethren should know our attitude toward them - they should know that we love to serve them in any way possible and to give them the very best we have to give of the Gospel Message; and that it is only a question of whether our giving to them in one way would deprive us of giving the Truth to others. Some who were still tenacious and quarrelsome we merely reminded of our Lord's declaration that in inviting visitors into the house it is the place of the host to say where they shall sit, and then we showed them the parable of the man who chose the chief seat of honor and was given a lower one. In answer to the query as to how our course of conduct squared with the Golden Rule, we replied that it squares exactly. We would wish others to put God first. If our personal interests are or ever have been in conflict with the real and apparently best interests of the Lord's Cause, it is a part of our consecration vow to ignore our interests in favor of the interests of the Lord's Cause. This is what we mean by the declaration that we are dead to self and alive to our God as New Creatures. We reminded one dear sister that the Lord enjoins humility, and assures us that unless we humble ourselves we shall not be exalted. If nature favors the colored brethren and sisters in the exercise of humility it is that much to their advantage, if they are rightly exercised by it. A little while, and our humility will work out for our good. A little while, and those who shall have been faithful to their Covenant of Sacrifice will be granted new bodies, spiritual, beyond the veil, where color and sex distinctions will be no more. A little while, and the Millennial Kingdom will be inaugurated, which will bring Restitution to all mankind - restitution to the perfection of mind and



body, feature and color, to the grand original standard, which God declared "very good," and which was lost for a time through sin, but which is soon to be restored by the powerful Kingdom of Messiah. {WT Apr 1 1914 110-1} [Restitution to the perfection of color, if humble now!]

**1914**  
"Ever since the 1870's, Bible Students had been serving with a date in mind - first **1914**, then **1925**. Now they realized that they must serve for as long as Jehovah wishes." {WT Nov 1 1993 12}

**1914**  
"We find it to be 3457 inches, symbolizing 3457 years .. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of **1914** will be the beginning of the time of trouble .." {TKIC 1916 ed} [TKIC 1897 ed 342 stated ".. this measurement is 3416 inches, symbolizing 3416 years .. This calculation shows A.D. **1874** as marking the beginning of the period of trouble .." - but **1874** had passed.]

**1914**  
"We have seen that God has a set time for every feature of his plan, and that we are even now in this "Day of Vengeance," which is a period of forty years; that it began in October, **1874**, and will end in October, **1914**.. The great events predicted in the Scriptures.. are already overshadowing the world, and are as sure to come as they are foretold: and seventeen years would seem to be abundant space for their full accomplishment." {BATT 546-7}

[When **1914** came and went without these things happening, {BATT 1915 ed 546-7} was unobtrusively amended so "in October, **1914**" became "very shortly" and ": and seventeen" became ". A very few" !]

**1914**  
"the time of trouble or 'day of wrath' which.. will end October **1914**.. (Zionist) Conventions .. meet year by year to put in practical shape the proposal for the reorganization of a Jewish state in Palestine. The buds will thrive, but will bear no perfect fruit before October **1914** - the full end of 'Gentile Times'.. Complete destruction of the 'powers that be' of 'this present evil worlds - political, financial, ecclesiastical - about the close of the Time of the Gentiles; October A.D. **1914**." {BATT 604/622} [When nothing happened in **1914**, the text was quietly amended in {BATT 1915 ed 604} so "end October **1914**" became "cease about **1915**". They forgot to make the other changes!]

**1914**  
"**1914** Final overthrow of Nominal Christendom.. 1521 - PERIOD of 393 YEARS FROM THE DIVISION OF CHRISTENDOM TILL ITS FINAL OVERTHROW - **1914**" {ZWT Jun 15 1905 repr 3575}

**1914**  
"Studying God's Word, we have measured the 2520 years, the seven symbolic times, from that year 606 B.C. and have found that it reached down to October, **1914**, as nearly as we were able to reckon. We did not say positively that this would be the year." {WT Nov 1 1914 325} [However, Jerusalem, according to Bible chronology, fell in 587-6 B.C. and not 607-6 B.C. Compton's Encyclopedia of History: "David, king of the Israelites, captured Jerusalem from the Jebusites in about 1000 BC. King Solomon, his son, extended the city and built the great temple that stood until 586 BC when it was destroyed by King Nebuchadnezzar II of Babylon. In the 50 years of their Babylonian captivity .." Columbia Concise Encyclopedia: "Babylonian captivity in the history of Israel, the period from the fall of Jerusalem (586 B.C.) to the reconstruction in Palestine of a new Jewish state (after 538 B.C.). Following the capture of the city by the Babylonians, thousands of JEWS were deported to Mesopotamia. In 538 B.C. the Persian King CYRUS THE GREAT decreed the restoration of worship at Jerusalem."]

**1914**  
"Pastor Russell's mission, in large part, was to advise Christendom of its impending end, in the time of world-wide trouble. It is the Divine judgment upon the nations.. There will be no chance of escaping from destruction, through the nations.. The trouble is due to the dawning of the Day of Christ, the Millennium. It is the Day of Vengeance, which began in the world war of **1914** .." {TFIM 404}

**1914**  
"We see no reason for changing the figures - nor could we change them if we would. They are, we believe, God's dates, not ours. But bear in mind that the end of **1914** is not the date for the beginning, but for the end of the time of trouble." {WT Jul 15 1894 266 repr 1677}

**1914**  
"Firstly, that at that date [**1914**] the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, 'Thy Kingdom come,' will begin to assume control, and that it will then shortly be 'set up,' or firmly established, in the earth, on the ruins of present institutions." {TIAH 1915 ed 77}

**1914**  
"**1914** ended the Gentile Times." {WT Sep 1 1922 262}

**1914**  
""The Times of the Gentiles' extend to **1914**, and the heavenly kingdom will not have full sway till then, but as a 'Stone' the kingdom of God is set up 'in the days of these (ten gentile) kings' and by consuming them it becomes a universal kingdom - a 'great mountain and fills the whole Earth.'" {ZWT Mar 1880 repr 82}

**1914**  
"Under the guidance of God's spirit of freedom the magazine today known as the Watchtower but known back there as Zion's Watch Tower, began to be published in July, **1879**. In the first year of its publication it pointed to the date **1914** as marked in the Bible." {WRDM 308}



## 1914

".. ending with the times of the Gentiles in **1914**, when the kingdom of God (soon to be set up or exalted to power) will have broken in pieces and consumed all earthly kingdoms." {ZWT Aug 1880 repr 124}

**1914** "When Uranus and Jupiter meet in the humane sign of Aquarius in **1914**, the long-promised era will have made a fair start in the work of setting man free to work out his own salvation, and will insure the ultimate realization of dreams and ideals of all poets and sages in history." {WT May 1 1903/6 130-1 repr 3184}

**1914** ".. the end of 'The times of the Gentiles,' A.D., **1914**, and that it is the trouble of this 'Great day,' .. which is here symbolically called the voice of the Archangel when he begins the deliverance of fleshly Israel.. At that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince (Archangel) which standeth for the children of thy people and there shall be a time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation. Daniel xii. 1" {ZWT Nov 1880 1}

## 1914

"This remnant of anointed ones have identified themselves on the pages of history since **1914** C.E. Before this year members of this anointed remnant had been earnestly studying God's Word apart from Christendom. They put the Holy Bible ahead of man-made religious traditions. As early as **1876** they were publishing that the Gentile Times of 2, 520 years would terminate in the year **1914**. Events that have taken place from that year onward prove they were not wrong." {GEPT 178-9}

## 1914

"Jesus Christ began to rule as king of God's heavenly government [in **1914**]" {YCLF 141}

## 1914

"Furthermore, the remnant of spiritual Israel had for decades .. been looking forward to the ending of the Times of the Gentiles in the autumn of **1914**. They were expecting God's Messianic Kingdom to be fully established in the heavens by then and also for the remnant of spiritual Israel to be glorified with Jesus Christ in the heavenly kingdom at that time. All understanding of the Holy Scriptures was slanted in that direction or adjusted to that idea." {MSWD 136}

## 1914

"That the Lord must be present, and set up his Kingdom, and exercise his great power so as to dash the nations to pieces as a potter's vessel, before A.D. **1914**, is then clearly fixed; for it is 'in the days of these kings' - before their overthrow - i.e. before A.D. **1914** - that the God of heaven shall set up his Kingdom.. The 'Times of the Gentiles'.. will run fully out with the year A.D. **1914**, and at that time they will all be overturned and Christ's Kingdom fully established.. Both of these ripenings (Rev. 14:1-4, 18-20) will be completed in a period of forty years, ending with the year A.D. **1914**." {TIAH 170} [In {TIAH 1916 ed 76-81}, **1914-5** having passed without the predicted events occurring, the following substitutions were unobtrusively made: the word "all" was omitted from before the "be overturned", and a footnote added "How long it will require to accomplish this overturning we are not informed, but have reasons to believe the period will be 'short.'"; also the last reference to **1914** was changed to **1915**!]

## 1914

"According to our expectations the stress of the great time of trouble will be on us soon.. culminating with the end of the 'Times of the Gentiles', October, **1914**." {TNCR 1904 ed 579}

## 1914

"**1914** [is] a marked year. Years in advance Bible Scholars realized that **1914** was to be a year of great significance. They expected great changes to take place, and the facts confirm that **1914** was, indeed, a marked year." {TLEL 91} **1914** "Such activity in publishing God's kingdom and clearing his name of the Devil's reproaches by religion was mistakenly given a place secondary to the making of the bride of Christ class ready for the marriage with him in heaven, in **1914** as some thought." {TNWD 273-4}

## 1914

"Prior to the latter part of the year **1914**, many Christians expected Christ to return at that time and to take them away to heaven. Thus, in a discourse given on September 30, **1914**, A.H. Macmillan, a Bible Student, stated: 'This is probably the last public address I shall ever deliver because we shall be going home (to heaven) soon.' Clearly, Macmillan was mistaken, but that was not the only unfulfilled expectation he or his fellow Bible Students had.. Consequently, A.H. Macmillan explained later: 'I learned that we should admit our mistakes and continue searching God's Word for more enlightenment. No matter what adjustments we would have to make from time to time in our views, that would not change the gracious provision of the ransom and God's promise of eternal life.. Indeed, God's promises can be trusted! It is humans who are prone to error. Therefore, true Christians will maintain a waiting attitude in obedience to Jesus' command. They will keep awake and ready for Christ's inevitable coming as God's Executioner. They will not allow false predictions to dull their senses and cause them to ignore the true warning of the world's end.'" {AWAK Jun 22 1995 6-9} [why no mention of Russell's belief in exactly the same thing?]

## 1914

"There is absolutely no ground for Bible students to question that the consummation of this Gospel age is now even at the door, and that it will end as the Scriptures foretell in a great time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation. We see the participants in this great crisis banding themselves together.. The great crisis, the great clash, symbolically represented as a fire, that will consume the ecclesiastical heavens and the social earth, is very near." {WR VI May 1 1914 5450}

## 1914

"We have no doubt whatever in regard to the chronology relating to the dates of .. **1914**, .. It was on this line of reckoning that the dates.. **1914** .. were located; and the Lord has placed the stamp of his seal upon **1914** .. beyond any possibility of erasure. What further evidence do we need?" {WT May 15 1922 150}

**1914**

"We see no reason for doubting, therefore, that the Times of the Gentiles ended in October, **1914**; and that a few more years will witness their utter collapse and the full establishment of God's kingdom in the hands of Messiah." {WR VI Sept 1 **1916** 5950}

**1914**

"That the deliverance of the saints must take place some time before **1914** is manifest, since the deliverance of fleshly Israel, as we shall see, is appointed to take place at that time, and the angry nations will then be authoritatively commanded to be still, and will be made to recognize the power of Jehovah's Anointed.. Just how long before **1914** the last living members of the body of Christ will be glorified, we are not directly informed .." {TKIC 228} [In {TKIC **1915** ed 228}, **1914-5** having passed without the predicted events occurring, the following substitutions were unobtrusively made: "some time before" became "very soon after", and "long before **1914**" became "long after **1914**"!]

**1914**

"Many of such had been looking for the Lord to come and take them to heaven, and had particularly fixed the year **1914** as when this should be done. The year **1914** was a marked date; but these had merely contemplated something to happen which did not come to pass." {PROP 1,589,000 ed 89}

**1914** ".. the battle of the great day of God Almighty.. so great is our confidence in the Word of God and in the light of present truth shining upon it, that we could not have doubted its testimony whatever had been the appearances. The date of the close of that 'battle' is definitely marked in Scripture as October, **1914**. It is already in progress, its beginning dating from October, **1874**." {ZWT Jan 15 **1892** repr 1355}

**1914**

"As far back as 1880 The Watchtower pointed to A.D. **1914** as the date marking the end of the world, at which time great trouble would come upon the nations; but at that time it was not seen by God's people on earth that the trouble would be the battle of Jehovah against Satan's organization. For many years it was believed by them, and so stated in The Watchtower, that "the time of trouble" would be a terrific clash between the various elements of the earth, such as capital and labor." {WT Feb 1 **1938** 35}

**1914**

"The prophecy of the Bible, fully supported by the physical facts in fulfilment thereof, shows that the second coming of Christ dates from the fall of the year **1914**." {WHAT} [written in **1932**: see next quotation]

**1914**

"In the year **1943** the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society published the book 'The Truth Shall Make You Free.' In its chapter 11, entitled 'The Count of the Time,' it did away with the insertion of 100 years into the period of the Judges and went according to the oldest and most authentic reading of Acts 13:20, and accepted the spell-out numbers of the Hebrew Scriptures. This moved forward the end of six thousand years of man's existence into the decade of the 1970's. Naturally this did away with the year **1874** C.E. as the date of return of the Lord Jesus Christ and the beginning of his invisible presence or parousia." {GKTY 209} [Claim that 'parousia' change from **1874** to **1914** came only in **1943**, not in **1932** in **WHAT**, when the WTBS completed a new chronological system, which included moving Jerusalem's destruction from 606 B.C. to 607 B.C.E. to keep the **1914** date while finally accounting for the non-existing zero year. Also see **HIS2** 133]

**1914**

"True, it is expecting great things to claim, as we do, that within the coming twenty-six years all present governments will be overthrown and dissolved.. In view of this strong bible evidence concerning the Times of the Gentiles, we consider it an established truth that the final end of the kingdoms of this world, and the full establishment of the Kingdom of God, will be accomplished at the end of A.D. **1914** .." {TIAH 1908 ed 98-9} **1914**

"We did not say positively that this would be the year." {WT Nov 1 **1914** repr 5565} [Failed Prophecy..]

**1914**

"Even if the time of our change should not come within ten years, what more should we ask? Are we not a blessed, happy people? Is not our God faithful? If anyone knows anything better, let him take it. If any of you ever find anything better, we hope you will tell us." {WT Dec 15 **1914** 376} [The words of a False Prophet]

## **1914 - 1918**

**1914-8**

".. the years **1914** and **1918** are specially marked dates with reference to his coming." {CREA 289/310} **1914-8**

"Like Elijah of old, they became quite disconsolate, uncertain of life, thinking the end of existence and work was at hand. This was especially the case since the remnant was part of the virgin class espoused to Christ as his Bride and she failed to realize her hopes of being glorified to heavenly life with him both in **1914** and now in **1918**." {LYNS 313}

**1914-8**

"Ezek. 5:2, 12, 16, 17, relate to features of the destruction of literal Jerusalem in 606 B.C. and 70-73 A.D. and of Christendom in **1914** to **1918** A.D." {**TFIM** 398}

## **1915**

**1915**  
"The 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Rev. 16:14) which will end in A.D. **1915** with the complete overthrow of earth's present rulership, is already commenced. The gathering of the armies is plainly visible from the standpoint of God's word." {**TIAH** **1915** ed 101} [original **TIAH** used "**1914**" instead of "**1915**"]

**1915**  
"[C. T. Russell promotes] Dr Park's cure for pneumonia [which] seems to effect a cure every time." {**WR** **1915** 5691} **1915** "In view of this strong Bible evidence concerning the Times of the Gentiles, we consider it an established truth that the final end of the kingdoms of this world, and the full establishment of the kingdom of God, will be accomplished near the end of A.D. **1915**. {**TIAH** **1915** ed 99}

**1915**  
"While it's possible that Armageddon may begin next Spring, yet this purely speculation to attempt to say just when. We see, however, that there are parallels between the close of the Jewish age and this Gospel age. These parallels seem to point to the year just before us part particularly the early months." {**WR** VI Sep 1 **1914** 5527}

**1915**  
"we consider it an established truth, that the final end of the kingdoms of this world, and the full establishment of the kingdom of God will be accomplished by A.D. **1915**. At that time the prayer of the church, ever since her Lord took his departure, - 'Thy kingdom come' - will be answered; and under its wise and just administration, the whole earth will be filled with the glory of the Lord" {**TIAH** **1915** ed 99} [Original contains '**1914**' instead of '**1915**']

**1915**  
"The Gentile Times prove that the present governments must all be overturned about the close of A.D. **1915**; and Parallelism above shows that this period corresponds exactly with the year A.D. 70, which witnessed the completion of the downfall of the Jewish polity." {**TIAH** **1915** ed 242}

**1915**  
"Furthermore, Science declares that there is a far mightier Center, around which these countless millions of suns revolve, accompanied by their planets and satellites. This great Center seems to be associated with the Pleiades, particularly with Alcyone, the central star of this renowned group. For this reason the suggestion has been made that the Pleiades may represent the Residence of Jehovah, the place from which He governs the Universe. This thought gives new force to the question which the Almighty asked the patriarch Job: "Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? Canst thou bring forth the constellations of the Zodiac in their season?"-Job 38:31,32'. There seem to be fewer stars in the North than in any other part of the heavens. Thus the North seems to have been given a very prominent position, the other points of the compass giving it homage, as it were. This fact was observed by the ancients, as the Prophet Job declares--"He stretcheth out the North over the empty space, and hangeth the earth upon nothing." (Job 26:7'.) Throughout the Scriptures the North seems to be closely associated with Jehovah's government of the earth. {**ZWT** Jun 15 **1915** 185} [This nonsense was a frequent theme - also see **TKIC** 327, **ZWT** May 15 **1895** repr 1814, **ZWT** Dec 1 1896 repr 2075, **GA** Sep 10 **1924** 793-4. The belief persisted in the Society at the highest levels, long after C.T.Russell's death - see **1927-8** entries. Further, the associated pre-eminence of the North was in line with C.T.Russell's belief that northern (i.e. white) races were likely to be the chief component of the elect Church of the future - see **EVOL** 30-1 for **1898**]

**1915**  
"While the glorified members of the Kingdom beyond the veil are doing a work in shaping the current of present events and preparing for the glorious reign, those on this side of the veil have also an important work." {**TKIC** **1915** ed 303} [And also "Additionally, such should remember that they themselves, on the other side of the veil, will have still as good an opportunity of watching over the interests of their loved ones as they now have, and a much better opportunity than now to exercise a protecting care over them - a providential guidance in their affairs under divine wisdom, with which they will concur absolutely." {**TNCR** **1915** ed 555-6}. So claims from the Society that there is conscious life after death. But "Now Satan knows that his time is very short until the great fight at Armageddon takes place, and he hastens to drive all men into spiritism or devilism and therefore against God; and for that reason at the present time there is a great turning to spiritism and spirit mediums throughout the land." {**RICH** 101}. So the Society is driven by Satan. And the belief in spirit mediums continues into **1988** - see **REVE** 125]

**1915**  
"The Battle of Armageddon, to which this war is leading, will be a great contest between right and wrong, and will signify the complete and everlasting overthrow of the wrong, and the permanent establishment of Messiah's righteous kingdom for the blessing of the world.. Our sympathies are broad enough to cover all engaged in the dreadful strife, as our hope is broad enough and deep enough to include all in the great blessings which our Master and his Millennial kingdom are about to bring to the world. {**WR** VI Apr 1 **1915** 5659}

**1915**

"Man's head is shaped differently; therefore he can think of subjects about which the lower animals cannot think.. A man with a head of a given shape cannot think with the same breadth of mind as a man with a better shaped head - a man who is less fallen. Some have lost more, others less, of the original perfection, of the original intelligence, given man in his creation." {WR Jan 15 1915 5611} [Returning to phrenology, belief that shape of the skull and hence the brain determine character - see 1907 and 1913]

## 1916

**1916**  
"Charles Taze Russell, thou hast, by the Lord, been crowned a king; and through the everlasting ages thy name shall be known amongst the people, and thy enemies shall come and worship at thy feet." {WR Dec 1 1916 6015} [Only God is to be worshipped]  
**1916**

"Thousands of the readers of Pastor Russell's writings believe that he filled the office of 'that faithful and wise servant', and that his great work was giving to the Household of Faith meat in due season. His modesty and humility precluded him from openly proclaiming this title, but he admitted as much in private conversation." {WT Dec 1 1916 357}

**1916**  
"We must make the distinction between Brother Russell as a creature and his official capacity as 'that servant' of the Master to give out the 'meat in due season.' To disregard the Message would mean to disregard the Lord." {WR Dec 15 1916 6024}

## 1917

**1917**  
"... the Lord's faithful and wise steward, Pastor Russell." {TFIM 418}

**1917**  
"The present great war in Europe is the beginning of the Armageddon of the Scriptures (Rev 19:16-20). It will eventuate in the complete overthrow of all the systems of error which have so long oppressed the people of God and deluded the world. We believe the present war cannot last much longer until revolutions shall break out." {PRSS 676}

**1917**  
"Following the election Brother Rutherford, addressing the meeting, said in part: 'The Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society is the greatest corporation in the world, because from the time of its organization until now the lord has used it as his channel through which to make known the glad tidings..'" {WT Jan 15 1917 22}

**1917**  
"The Scriptures indicate that Russell was chosen of the Lord from his birth. The two most prominent messengers were Paul and Pastor Russell. Russell is the servant of Matthew 24:45-47." {WR Nov 1 1917 6159}

**1917**  
"No doubt Satan believed the Millennial Kingdom was due to be set-up in 1915" {TFIM 128} [So did the Society]

**1917**  
"[In Revelation] Abaddon-Apollyon [refers to] Satan" {TFIM} [But according to TFMG 232, it refers to Jesus Christ!]  
1917

"Thou wilt lengthen out leviathan (the locomotive) with a hook (automatic coupler) and a snare (coupling-pin) which will cause his tongue (coupling-link) to drop down." {TFIM 84-6} [Biblical reference to Leviathan is fulfilled by the arrival of the Locomotive Engine]

## 1918

**1918**  
"The parallel, therefore, would establish definitely that the harvest would close forty years thereafter; to wit, in the spring of A.D. 1918. If this is true, and the evidence is very conclusive that it is true, then we have only a few months in which to labor before the great night settles down when no man can work." {WR Oct 1 1917 6149} **1918**

"The data presented .. in the light of the foregoing Scriptures, prove that the Spring of 1918 will bring upon Christendom a spasm of anguish greater even than that experienced in the Fall of 1914 .. The travail that is coming is to be upon nominal Zion - 'Christendom' .. 'Babylon'; and it will be a great and sore affliction- 'A Time of Trouble such as was not since there was a nation.'" {TFIM 62}

**1918**  
"Comments on Revelation 11:13 .. We anticipate that the 'earthquake' will occur early in 1918" {TFIM 178} **1918**

"Pastor Russell's mission, in large part, was to advise Christendom of its impending end, in the time of world-wide trouble. It is the Divine judgment upon the nations.. There will be no chance of escaping from destruction, through the nations.. The trouble is due to the dawning of the Day of Christ, the Millennium. It is the Day of Vengeance.. which will break like a furious morning storm in 1918." {TFIM 404}

**1918**

"[Since] "the death of the apostles .. the gospel of the kingdom of God and of his Christ was not preached until after **1918** A.D." {WT Dec 1 **1928** 364} [thereby cutting off all of C.T.Russell's work!]

**1918**

".. He was from then [**1878**] on, culminating in **1918**, to remove it with a stroke or plague of erroneous doctrines and deeds Divinely permitted. The Church was the strength of Christendom, that about which its life centered, and around which its institutions were built. It was the desire of the eyes of the people, that which all Christians loved. Nevertheless, God was to make manifest the profanation which ecclesiasticism had made of the Christian Church, and to cause the church organizations to become to Him as one dead, an unclean thing, not to be touched, or mourned. And the 'children of the church' shall perish by the sword of war, revolution and anarchy, and by the Sword of the Spirit be made to see that they have lost their hope of life on the spirit plane - that 'the door is shut.'" {TFIM 484}

**1918**

"The Holy Spirit was taken away in **1918** when Jesus came to the Temple" {SALV 216-7}

**1918**

"The Book of Ruth [is] prophetic" {PRES 169/175-6} [But was "not prophetic" according to WR Nov 15 **1902** 3110]

**1918**

"By his spirit, the holy spirit, Jehovah God guides or leads his people up to a certain point of time, and thus he did until the time when 'the comforter' was taken away, which would necessarily occur when Jesus, the Head of his organization, came to the temple and gathered unto himself those whom he found faithful when he, as the great Judge, began his judgment, in **1918**." {PRES 193-4}

**1918**

"[False religion, especially Christendom, to be destroyed. Demons would enter the minds of clergy, the] swine class [causing them to do stupid things that provokes] the masses [to destroy them] .. It seems conclusive that the hour of Nominal Zion's travail is fixed for the Passover of **1918**. (See Rev. 3:14.) That will be 7 years prior to **1925**. At that time there is every reason to believe the fallen angels will invade the minds of many of the Nominal Church people, driving them to exceedingly unwise conduct and leading to their destruction at the hands of the enraged masses, who will later be dragged to the same fate.. [Question] 'in the parallel year **1918**, I infer we should look for the complete overthrow of nominal Spiritual Israel; i.e., the fall of Babylon. (Rev. 18.) [Answer] Brother Russell replied: 'Exactly. That is exactly the inference to draw.'" {TFIM 128-9}

**1918**

"Also, in the year **1918**, when God destroys the churches wholesale and the church members by millions, it shall be that any that escape shall come to the works of Pastor Russell to learn the meaning of the downfall of 'Christianity'." {TFIM 485} **1918** "The natural harvest was used by the Lord to illustrate his harvest of Christians. In the Jewish natural harvest it was customary to glean the field after the regular harvest was over. We should therefore expect to find a harvest period .. to **1918**, and thereafter for a time a gleaning work to be done, which we will indicate." {TFIM 236} [Written in **1917** to extend the period claimed to end in **1918**]

**1918**

"The Jewish harvest covered a period of forty years, ending in A.D. 73. We should expect, then, the general harvest of the gospel age to end in **1918**." {THOG 236}

**1918**

"It is on the basis of such and so many correspondencies - in accordance with the soundest laws known to science - that we affirm that, Scripturally, scientifically, and historically, present-truth chronology is correct beyond a doubt. Its reliability has been abundantly confirmed by the dates and events of .. **1918**. Present-truth chronology is a secure basis on which the consecrated child of God may endeavor to search out things to come." {WT Jun 15 **1922** 187} **1918**

"And when the year **1914** ended amid the flames of World War I and the remnant of spiritual Israel found themselves still here on the earth, then they were inclined to think that they would be glorified in the year **1918**, three and a half years after the end of the Gentile Times." {MSWD 136}

**1918**

"We have no doubt whatever in regard to the chronology relating to the dates of .. **1918**, .. It was on this line of reckoning that the dates.. **1918** were located; and the Lord has placed the stamp of his seal upon.. **1918** beyond any possibility of erasure. What further evidence do we need?" {WT May 15 **1922** 150}

**1918**

"As the fleshly-minded apostates from Christianity, siding with the radicals and revolutionaries, will rejoice at the inheritance of desolation that will be Christendom's after **1918**, so will God do to the successful revolutionary movement; it shall be utterly desolated, 'even all of it.'" {TFIM 542}

**1918**

"In accordance with the resolution of Congress of April 2nd, and with the proclamation of the President of the United States of May 11, it is suggested that the Lord's people everywhere make May 30th a day of prayer and supplication. God was graciously pleased to cause this nation to be formed and to grow under the most favorable conditions in the world for the preservation of liberty, civil and religious. This is the land divinely 'shadowed with wings' - overshadowed by the providential watchcare of God's Word - where God



has lifted up an ensign on the mountain (kingdom), and where he has blown the trumpet message of the truth.." {WT Jan 6 1918 174}  
[Worse still, an "ensign" is a "flag"]

## 1918 - 1919

1918/9

"The preservation of the remnant of spiritual new creation to the end of World War I in 1918 and their being kept alive in the flesh in the postwar year of 1919 came as a wondrous surprise." {WT Sep 1 1989 13}

## 1919

1919

"So by 1919 Babylon the Great had fallen" [and The Bible Student / Watchtower movement chosen by Christ to be only "channel" of communication from God to men] {REVE 260} [still current doctrine]

1919

"TIME OF INSPECTION BY THE SLAVE'S MASTER.. Without a question of doubt, it was a real time for inspection of the Master's 'slave' class. All the facts of the case argue that the Master came for the work of inspection at the time. Such a thing was to be expected according to the prophecy of Malachi 3:1-5. Of course, the sectarian churches of Christendom had made a wartime record for themselves, an open record that had a heavy bearing on their claim to be disciples and slaves of Jesus Christ. Could they, by even their latest record down till 1919, prove that they themselves were the composite 'faithful and discreet slave' class of the heavenly Lord and Master, Jesus Christ? He as Judge would indicate what his findings were by the way he thereafter dealt with the hundreds of religious sects of Christendom." {GKTY 349}

1919

"There would, however, be a further application of Joel 2:28-32. Indeed, this prophecy has had remarkable fulfillment since September 1919. At that time a memorable convention of Jehovah's people was held in Cedar Point, Ohio, U.S.A. God's spirit was clearly manifest, and his anointed servants were stimulated to embark on the global witnessing campaign that extends into the present day." {WT May 1 1992 13}

1919

"Even years ago it was known by some people that the use of pacifiers by babies is one of the chief causes of diseased and enlarged tonsils and adenoid growths, which results from the suction." {GA Nov 26 1919 153} 1919

"Is not the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society the one and only channel which the Lord has used in dispensing his truth continually since the beginning of the harvest period?" {WT Apr 1 1919 6414}

1919

"NEGRO EDUCATION IN CINCINNATI. Blacks from all over the city go to this school by preference. They feel that they can get the best chance by staying in their own crowd, and they are probably right.. While it is true that 'of one blood God hath made all nations of men,' nevertheless under present imperfect conditions a wise segregation is probably an advantage to all concerned." {GA Oct 1 1919 8}

1919

"..from a criminal viewpoint the desirability of sobering the southern negro speaks volumes for national prohibition." {GA Oct 15 1919 44} [The famous book 'Uncle Tom's Cabin', which exposes the inhumane treatment of blacks, is elsewhere described in GA as "the work of Satan"]

## 1919 -1922

1919-22

"Particularly in 1919 and 1922 were there modern outpourings of Jehovah's spirit, especially in connection with the two conventions of Jehovah's dedicated people at Cedar Point, Ohio." {WT Jun 1 1981 30}

## 1920

1920

[Intravenous drug use would become common during the Millennium - it would be used by The Christ (the 144,000 and Jesus) to help mankind become perfect and free of all diseases] {GA Mar 17 1920 808}

1920

"As the fleshly-minded apostates from Christianity, siding with the radicals and revolutionaries, will rejoice at the inheritance of desolation that will be Christendom's .. so will God do to the successful revolutionary movement; it shall be utterly desolated, 'even all



of it.' Not one vestige of [Christendom] shall survive the ravages of world-wide all embracing anarchy, in the fall of **1920**. (Rev. II: 7-13)" {TFIM 542} [TFIM 1926 ed replaces "fall of **1920**" with "end of the time of trouble"]

**1920**  
"Life and the Life-Giver'.. The Radio-Solar Pad [The Society's second president, J.F. Rutherford, claimed he wore the Pad to help his pneumonia on the advice of his doctor, J.W. Coolidge - The Golden Age printed his article and the Rutherford's endorsement] " {GA Jun 23 **1920** 606-7} [Advertisements for it followed in GA Jan 19 **1921** 239, GA May 11 **1921** 480, etc. This "medical radiesthesia" being promoted by the Society was an occult philosophy that unknown and invisible rays, waves and "vibrations" can be used to diagnose and cure diseases - for example, even at a distance using a handwriting sample, picture, blood sample or other personal item. The Society now views this as "spiritism"]

**1920**  
"And the mountains were not found. Even the republics will disappear in the fall of **1920**. And the mountains were not found. Every kingdom of earth will pass away, be swallowed up in anarchy." {TFIM 258} [TFIM 1926 ed omits this]

**1920**  
"Comments on Revelation 11:13 .. Some interesting developments in connection with the setting up of the Kingdom may occur in **1920**, six years after the great Time of Trouble began. It would not be strange if this were so, when we recall that after forty years wandering in the wilderness the Israelites came into possession of the land of Canaan after a further six years. As these matters are still future we can but wait to see. We anticipate that.. the 'fire' will come in the fall of **1920**." {TFIM 178} [TFIM 1926 ed replaces "come in the fall of **1920**" with "follow in due course"]

**1920**  
"Milk is the greatest curative food known." {GA Dec 8 **1920** 146} [Mr. Rutherford preferred a Prohibited alternative, in excess]

## **1921**

**1921**  
[Chiropractor A.G.Eckols treated Society President J.F.Rutherford's pneumonia in San Diego.. this led to the construction of Beth Sarim, see **1929** entries, perhaps also for the 'princes'] {GA Apr 27 **1921** 437} [Chiropractors were supported by Society publications, because they were like Osteopaths, and believed all disease was caused by subluxations of spinal vertebrae which constricted nerves. The 'vital', 'life' force expressed itself this way and was hindered by subluxations, which were treated by 'adjustments' to the spine, without any anesthetic or drugs; Jack Raso: Alternative Healthcare - A Comprehensive Guide (Prometheus Books, **1993**) 148]

**1921**  
"The cross of Christ is the greatest pivotal truth of the divine arrangement, from which radiate the hopes of men." {THOG 142} [Picture of crucified Christ is on page 113 of both editions of this book, as it is on CREA 265/336. A picture of Christ carrying a cross appears in LIFE 198]

**1921**  
"The size of the nose, as also the size of the eyes, is not without significance. The small-nosed man cannot have a judicial mind, whatever his other excellencies may be. And a man whose nose upturns can no more be expected to administer justice than a pug dog can be expected to act as a shepherd." {GA Jan 19 **1921** 224}

**1921**  
"Without a doubt Pastor Russell filled the office for which the Lord Provided and about which he spoke, and was therefore that wise and faithful servant, ministering to the household of faith meat in due season." {THOG 239} **1921**

"Radium - Earths Most Valuable Substance' .. honest demons [speaking through mediums or Ouija Boards said that in discovering Radium, mankind was getting close to the] secret [of life - though] lying spirits [were involved,] even liars will sometimes tell the truth." {GA Feb 2 **1921** 260} [the author had in GA Jun 23 **1920** 606-7 directly promoted the use of Radium in protracted close proximity to the human body, with radiation poisoning a certain result]

**1921**  
"Vaccination never prevented anything and never will, and is the most barbarous practice .. Use your rights as American citizens [i.e. participate politically!!] to forever abolish the devilish practice of vaccination." {GA Oct 12 **1921** 17} [GA, CONS and AWAK articles until the **1960s** contain far too many examples of medical imprudence and quackery to quote from other than sparingly. GA advocated the Grape Cure which was purported to cure cancer by fasting and only eating grapes, which (according to its founder, Johanna Brandt, who the Society endorsed) worked because grapes were 'magnetic' and rejuvenated your mind with the sun's healing 'vibrations']

## **1922**

**1922**

"This chronology is not of man, but of God. Being of divine origin and divinely corroborated, present-truth chronology stands in a class by itself, absolutely and unqualifiedly correct.." {WT Jul 15 1922 217}

**1922**  
"But Jehovah raised them up by his spirit and word of truth. Shortly thereafter, at their **1922** convention in Cedar Point, Ohio, they loyally determined to advertise the King and Kingdom. Jehovah has been guiding them since then, so that his name and kingdom have become known worldwide." {WT Dec 15 1980 19}

**1922** "There is no one in present truth today who can honestly say that he received a knowledge of the divine plan from any source other than by the ministry of Brother Russell, either directly or indirectly.. C.T. Russell was the 'faithful and wise servant' of Matthew 24:45.. Then to repudiate him and his work is equivalent to a repudiation of the Lord.." {WT May 1 1922 132} [Mrs. C. T. Russell also confirmed in **WR** 1906 3811 that her husband was the "faithful slave" of prophecy - this was before she divorced him for cruelty. The court decree was one of separation. So why then in **WR** 1881 291 were the "144,000" pictured, years earlier, as the "Faithful & wise servant", and not just Russell? And why did the Society change its mind yet again on this matter in **1927**, when in **WT** 1927 51-7 the 'Faithful and wise servant' is identified as the remnant of the 144,000 still on earth, and not as Russell?]

## 1923

**1923**  
"C. T. Russell is [identified as] 'man with inkhorn' [of] Ezekiel Chapter 9" {LAOD 150}

**1923**  
"The faithful and wise servant' [was] C. T. Russell {WT Dec 1 1916 through to WT Mar 1 1923 68} [But **PLPR** 193 identified 'The faithful and discreet slave' as the 'Remnant of Spiritual Israelites' (i.e. the annointed remnant on earth of the 144,000 'heavenly class')]

**1923**  
"When asked who the faithful and wise servant was, Russell would reply, 'Some say I am while others say the Society is'; both are true, since Russell was in fact the Society." {WT Mar 1 1923 68} [How then the assertion that "'That Faithful and Wise Servant' does not apply to one individual and not to brother Russell. Russell never made that claim himself." {WT Feb 15 1927 56} be made four years later?]

**1923**  
"But the dog-rabies-vaccine imposition is the latest.. Rabies! When it has been shown conclusively that there is no such thing as rabies [hydrophobia]!.. a mental hoax.. Vaccination, summed up, is the most unhygienic, barbaric, filthy, abhorrent, and most dangerous system of infection known. Its vile poison taints, corrupts, and pollutes the blood of the healthy, resulting in ulcers, syphilis, scrofula, erysipelas, tuberculosis, cancer, tetanus, insanity, and death" {GA Jan 1 1923 214}

## 1924

**1924**  
"It has never been proven that a single disease is due to germs." {GA Jan 16 1924 250} [This was dozens of years after medicine had proven bacteria and viruses caused most diseases. The Watchtower Bible and Tract Society instead taught that diseases caused germs, and that medical evidence that germs caused diseases was entirely false. The diseases themselves were actually caused by improper diet and constipation, and fewer than two regular bowel movements in the day would have dire effects - you would contract any number of diseases in short order.]

**1924**  
"ANGELS AND WOMEN' is the title of a book .. Pastor Russell read this book with keen interest, and requested some of his friends to read it because of its striking harmony with the Scriptural account of the sons of God described in the sixth chapter of Genesis. Those sons of God became evil, and debauched the human family prior to, and up to, the time of the great deluge. We call attention to this book because we believe it will be of interest to Bible Students, who are familiar with the machinations of the devil and the demons and the influence exercised by them prior to the flood and also now in this evil day. The book throws light on the subject and is believed, will aid those who carefully consider it to avoid the baneful effects of spiritism, now so prevalent in the world. The book is revised and published by a personal friend of Pastor Russell, and one who was close to him in his work.. The publishers advise that the regular price of the book is \$2.00; but to all subscribers to The Golden Age, it will furnished at \$1.00.." {GA Jul 30 1924 702} [No mention was made that this book was allegedly produced by 'automatic writing' under the control of spirit(s). The reviser said the woman who wrote it was "impelled to write it after listening to beautiful music .. dictated to the women who wrote by one of the fallen angels who desired to return to divine favor" (p 3,5 of the recommended book). In respect of another book this appeared "THE GOLDEN AGE does not make it a practice of reviewing books [but will when the book] contains facts that should be widely known." {GA Oct 27 1920 35}. So automatic writing inspired by fallen angels (i.e., demons) was to help followers of Russell "avoid the baneful effects of spiritism"!]

## 1924

"'Angels and Women' WE PRESENT some letters.. '..I made some inquiries, and was told that it was a book that a fallen angel dictated to a women, showing a desire to come back into harmony with God; and that Pastor Russell approved of the book. I had never heard of the book before; and as we are to shun anything akin to spiritism I should like to know positively whether the book has your approval before buying one..' .. Under [Russell's] supervision it was revised, and later published by one who was formerly his confidential associate.. As to its being a violation of the Vow to read this book, such an idea is not worthy of consideration.. Many have derived much benefit from reading 'Angels and Women' because it aids in getting a clearer vision of how Satan overreached the angels and overreached the human race, and caused all the havoc amongst men and angels. It helps one to a better understanding of the devil's organization." {GA Dec 3 1924 150-1} [How was this not a breach of the Vow, which stated "...I Vow to thee that I will be on the alert to resist everything akin to spiritism and Occultism, and that, remembering that there are but two masters, I shall resist these snares in all reasonable ways, as being of the Adversary.." {WR 4383}, and which was to be take daily {WR 4780}, and was even presented as a bookmark {WR 4383/4960} You are kindly invited to look up the references at your local Kingdom Hall.

## 1925

### 1924-5

"After 1925 expect shortly Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob.. No doubt many boys and girls who read this book will live to see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, Daniel, and those other men of old come forth in the glory of their better resurrection, of perfect in mind and body. It will not take long for Christ to appoint them to their post of honor and authority as his earthly representatives. The world and all the present conveniences will seem strange to them at first, but they will soon become accustomed to the new methods. They may have some amusing experiences at first; for they never saw telephones, radios, automobiles, electric lights, aeroplanes, steam engines, and many other things so familiar to us." {TWTP 224-6}

### 1925

"[By 1925] You will have secured the services of the best decorators you can find. Some of them used to be undertakers; but since there are no more people dying, they have had to seek some new occupation. Their experience as undertakers prepared them to become decorators with very little difficulty." {TWTP 228}

### 1925

"The great Pyramid of Egypt, standing as a silent and manimate witness of the Lord, is a messenger; and its testimony speaks with great eloquence concerning the divine plan (Isaiah 19:19).. Arius .. Waldo .. John Wycliffe.. Martin Luther [were all] part of God's Organization." {WT May 15 1925 148-9}

### 1925

"You have made all preparations for father and mother. The home is all ready; a special room is prepared for them, fitted with every thing you can think of that might give pleasure and delight. You then call up the princes at Jerusalem, state your case, and make request that your father and your mother might be awakened. In joyful expectancy you wait. Some morning you hear talking in the room you have prepared. There was no one there last night. You know that there are no thieves or intruders; for all such experiences have been eliminated. You do not need to be fearful; so you listen at the door. You hear father's familiar voice saying, 'Mother, where are we? Are we dreaming? Why, I thought I attended your funeral last summer; then I was taken sick, and they had the doctor, and that is the last I can remember.' Mother says: 'I don't understand it either, Dear. The last I can remember is that I was so sick, and you and the doctors were standing at the bedside, and you were holding my hand. What has happened? We are not sick now, and this room is different from any room I ever saw. It is so beautiful and everything is so peaceful. Just hear those birds sing, and did you ever! Why, where did you get that suit of clothes? You are handsome as you were on our wedding day.'" {TWTP 228-9}

### 1925

"We understand that the jubilee type began to count in 1575 B.C.; and the 3,500 year period embracing the type must end in 1925.. It follows, then, that the year 1925 will mark the beginning of the restoration of all things lost by Adam's disobedience." {WT Nov 1 1922 346}

### 1925

"We cannot be blamed for presenting from the Scriptures such evidence as they afford which leads us to believe that a certain event will take place at a given time. Some times the Lord has let His people looking for the right thing at the wrong time, and more frequently they have looked for the wrong things at the right time. But all the enemies of

the cause of present truth in the earth are fervently hoping that the Bible students will not be so successful in **1925** in looking for the right thing at the right time as they were in **1914**. if they are, however, it will be the other fellow that will have to do the explaining, and not we." {GA Feb 13 **1924** 314}

**1925**  
"Have we more reason, or as much, to believe the kingdom will be established in **1925** than Noah had to believe that there would be a flood? .. Our thought is, that **1925** is definitely settled by the Scriptures, marking the end of the typical jubilees. Just exactly what will happen at that time no one can tell to a certainty; but we expect such a climax in the affairs of the world that the people will begin to realize the presence of the Lord and his kingdom power.. As to Noah, the Christian now has much more upon which to base his faith than Noah had (so far as the Scriptures reveal) upon which to base his faith in a coming deluge." {WT Mar 1 **1923** 106}

**1925**  
"This vision of the prophet Ezekiel depicts the established theocratic Kingdom of God on earth, civil and religious, spiritual and earthly.. The Temple.. is a type and symbol of 'better things to come', after the wars, revolutions and anarchy of the period from **1914** to **1925** have passed." {TFIM 569} [TFIM **1926** ed replaces "period from **1914** to **1925**" with "time of trouble"]

**1925**  
"The year **1925** is a date definitely and clearly marked in Scriptures, even more clearly than that of **1914**" {WT **1924** 211}

**1925**  
"We have no doubt whatever in regard to the chronology relating to the dates of .. **1925**.. What further evidence do we need? Using this same measuring line.. it is an easy matter to locate **1925**, probably in the fall, for the beginning of the antitypical jubilee. There can be no more question about **1925** than there was about **1914**." {WT May 15 **1922** 150}

**1925**  
"The chief thing to be restored is the human race to life; and since other Scriptures definitely fix the fact that there will be a resurrection of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and other faithful ones of old, and that these will have the first favor, we may expect **1925** to witness the return of these faithful men of Israel from the condition of death, being resurrected and fully restored to perfect humanity and made the visible, legal representatives of the new order of things on earth.. They are to be resurrected as perfect men and constitute the princes or rulers in the earth .. Therefore we may confidently expect that **1925** will mark the return of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and the faithful prophets of old, particularly those named by the Apostle in Hebrews 11, to the condition of human perfection.. A simple calculation of these jubilees brings us to this important fact: Seventy jubilees of fifty years each would be a total of 3500 years. That period of time beginning 1575 years before A.D. 1 of necessity would end in the fall of **1925**, at which time the type ends and the great antitype must begin. What, then, should we expect to take palace? In the type there must be a full restoration; beginning of restoration of all things." {MLND 88-90} ["Princes" not to be resurrected until after Armageddon per HIS1 252-3]

**1925**  
"Our thought is, that **1925** is definitely settled by the scriptures. As to Noah, the Christian now has much more upon which to base his faith than Noah had upon which to base his faith in a coming deluge." {WT Apr 1 **1923** 106}

**1925**  
"Based upon the argument heretofore set forth, then, that the old order of things, the old world, is ending and is therefore passing away, and that the new order is coming in, and that **1925** shall mark the resurrection of the faithful worthies of old and the beginning of reconstruction, it is reasonable to conclude that millions of people now on the earth will be still on the earth in **1925**. Then, based upon the promises set forth in the divine Word, we must reach the positive and indisputable conclusion that millions now living will never die." {MLND 97}

**1925**  
"The period must end in **1925**. The type ending, the antitype must begin; and therefore **1925** is definitely fixed in the scriptures. every thinking person can see that a great climax is at hand. The Scriptures clearly indicate that the climax is the fall of Satan's empire and the full establishment of the Messianic kingdom. This climax being reached by **1925**, and that marking the beginning of the fulfillment of the long promised blessings of life to the people, millions now living on earth will be living then and those who obey the righteous laws of the new arrangement will live forever. Therefore it can be confidently said at this time that millions now living will never die." {GA Jan 4 **1922** 217}

**1925**  
"There is no food that is right food for the morning meal. At breakfast is no time to break a fast. Keep up the daily fast until the noon hour.. Drink plenty of water two hours after each meal; drink none just before eating; and a small quantity if any at meal time. Good buttermilk is a health drink at meal times and in between. Do not take a bath until two hours after eating a meal, nor closer than one hour before eating. Drink a full glass of water both before and after the bath." {GA Sep 9 **1925** 784-5}

**1925**  
"Not until **1925** was 'the time of trouble' scripturally understood." {WT Feb 1 **1938** 35}

**1925**  
".. about April 1, **1925**, at which time we may expect the resurrection of the Ancient Worthies .." {MLND 110} **1925**  
"They had preached that in an early time God would overthrow "Christendom". Many had emphasized the year **1925** .." {WT Feb 15 **1938** 54} [Many? The Society. Now, it tries to distance itself]

**1925**

"Further, the widely circulated booklet Millions Now Living Will Never Die presented the view that in **1925**, God's purposes regarding the restoring of the earth to Paradise and the resurrecting of the faithful ones of old would begin to be fulfilled." {WT Nov 1 **1993** 12}

**1925**  
"The year **1925** is here. With great expectation Christians have looked forward to this year. Many have confidently expected that all members of the body of Christ will be changed to heavenly glory during this year. This may be accomplished. It may not be. In his own due time God will accomplish his purposes concerning his people. Christians should not be so deeply concerned about what may transpire this year." {WT Jan 1 **1925** 3}

**1925**  
"It is to be expected that Satan will try to inject into the minds of the consecrated, the thought that **1925** should see an end to the work.." {WT Sep **1925** 262}

**1925**  
"Be that as it may, there is evidence that the establishment of the Kingdom in Palestine will probably be in **1925**, ten years later than we once calculated." {TFIM 128}

**1925**  
"Some one asked me the other day: Suppose you should be here in **1925** what would you do? I said, I believe I will be home in the Pleiades before then .." {WT Nov 1 **1920** 334}

**1925**  
"I have named this new discovery, which I believe will be epochal in the history of the treatment of disease, and which I am exclusively announcing in THE GOLDEN AGE prior to its general publication elsewhere, The Electronic Radio Biola, which means life renewed by radio waves or electrons. The Biola automatically diagnoses and treats diseases by the use of the electronic vibrations. The diagnosis is 100 percent correct, rendering better service in this respect than the most experienced diagnostician.. The principle of operation of the Biola is the collection... of the disease vibrations.. the fluid containing the same waves or vibrations enters the body, meets the disease waves and destroys them.. This is a great step forward, marking the Biola as the most valuable treatment apparatus obtainable today, and well worthy of notice in the columns of a magazine like THE GOLDEN AGE.." {GA Apr 22 **1925** 454}  
[Advertisement for sale of 'The Electronic Radio Biola' appears on page 479]

**1925**  
"The year **1925** came and went. Jesus' anointed followers were still on earth as a class. The faithful men of old time - Abraham, David and others - had not been resurrected to become princes in the earth. (Ps. 45:16) So, as Anna MacDonald recalls: '**1925** was a sad year for many brothers. Some of them were stumbled; their hopes were dashed .. Instead of it's being considered a 'probability', they read into it that it was a 'certainty' and some prepared for their loved ones with expectations of their resurrection.'" {YEAR **1975** 146}

**1925**  
"The date **1925** is even more distinctly indicated by the Scriptures because it is fixed by the law God gave to Israel. Viewing the present situation in Europe, one wonders how it will be possible to hold back the explosion much longer; and that even before **1925** the great crisis will be reached and probably passed." {WT Sep 1 **1922** 262} **1925**

"Bible Students, known since **1931** as Jehovah's Witnesses, also expected that the year **1925** would see the fulfillment of marvelous Bible prophecies." {AWAK Jun 22 **1995** 9}

**1925**  
"There will be no slip-up.. Abraham should enter upon the actual possession of his promised inheritance in the year **1925** A.D." {WT Oct 15 **1917** 6157}

**1925**

"Some anticipated that the work would end in **1925**, but the Lord did not state so. The difficulty was that the friends inflated their imaginations beyond reason; and that when their imaginations burst asunder, they were inclined to throw away everything." {WT **1926** 232}

**1925**  
[NO MENTION!] {HIS2 Section 'Notable Dates' - Official **1993** version of WTBT's history of predictions}

## **1926**

**1926**  
"Truly the year **1926** deserved to be marked as the happy climax of the close of the 1,335 days. Those of Daniel's "people" who kept in expectation and reached the end of the 1,335 days were launched off into a happiness that has not diminished, but that, despite mounting persecution and World War II (**1939-1945**) and subsequent world troubles, has persisted and increased." {OIWG 146-7}

**1926**  
"[Orientals are] coolies .. cutthroats and murderers" {GA Mar 10 **1926** 374}

**1926**



"[White rulers as in Britain have the] superior mental, moral, or physical force.. [but be warned, power is slipping as the] powers of the colored races are expanding" {WT May 15 1926 483}

**1926**  
[Flood may have been caused by all of the other planets being on one side of the earth simultaneously. God may have inserted the "youngest" planet Neptune on the other side to act as a gravitational corrective to make sure it cannot happen again] {GA Jun 16 1926 583}

**1926**  
"Human footprints seven feet long found in California.. [made by] giants [mentioned in] Genesis 6" {GA Jan 13 1926 238}

**1926**  
"A Prophecy Now Being Fulfilled.. Did you ever stop to consider how the radio is fulfilling a prophecy before our eyes today? When Jesus rode into Jerusalem.. was asked to reprove the children and bid them be silent, Jesus said that if these should hold their peace 'the very stones would cry out'. Today the clergy, who claim to be the foremost children of God, should be proclaiming the presence of earth's new King. But they are silent, and the very stones are actually crying out. Ask any radio builder and he will tell you that galena is used in most radio receiving sets. Galena is nothing but a piece of stone, with metal fixed through it. When people tune in on WBBR or WORD, or other stations now being used to disseminate the message of Messiah's incoming kingdom, they are witnessing and hearing the fulfillment of this ancient prophecy-the stones are being used to cry out and herald forth the presence of the King of kings, because the clergy of Christendom refuse to do so." {GA Dec 1 1926 157-8}

**1926**  
"Tonsillectomy is called a minor operation. If so, getting well is a double major. If any overzealous doctor condemns your tonsils go and commit suicide with a case-knife. It's cheaper and less painful." {GA Apr 7 1926 438}

**1926**  
"Radio [may soon] transmit.. heat, light, vision, sound and power." {GA Jul 14 1926 644}

**1926**  
"The sun [will never run out] of electricity [as it] is not exhausted with use.. [electricity] goes the rounds of the universe from solar system to solar system and returns.. [when the Solar System becomes] saturated {they} give off .. surplus electricity to other solar systems .. and so it goes, from one to the other, until it completes the immeasurable circuit.. a corollary of this theory is that all the planets have atmosphere and are probably inhabited." {GA Aug 11 1926 723}

**1926**  
"God [may soon cause] a comet [to be] captured by the Earth.. [to] bring about a radical change in earth's climatic conditions and transform the surface of our planet into a paradise, wherein disease and death will be no more." {GA Jun 16 1926 583}

**1926**  
"Negative Gravitation.. new discovery .. radiant energy .. radio-activity .. Many have wondered how accidents would be avoided during Christ's kingdom, since we are told that nothing shall then hurt or destroy. Most accidents are due to gravitation and its effects. Falling from airplanes.. may be avoided by an individual negative gravity device. Scientists tell us that there is enough atomic energy in a finger-nail to propel a battleship. The people of the future may carry a little of this energy around with them, and if they fall down an elevator shaft they can let themselves down easy. Then they can turn a little more on and go back up.. No danger of falling down stairs then." {GA Mar 24 1926 404}

**1926**  
"Air baths are good for preventing colds.. What you do is strip naked mornings and evenings and then bob up and down for a while." {GA Feb 10 1926 310}

**1926**  
"current agitation over birth control [is evidence that] the 'New Age' is at hand." {GA Apr 7 1926 423} **1926**

"Disease [is] caused by fermentation and heat.. not germs. [It cannot be] proven [that] any disease was caused by germs [including] so-called infectious diseases .. chicken pox and small pox." {GA Aug 25 1926 751/4} [The WTBT position was that all scientists had got it completely the wrong way around - Diseases caused germs. No joke]

**1926**  
[God wears clothes] {GA May 19 1926 534}

**1926**  
"Many have wondered how accidents would be avoided during Christ's kingdom, since we are told that nothing shall then hurt or destroy. Most accidents are due to gravitation and its effects. Falling from airplanes.. may be avoided by an individual negative gravity device. Scientists tell us that there is enough atomic energy in a finger-nail to propel a battleship. The people of the future may carry a little of this energy around with them, and if they fall down an elevator shaft they can let themselves down easy. Then they can turn a little more on and go back up.. No danger of falling down stairs then." {GA Mar 24 1926 404}

**1926**  
[The distance from the Society's printing press in Scranton, Pa to the Bethel offices in Brooklyn, NY, using a ferry, with a Railway Guide (extract included) to prove the distance from Lackawanna station in Scranton to Hoboken Terminal in New Jersey, is the "exact distance" referred to in the Bible at Revelation 14:20 "And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs"] {TFIM 230 1926 ed}



## 1927

1927

"Be it known once and for all that those profiteering, conscienceless, selfish men who call themselves Jews, and who control the greater portion of the finances of the world and the business of the world, will never be the rulers in this new earth. God would not risk such selfish men with such an important position" {GA Feb 23 1927 343}

1927

"In the New World Abraham may be the ruler of New York City. Isaac may rule over Chicago and perhaps Jacob will be put in London. His father-in-law, Laban, was a diplomat.. Shortly we believe, Abraham will come forth from the grave.." {GA Oct 5 1927 26/29}

1927

"In the future man will get his food directly from the sun." {GA Oct 5 1927 10}

1927

[Pictures of a crucified Christ] {CREA 265/366} [Also in THOG (both editions) 113. A picture of Christ carrying a cross appears in LIFE 198]

1927

"The face of the deep, of course, would be toward the Pleiades, which are claimed to be the habitation of Jehovah." {CREA 94}

1927

"Q: Why do you Bible Students understand new things in the Bible which were never dreamed of one hundred years ago? A: Because it is now the due time for God to reveal to the righteous many things which were heretofore hidden." {GA Jun 29 1927 637}

1927

"Q: Will reading the Bible through.. give one a clear knowledge of the truth? A: No.. The most valuable literature to assist one understand the Bible is published by the International Bible Students Association [as Jehovah's Witnesses called themselves until 1931] {GA Jul 27 1927 700-1}

1927

"It may not be out of place to ask: What became of the garden of Eden? Scriptural proof is that it was surrounded by very high mountains .. that it is and was in the vicinity of Mount Ararat .. which has since been hidden under perpetual snow. It does not seem reasonable that the Lord would have destroyed Eden; but it seems more reasonable that the Lord would have preserved it so that in His due time He will exhibit it to man. Through His prophet Job, God said: 'Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow?' (Job 38:22) Doubtless Eden is one of the treasures of the snow preserved by the Lord in perpetual snow and ice. The inspired writer of the Scriptures declares that with the second presence of the Lord He will bring to light the hidden things of darkness. (1 Corinthians 4: 5) The Lord Jesus himself said: 'For nothing is secret that shall not be made manifest; neither anything hid that shall not be known.' - Luke 8: 17. In the light of these scriptures it is reasonable for us to conclude that when God has restored man and brought the earth to an Edenic paradise.. then He will unseal the secret treasures of the snow and exhibit to restored man his original perfect home." {GA Mar 9 1927 371}

1927

"Here the record is that God came down to see their organization and their tower; and then, for the people's good, He changed their language. It will be noticed in the Hebrew (Genesis 11:1) that the people all had one lip. Their lip must have been shaped in the same general manner.." {GA Jul 13 1927 663} [Broadcast from WBBR, the WTBS radio station; explaining the 'tower' - but what angel inspired Rutherford to write about the 'lip'?]

1927

"One of the Lord's promises to His followers was, 'That which you have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.' This prophecy is being literally fulfilled by the Bible Students today, every time they use the radio. Their message is spoken in the ear of the microphone; it is done in the closet or studio fitted up for the purpose; the aerials are fitted upon the housetops. It is all just as the Master said." {GA Apr 20 1927 457} 1927

"Every bedroom [should receive] at least two hours of sunlight every day [this will] kill tuberculosis and other germs." {GA Jul 1 1927 643} [T.B. is very prevalent in hot countries with lots of sunlight]

1927

"A Cure for Catarrah and Hay Fever.. an ounce of powdered bayberry bark.. sniff.. several times a day .. [Reader did this for the suggested] two months.. did not have hay fever that year." {GA Jan 26 1927 272} [Hay fever season over?]

1927

"Spaniards .. and other backward races [came to settle in America under the influence of Rome]" {GA Nov 30 1927 141}

## 1928

1928

"The constellation of the seven stars forming the Pleiades appears to be the crowning center around which the known systems of the planets revolve even as our sun's planets obey the sun and travel in their respective orbits. It has been suggested, and with much weight, that one of the stars of that group is the dwelling-place of Jehovah and the place of the highest heavens;.. The constellation

of the Pleiades is a small one compared with others which scientific instruments disclose to the wondering eyes of man. But the greatness in size of other stars or planets is small when compared with the Pleiades in importance, because the Pleiades is the place of the eternal throne of God." {RECO 14}

**1928**

"careful observations in a London school showed that children enjoyed the heartiest laughs, not from slapstick comedies, but from.. watching a negro miner enjoying a square meal" {GA 1928 684}

**1928**

"All human ailments have their start in the intestines." {GA Nov 28 1928 133}

**1928**

"The cross of Christ is the greatest pivotal truth of the divine arrangement, from which radiate the hopes of men." {THOG 142} [Picture of crucified Christ is on page 113 of both editions of this book, as it is on CREA 265/336. A picture of Christ carrying a cross appears in LIFE 198]

**1928**

[Great Pyramid at Gzeh in Egypt was built under direction of Satan] {WT 1928 339-45/355-62} [compare with [God had placed the Great Pyramid of Gizeh in Egypt] {WR Sep 1883 525}]

## **1929**

**1929**

"Is there anything in the Bible that reveals the origin of the Negro? It is generally believed that the curse which Noah pronounced upon Canaan was the origin of the Black race. Certain it is that when Noah said, 'Cursed be Canaan, a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren,' he pictured the future of the Colored race. They have been and are a race of servants.. There is no servant in the world as good as a good colored servant, and the joy that he gets from rendering faithful service is one of the purest joys there is in the world." {GA Jul 24 1929 702}

**1929**

[Romans 13:17 reinterpreted, so the "higher powers" previously stated in {TIAH 81} to refer to secular authorities, actually were "identified" as "Jehovah" and "Jesus"] {WT Jun 1 1929, WT Jun 15 1929, TMYF 312} [This permitted followers to disregard non-Watchtower authorities. However, because of the many absurdities the 1929 change caused, {WT Nov 15 1962 681-95, MSWD 326} reversed this again, so that "higher powers" once again meant "worldly/earthly governments"]

**1929**

"Jesus was crucified upon the cross; but it is a well-known fact that, contrary to the custom in respect to the victims of crucifixion, not one bone of his body was broken." {LIFE 216} [A picture of Christ carrying a cross appears on page 198, and a crucified Christ in CREA 265/336 and THOG (both editions) 113]

**1929**

"Avoid serum inoculations and vaccinations as they pollute the blood stream with their filthy pus." {GA Nov 13 1929 106-7} [Louis Pasteur was described by the Society as a "fake", and GA and CONS both directly and repeatedly advised to avoid pasteurized milk and instead to drink untreated milk, as smallpox did not actually exist] 1929

"Thinking people would rather have smallpox than vaccination, because the latter sows the seed of syphilis, cancers, escema, erysipelas, scrofula, consumption, even leprosy and many other loathsome affections. Hence the practice of vaccination is a crime, an outrage and a delusion." {GA May 1 1929 502} [Vaccinations were also stated by the Society to be a "direct violation of the everlasting covenant" and Witnesses were told not to have any - until WT Dec 15 1952 764 "The matter of vaccination is one for the individual that has to face it to decide for himself.. our Society cannot afford to be drawn into the affair legally or take the responsibility for the way the case turns out ... all objection to vaccination on scriptural grounds seems to be lacking."]

**1929**

"At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929 there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth Sarim mean 'House of the Princes'; and the purpose of acquiring that property and building the house was that there are those on earth today who fully believe in God and Christ Jesus and in His Kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth Sarim is vested in the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be forever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth.. It stands there as a testimony to Jehovah's name; and when the princes do return, and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that induced the building of Beth Sarim." {SALV 311} [Original legal deed to Beth Sarim, by Rutherford, in 1929 stated "Both the grantor and the grantee are fully persuaded from the Bible testimony which is the word of Jehovah God and from extraneous evidence that God's Kingdom is now in the course of establishment and that it will result beneficially for the peoples of earth; that the governing power and authority will be invisible to men but that the kingdom of God will have visible representatives on the earth who will have charge of the affairs of the nations under supervision of the invisible ruler, Christ. That among those who will be thus the faithful representatives and visible governors of the world will be David, who was once King over Israel; and Gideon,

and Barak, and Samson, and Jephthai, and Joseph, formerly ruler of Egypt, and Samuel the prophet and other faithful men named with approval in the Bible at Hebrews 11th. chapter."]

**1929**

"In time, a direct contribution was made for the purpose of constructing a house in San Diego for brother Rutherford's use .. Concerning this property the **1939** book Salvation stated: 'At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year **1929**, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth Sarim. {**YEAR 1975** 194} [Omitting a few details. The San Diego Sun of Mar 15 **1930** wrote: "But how will you identify King David or any of the other representatives from God?' Rutherford was asked. 'I thought all that out before I wrote the deed,' the judge replied with a twinkle in his gray eyes. 'I realized the possibility of some old codger turning up bright and early some morning and declaring he was David. The men whom I have designated to test the identity of these men are officers of my societies and have consecrated themselves to the Lord, they will be divinely authorized to know impostors from the real princes.'" Time Magazine of Mar 31, **1930** wrote: "Judge Joseph Frederick Rutherford 60, lives in a ten room Spanish mansion, No 4440 Braeburn Rd, San Diego, Calif. Last week he deeded No 4440 Braeburn Road, and adjacent two car garage and a pair of automobiles to King David, Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthae, Samuel and sundry other mighties of ancient Palestine. Positive is he that they are shortly to reappear on earth, Said he: 'I have purposely landscaped the place with palm and olive trees so that these princes of the universe will feel at home ..'. The San Diego Sun of Jan 9 **1931** wrote: "A gaunt unshaven tramp has been the lone claimant for the \$75,000 Southern Californian mansion of David, king of Israel, since it was deeded to the Biblical character a year ago. This was revealed today by Judge James Rutherford, temporary owner of the luxuriantly furnished Spanish type mansion at 440 Braeburn Rd in the exclusive Kensington Heights district. In one of the oddest deeds ever recorded, Rutherford, president of the International Bible Students Association and the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, has placed in trust the magnificent estate for ancient kings and prophets of Israel The slayer of Goliath and his companions may occupy the 10 room modern home with it's landscaped gardens and patio as soon as their credentials are approved by Rutherford and officials of his societies, divinely authorised to recognise them. One morning as I was going from the house to the garage, a queer looking creature approached me, tipped his dirty hat and cried 'Howdy Judge, I'm David' 'Go and tell that to the winds', I told him and he left without arguing the matter. I could see at a glance that he was not David. He didn't look like I knew David would look.' Asked how he expected David and his distinguished brethren to look, Rutherford, without hesitation, opened his huge Bible and pointed to a verse which said that the Princes of the Universe would be risen from the dead 'as perfect men'. 'I interpret that to mean', the tall dignified Judge declared, 'that David, Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthae, Joseph and Samuel will be sent here to wrench the world from Satan's grasp, clothed in modern garb as we are, and able, with little effort, to speak our tongue.' Rutherford pictured the arrival of the biblical delegation perhaps in frock coats, high hats, canes and spats. At Beth Sarim (House of Princes) as Rutherford has named his mansion, David will find the most modern appliances that science has devised. When the distinguished guests walk up the circular stairway to the second floor, they will find a large office with red leather chairs and shiny flat topped desk with inverted lighting. Even French telephones await the touch of the princes. Opening a wide door, the native sons of Palestine will behold a large bathroom, resplendent in shiny black tile with needle shower and an amply filled medicine chest. What a thrill giant shouldered Samson, who wrecked a palace with his bare fists might find in the gold safety razor and strop! Rutherford built the second floor bedroom, which he temporarily occupies, large in order to accommodate several of the expected owners. With wide pane windows that look out on the purple Cuyamacas to the East and California's first mission to the north, the bedroom is almost severe in it's furnishings. The rulers of the universe will have simple tastes, the judge apparently believes, although the austere end tables sported gaily covered fiction magazines. Rutherford has imported some Koniach, Wasser from Cologne, Germany to freshen the princely faces after shaving. A black skull cap hangs over one of the bedposts. The coming of David and his companions will be the greatest news story of the ages, Rutherford predicted. 'I am not a publicity seeker,' Rutherford said with a twinkle in his kindly brown eyes, 'but I feel that the world should know about their arrival. It will be a great news story.' Word of his 'House of king David' has reached into every corner of the world, the judge stated. 'Everywhere I went people asked me about this place,' Rutherford said. 'In Chicago a millionaire manufacturer offered to build another house for David, but I declined the offer. 'Literally thousands have driven here to see this place,' Rutherford continued. 'Many have come to the door and my secretary has shown them about the place.' The patio with it's silver pool and olive and palm trees is gay with flowers. Down toward the canyon, paths have been landscaped to allow David and his friends to walk in meditation. Many of the fruits and trees, native to their Palestine, will greet the rulers when they arrive. In the two car garage next door stands a new, yellow 16 cylinder coupe which will be turned over to the rulers along with all the personal property on the place. 'Everything will be theirs, the house, the land, the furnishings and even the clothes if they need them,' Judge Rutherford said. 'What will I do? Oh, don't worry about me. I'll manage somehow.' the judge smiled. He had another 'Watch Tower' residence on Staten Island and practically an entire floor at Bethel. The seven famous men will not have long to rest at their San Diego estate because they soon will lead the forces of the Lord to vanquish the minions of Satan at the battle of Armageddon, Rutherford believed. 'But they will win out. The Lord will punish the devil and will show that the preachers and the politicians have been giving the people false counsel,' Rutherford said confidently. Rutherford will sail May 9 for Europe where he will speak before conventions in Berlin Paris and London."]

1929

"From **1929** on, Brother Rutherford spent the winters working at a San Diego residence he had named Beth-Sarim. Beth-Sarim was built with funds that were a direct contribution for that purpose." {**HIS2** 76} [From the Official History many years later - did they miss anything out?]

**1929**

"If these prophesies have not been fulfilled, and if all possibility of fulfilment is past, then these prophets are proven false." {PROP 22}

**1929**

"If the organs [of your body] are diseased, heal them by correcting your diet. Avoid the use of aluminum cooking utensils and alum baking powders as they are injurious to your health, poisoning your blood stream.. Sleep on the right side or flat on your back, with the head toward the north so as to get benefit of the earth's magnetic currents. Avoid serum inoculations as they pollute the blood stream with their filthy pus.. Stop chewing gum, as you need the saliva for your food." {GA Nov 12 1929 107} [A campaign against Aluminium cooking ware was pursued for many years, as the Society alone stated these caused all manner of ailments and disease from athlete's foot to cancer]

## **1930**

**1930**

"The great climax is at hand. The kings of earth now set themselves against his anointed Stone." {LIT2 327} **1930**

"The false prophets of our day are the financial, political and clerical prognosticators.. They assume to foretell future events; but their dreams or guesses never come true.. In **1914-1918** these same three classes told the whole world that the great world war would end all wars and make the world safe.. their prophecies did not come true. therefore, they are false prophets; and the people should no longer trust them as safe guides.. " {WT May 15 1930 155-6} [They are clearly talking about themselves]

**1930**

"[Dissenting Bible Students are] Evil Servants (slaves) {and identified with the} man of perdition [who would be] destroyed" {WT 1930 275-81} [compare "We would not refuse to treat one as a brother because he did not believe the Society is the Lord's channel.. If others see it in a different way, that is their priviledge. There should be full liberty of conscience." {WT Apr 1 1920 100-1}]

## **1931**

**1931**

" Vaccinations are a violation of the Eternal Covenant God made with Noah.. Quite likely there is some connection between the violation of human blood [vaccines] and the spread of demonism.. sexual immorality.. Vaccination has never saved a human life. It does not prevent smallpox." {GA Feb 4 1931 293-4} ["Vaccinations appear to have caused a marked decrease in diseases" {AWAK Aug 22 1965 20}]

**1931**

"Every one in America should take pleasure in displaying the American Flag" {GA Feb 4 1931 293}

**1931**

"Quite likely there is some connection between the violation of human blood [vaccines] and the spread of demonism.. sexual immorality.. Vaccination has never saved a human life. It does not prevent smallpox." {GA Feb 4 1931 293-4}

**1931**

"God's faithful people on earth emphasized the importance of the dates **1914** and **1918** and **1925**. They had much to say about these dates and what would come to pass, but all they predicted did not come to pass." {VIN1 146}

**1931**

".. a drop or two of kerosene excellent for quickly cleaning sinks and bathtubs; it cuts the dirt immediately and leaves no odor; and when applied to cuts the cuts heal sooner. Try it." {CONS Dec 1 1931 12}

**1931**

"There was a measure of disappointment on the part of Jehovah's faithful ones on earth concerning the years **1914**, **1918** and **1925**, which disappointment lasted for a time. Later the faithful learned that these dates were definitely fixed in the Scriptures; and they also learned to quit fixing dates for the future and predicting what would come to pass on a certain date, but to rely (and they do rely) upon the Word of God as to the events that must come to pass." {VIN1 338-9}

**1931**

[New name of "Jehovah's Witnesses" adopted, to "distinguish" themselves from "dissenters" and "Christians"] {WT 1931 278-9} [How then could any reference to "Christ" have been dropped when the declaration had been made that "We always refuse to be called by any other name than that of our Head [Christ]. Christians continually claiming that there can be no division among those continually led by his Spirit and example as made known through his Word." {WR Mar 1883 458} ?]

**1931**

"Appendicitis: Take one ounce each of elder blossom, peppermint and yarrow and simmer in three pints of water.. take a wineglassful every fifteen minutes.. Do not be afraid of the perspiration caused, or if you vomit. You will be better off with an empty stomach." {GA Dec 19 1934 187} [Also see 1912!]

**1931**

"We do well to bear in mind that among the drugs, serums, vaccines, surgical operations, etc., of the medical profession, there is nothing of value save an occasional surgical procedure. Their so-called 'science' grew out of Egyptian black magic and has not lost its

demonological character.. we shall be in a sad plight when we place the welfare of the race in their hands." {GA Aug 5 1931 727}  
[Pyramids may have had the same source?]

**1931**  
"God's kingdom has begun to operate. His day of vengeance is here and Armageddon is at hand and certain to fall upon Christendom and that within an early date. God's judgment is upon Christendom and must shortly be executed." {VIN1 147}

## 1932

### 1931-1932

"Establishment of the Kingdom in Power" [based on Ezek 40:1, which dates a prophetic message to "the fourteenth year after the city was conquered", and 14 + 1918 = 1932] {TFIM 569} [TFIM later editions were amended to point to 1931, as to get the "fourteenth year" one must add 13]

**1932**  
"To the whole series of messages of truth which he gave and which he continues to give ever since the lighting have been flashing from the temple and upon the record of his word. The expression 'the word', therefore includes every revelation of truth down to and including the book 'Vindication' and whatsoever shall be revealed and published, by the Lord's grace, as long as the remnant is on earth." {WT Apr 1 1932 101} [Flashing on... off... on... off... - keeping on changing its mind. Also, this places the book 'Vindication' on the same level as it does the Bible]

**1932**  
"They had preached that in an early time God would overthrow "Christendom" [in 1925] and then when that date did not materialize the date was moved up to 1932. Again, 1932 came and 'Christendom' was not destroyed, and now it was discovered that "Christendom" would be spared for a while longer for the sake of the Jonadab class, and this made the proud "elective elder" crowd very mad." {WT Feb 15 1938 54}

**1932**  
"These angels are invisible to human eyes and are there to carry out the orders of the Lord. No doubt they first hear the instruction which the Lord issues to his remnant and then these invisible messengers pass such instruction on to the remnant. The facts show that the angels of the Lord with him at his temple have been thus rendering service [see RICH 316 - by transmitting God's messages to the Society] unto the remnant since 1919." {VIN3 250}

**1932**  
"Osteopathic Treatment of Insanity [and of numerous other ailments]" {GA Oct 26 1932 53-4, AWAK May 8 1949 13-5, AWAK Dec 8 1961 20-3} [Osteopathy taught that all disease is caused by vertebrae of the spine pinching nerves, and at the time the Society strongly recommended them supported a "no drugs, no serums, no surgery" stance]

**1932**  
[Abolition of locally-elected, popularist Elders, as their office is "unscriptural".. centrally appointed officers to replace them. Per new view of Rev 7:13-17, "elders" are the "144,000"] {WT Sep 1 1932 259-62} [compare WR 1895 1891 which had set up the now-abolished system. However, the 1932 reversal was re-reversed in WT 1971 695-701, where the pre-1932 system of Elders and Deacons would be restored. Instead of being elected they would be recommended locally (by whom?) and then chosen centrally. Also, a body of elders would preside in each congregation]

**1932**  
"If you spend 15 minutes reading each of Rutherford's books you would get more pleasure than you would reading the Bible for a whole year" {VIN3 383}

**1932**  
"Jews [are] no longer important to God.. Jehovah's Witnesses [are, per a new symbolic meaning given to Romans 11, the only] Israel of God.. during the World War the Jews received recognition of the heathen nations. In 1917 the Balfour Declaration, sponsored by the heathen governments of Satan's organization, came forth, recognized the Jews, and bestowed upon them great favors.. The Jews have received more attention at their hands than they really deserved." {VIN2 257-8} [Directly contradicting the assertion that Jews would be restored to Palestine and of the conversion of 144,000 literal Jews, stated in {WT Jun 1880 108}. And the attacks on Jews by the Society grew stronger during their dealings with Hitler and the Nazis..].

## 1933

**1933**  
"The earlier in the forenoon you take the sun bath, the greater will be the beneficial effect, because you get more of the ultra-violet rays, which are healing." {GA Sep 13 1933 777} [And in excess, cause skin cancer]

**1933**  
"Some claiming to be fully devoted to Jehovah find it difficult to learn to be obedient to organization instructions. This is strong proof that such are not in the temple. .. If you find it difficult to be in harmony with the organization instructions, that is sufficient reason for



a careful self-examination to see what is your standing before the Lord.. angels are delegated by the Lord to convey his instructions to the members of his organization on earth. Just how this is done is not necessary for us to understand." {WT Dec 1 1933 364}

**1933**  
"To feed or teach his people the Lord has used the Watch Tower publications.. No man is given any credit for the wonderful truths which the Lord has revealed to his people through the Watch Tower publications." {WT Dec 1 1933 263}

**1933**  
"This is proof that the interpretation of prophecy does not proceed from man, but that the Lord Jesus.. sends the necessary information to his people by and through his holy angels" {PREP 28}

**1933**  
"Certain duties and kingdom interests have been committed by the Lord to his angels, which include the transmission of information to God's anointed people on the earth for their aid and comfort. Even though we cannot understand how the angels transmit this information, we know that they do it; and the Scriptures and the facts show that it is done." {PREP 36-7}

**1933**  
"Enfeebled constitutions, inherited from fashionable mothers, cannot stand up under tobacco.." {GA Oct 25 1933 57}

## 1934

**1934**  
"All who have taken their stand on the side of Jehovah must abide in his organization under Christ, if they would live. There is no exception to this rule.. The name 'Jehovah's witnesses' applies specifically to God's anointed ones who have been taken out of the world [i.e. are not part of this wicked system of things, etc.] and made witnesses for Jehovah, and these alone bear the new name.. The official organization of Jehovah on earth consists of his anointed remnant, and the Jonadabs who walk with the anointed are to be taught, but not to be leaders." {WT Aug 15 1934 249}

**1934**  
"Vindication of Jehovah's name [is] now more important than God's love to man through Christ." {JEHO 320} **1934**

"The Journal of the A.M.A. is the vilest sheet that passes the United States mail.. Nothing new and useful in therapeutics escapes its unqualified condemnation. Its attacks are generally ad hominem. Its editorial columns are largely devoted to character assassination.. Its editor [a Jew] is of the type of Jew that crucified Jesus Christ." {GA Sep 26 1934 807}

**1934**  
"[Nazi Germany] .. It has been the commercial Jews of the British-American empire that have built up and carried on Big Business as a means of exploiting and oppressing the peoples of many nations.. Instead of being against the principles advocated by the government of Germany, we stand squarely for such principles, and point out that Jehovah God through Christ Jesus will bring about the full realization of these principles.. [The] Bible Students are fighting for the SAME high, ethical goals and ideals that the national German Reich proclaimed regarding the relationship of man to God .. there are no opposing views .. but that, to the contrary, respecting the purely religious and apolitical goals .. these are in complete harmony with .. the National Government of the German Reich.. A careful examination of our books and literature will disclose the fact that the very high ideals held and promulgated by the present national government are set forth in and endorsed and strongly emphasized in our publications and show that Jehovah God will see to it that these high ideals in due time will be attained by all persons who love righteousness." {YEAR 1934 134-7 'Declaration of Facts'} [the ideals and goals held by the **1934** national government of Germany, Hitler and the Nazis, were some 30 years later described in **GKTY** 8-9 as "Shortly after the United States was plunged into World War II, information on this Nazi plan was gleaned from seized Nazi documents.. This plan aimed at a Nazi world order that Hitler, if successful in World War II, would mercilessly enforce upon the world and mankind.. [He] evidently had in mind the Germanic Holy Roman Empire.. At any rate, there was no re-establishment.. as many people of Hitler's religion had hoped."]

## 1935

**1935**  
"Saluting of flags .. singing national anthems .. banned" {HIS1 143-4} [Removing all competing loyalties for Witnesses, though this did not stop hymns being sung at German Assembly Halls to the tune of 'Deutschland Uber Alles'. Also, the word "flag" was edited out of the Society's Bible as far as possible. What a change from {WT Jan 6 1918 174}!]

**1935**  
"Is The Watchtower a means or channel employed by God to transmit information to his people?.. No man can properly interpret prophecy, and the Lord sends his angels to transmit correct information to his people" {WT Feb 15 1935 52}

**1935**  
"How many people know, I wonder, of the curative properties of olive oil. The word 'cure' is a strong term.. I personally know of more than one being relieved of liver trouble, and even cured of gall stones, by the use of olive oil.. A friend who for years has suffered pain in the region of the appendix was entirely relieved by the oil treatments." {GA Jul 5 1935 632}

## 1935

[Close of "high calling" of the 144,000 .. from **1935** WTBTS have taught that only about 8,000 of the 144,000 are still alive in the **1990s**, that the "Great Company/Crowd" in Rev 7 are not considered anointed Christians, are not "born again" do not partake in communion, do not have Christ as mediator, and can at most expect eternal life on Earth] {WT Jun 15 **1992** 23, **HIS2** 166}

## 1935

"[The time period from **1914** until Armageddon is the] 'great tribulation.'" {WT Aug 15 **1935** 246-51}

## 1935

"Aspirin - The Menace of Heart Disease [aspirin causes heart disease and other maladies]" {GA Feb 27 **1935** 343-4, GA Sep 23 **1936** 822, **CONS** Oct 5 **1938** 7}

## 1935

".. the scriptural evidence and the physical facts strongly indicate that such witness work is now almost done; and when it is done the universal war will begin. Universal war is absolutely certain to come and that soon, and no power can stop it.. during the few remaining months until the breaking of that universal cataclysm the powers that rule the nations of the earth will continue to make treaties and tell the people that by such means they will keep that world peace and bring about prosperity." {UNWN 3/26-7}

## 1936

### 1936

[All adults and older children who fail to accept the message of the Jehovah's Witnesses after **1918**, and all babies and small children who might die at Armageddon because of their parents' rejection, will have no hope of resurrection] {CONS May 6 **1936** 508, WT **1938** 133/313-4/326-7/376, WT **1939** 170}

### 1936

"[a lie is] 'a false statement by one to another one who is entitled to hear and to know the truth, and which false statement tends to work injury to the other'" {Riches 177}

### 1936

"Jehovah has made the necessary arrangements within his organization to instruct his people, and all recognize that for some years The Watchtower has been the means of communicating information to God's people. That does not mean that those who prepare the manuscript for The Watchtower are inspired, but rather it means that the Lord through his angels sees to it that the information is given to his people in due time, and he brings to pass the events in fulfillment of his prophecy and then invites those devoted to him to see the same." {RICH 316}

### 1936

"The Lord has graciously provided for the publication of his message in the form of books, that the people may be informed of the truth.. those books do not contain the opinion of any man." {RICH 384-5} [And who Sells these books? The WTBTS - till the tax man made it advantageous for them to ask for donations instead!]

### 1936

"Do not use X-Rays .. they are destructive and sure to harm the grandchildren of those exposed to them." GA Sep 23 **1936** 828}

## 1937

### 1937

"Before one can enter this great multitude class he must.. connect himself with God's organization .." {ARMA 57} **1937** The Watchtower is issued twice each month and brings to its readers the current report which the Lord, in the exercise of his loving-kindness, manifests in the unfolding of his prophecies to those who are devoted to him.. the Watchtower being the means the Lord is pleased to use to transmit his message of truth to the people, it is a real comfort to the remnant and the other sheep of the Lord to have this given to them regularly twice each month." {YEAR **1937** 82}

### 1937

"At Los Angeles a youth of 20 years was caught in the act of choking a woman of 75. Arrested, and suspected of three murders, he claims the urge to kill came as a result of serum inoculations.." {CONS Dec 1 **1937** 12}

## 1938

### 1938

".. mark the words of Jesus, which definitely seem to discourage the bearing of children immediately before or during Armageddon.. It would therefore appear that there is no reasonable or scriptural injunction to bring children into the world immediately before Armageddon, where we now are." {WT Nov 1 **1938** 324}

### 1938

"They must find protection in God's organization, which shows that they must be immersed, baptized or hidden in that organization." {FATF 41}

**1938**  
"Would it be scripturally proper for them to marry and begin to rear children? No, is the answer, which is supported by the scriptures.. I will be far better to be unhampered and without burdens, that they may do the Lord's will now, as the Lord commands, and also be without hindrance during Armageddon.. Those .. who now contemplate marriage, it would seem, would do better if they wait a few years, until the fiery storm of Armageddon is gone." {FATF 46-50}

**1938**  
"The resolutions adopted by conventions of God's anointed people, booklets, magazines, and books published by them, contain the message of God's truth and are from the Almighty God, Jehovah, and provided by him through Christ Jesus and his underofficers .. It is his truth and not man's .." {WT May 1 1938 143} [so, The Watchtower is the Word of God?]

## 1939

**1939**  
"It should be expected that the Lord would have a means of communicating to his people on the earth, and he has clearly shown that the magazine called The Watchtower is used for that purpose." {YEAR 1939 85}

**1939**  
"The abundance of Scriptural evidence, together with the physical facts that have come to pass showing the fulfillment of prophecy, conclusively proves that the time for the battle of the great day of God Almighty is very near and that in that battle all of God's enemies shall be destroyed and the earth cleared of wickedness." {SALV 310}

**1939**  
"[Vaccination is a] cruel hoax [by] Satan" {CONS May 31 1939 3} [Food poisoning being stated to be caused by aluminum cookware]

**1939**  
"Likewise today, all the nations and peoples of earth are face to face with the greatest emergency. They are being warned as God commands, that the disaster of Armageddon is just ahead." {SALV 361}

## 1940

**1940**  
"The year 1940 is certain to be the most important year yet because Armageddon is very near. It behooves all who love righteousness to put forth every effort to advertise The Theocracy while the privileges are still open." {INF Apr 1940 1}

**1940**  
"The Kingdom is here, the King is enthroned. Armageddon is just ahead. The glorious reign of Christ that shall bring blessings to the world will immediately follow. Therefore the great climax has been reached. Tribulation has fallen upon those who stand by the Lord." {MESS Sep 1 1940 6}

**1940**  
"The prophecies of Almighty God, the fulfillment of which now clearly appears from the physical facts, show that the end of religion has come and with its end the complete downfall of Satan's entire organization." {RELI 336} 1940

"The witness work for The Theocracy appears to be about done in most of the countries of 'Christendom'.. Now the totalitarian rule has suppressed the Theocratic message, and it should be expected that when they quit fighting amongst themselves all the totalitarian rulers will turn their attention to the complete suppression of everything pertaining to the Theocratic Government. What, then, does it mean that the Theocratic Government is now suppressed in many nations? It means that the hour is rapidly approaching when the 'sign' of Armageddon will be clearly revealed and all who are on the side of Jehovah will see and appreciate it .. [we are] anxiously and watchfully waiting for the appearance of the sign for the battle (Armageddon) to begin." {WT Sep 1 1940 265}

**1940**  
"Always have in mind that there is but one place of safety, and that is in or under.. the head of Jehovah's capital organization, which organization furnishes protection to those who flee to the Lord at this time." {WT Feb 15 1940 51}

**1940**  
"We resolve that we shall obey all instruction received from the Watch Tower, knowing that such proceed from the higher powers, Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. We resolve to be completely obedient to the Society as the visible part of the Great Theocracy." {WT Feb 1 1940 47}

**1940**  
"Religion is the worship and service of the Devil and his associate demons .. Religion is the chief means that puts fear into the minds of the people and leads them into the Devil's snare.. Truly then, as stated, 'religion is a snare and a racket,' employed to collect money

from them under false representations." {WT Jan 15 1940 29} [And taking money in exchange for 'Millions Now Living Shall Never Die' is?]

## 1940

"LAWYER: Who subsequently became the Editor of the magazine, the main editor of the 'Watch Tower' magazine? F.FRANZ: In 1931, October 15th, as I recall, the 'Watch Tower' discontinued publishing the names of any editorial committee on the second page. THE COURT: He asked you who became the editor. F.FRANZ: And it said.. THE COURT: Who became the editor? LAWYER: Who became the editor when this was discontinued? F.FRANZ: Jehovah God." {NEW YORK KING'S COUNTY CLERKS'S COURT RECORD 1940 vol II 795} [The testimony in the 1943 lawsuit is similar. F.Franz later became the President of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society. So Jehovah God is the editor of the Watchtower since 1931, since which date the magazine cannot contain errors]

## 1941

### 1941

"Armageddon is surely near, and during that time the Lord will clean off the earth everything that offends and is disagreeable.. From now on we shall have our heart devotion fixed on The Theocracy, knowing that soon we shall journey forever together in the earth. Our hope is that within a few years our marriage may be consummated and, by the Lord's grace, we shall have sweet children that will be an honor to the Lord. We can well defer our marriage until lasting peace comes to the earth." {CHIL 366}

### 1941

"John, dear, don't you think we should have The Watchtower and study it regularly, that we might be informed of the unfolding of Jehovah's prophecies?" {CHIL 214}

### 1941

"Should men and women, both of whom are Jonadabs or 'other sheep' of the Lord, now marry before Armageddon and bring forth children? They may chose to do so, but the admonition or advice of the scriptures appears to be against it.. The prophetic picture seems to set forth the correct rule, to wit: The three sons of Noah and their wives were in the ark and were saved from the flood. They did not have any children, however, until after the flood. They began to have children two years after the flood. (Genesis 11:10,11) No children were taken into the ark and none were born in the ark, and hence none were brought out of the ark. Only eight persons went in and eight came out of the ark. (1 Peter 3:20; Genesis 8:18) That would appear to indicate that it would be proper that those who will form the 'great multitude' should wait until after Armageddon to bring children into the world." {CHIL 312-3} [Does it also mean that the non-Jonadabs among Witnesses can multiply freely?]

### 1941

"I shall shun politics, religion and commerce, and I shall avoid cities and the enticements thereof." {CHIL 367} 1941

"Receiving the gift, [Rutherford's book, Children] the marching children clasped it to them, not a toy or plaything for idle pleasure, but the Lord's provided instrument for most effective work in the remaining months before Armageddon." {WT Sep 15 1941 288}

## 1942

### 1942

"Now, with Armageddon immediately before us, it is a matter of life or destruction. Those who would be of the Lords other sheep that shall compose the great multitude of Armageddon survivors and live joyfully on earth forever must find the answer to a very personal question, and very important." {WT Apr 1 1942 139}

### 1942

"The record as herewith published would, on the face of it, show that the Theocratic witness work on earth is about done." {YEAR 1942 29}

### 1942

"The New World Is At The Doors .. The time is short. Those who do not inform themselves and who do not now choose the new world which Higher Powers shall establish will never live to enter into blessings and glories." {TNWD 10} [All Society literature now published anonymously, after embarrassing disclosures in Court over the credentials, capabilities, competence and identity of some editors/authors]

### 1942

"The Watchtower does not consist of men's opinions" {WT Jan 1 1942 5}

### 1942

"The Lord Jesus has now come to the temple for judgment, and the remnant of the members of 'his body' yet on earth he has gathered into the temple condition of perfect unity with himself (Malachi 3:1-3), and hence those faithful men of old may be expected back from the dead any day now. The Scriptures give good reason to believe that it shall be shortly before Armageddon breaks. In this

expectation the house at San Diego, California, which house has been much publicized with malicious intent by the religious enemy, was built, in **1930**, and named 'Beth Sarim,' meaning 'House of Princes.' It is now held in trust for the occupancy of those princes on their return. The most recent facts show that the religionists of this doomed world are gnashing their teeth because of the testimony which that 'House of Princes' hears to the new world. To those religionists and their allies the return of those faithful men of old to rule with judgment over the people shall not bring any pleasure. But to the people whom the angels sang about, 'men of good will,' it shall be an occasion for unbounded jubilation, and they shall rally to the side of those princely representatives of the kingdom of heaven." {TNWD 104-5}

**1942**  
"Before the Lord's Messenger came to the temple and began interpreting God's will and teaching, the Job class had been darkening counsel by words without knowledge, it not then being due time for the disclosure of such knowledge. Some of the consecrated ones thought they must be taken home to heaven at a time certain in order to help God run the universe." {TNWD 2,000,000 ed 308}

**1942**  
"Christ Jesus has caused the understanding of the prophetic dramas and pictures to be clear and set forth in the Watchtower publications." {WT Dec 15 **1942** 376}

**1942**  
"The faithful acts of the men who were known as fathers in Israel are recounted in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews. Genesis 12:1-3; 28:13, 14; Acts 7:2-5 .. These men will be the visible representatives of the Theocracy, which is the government created and built up by the almighty God as his capital organization and which shall rule the world. Further proof that these princes will shortly take office upon earth as perfect men is found in the prophecy of Daniel. But go thou thy way till the end be; for thou shalt rest and stand in thy lot at the end of the days. (Daniel 12:13) Daniel's lot is that of these princes. Proof is now submitted that we are now living at the end of the days, and we may expect to see Daniel and the other mentioned princes any day now!" {CONS Apr 27 **1942** 13}

## **1943**

**1943**  
"LAWYER: At any rate, Jehovah God is now the editor of the paper, is that right? F.FRANZ: He is today the editor of the paper. LAWYER: How long has he been editor of the paper? F.FRANZ: Since its inception he has been guiding it. LAWYER: Even before **1931**? F.FRANZ: Yes, sir. .. LAWYER: But you don't make any mention in the fore part of your Watch Tower that 'We are not infallible and subject to correction and may make mistakes'? N.H.KNORR: We have never claimed infallibility. LAWYER: But you don't make any such statement, that you are subject to correction, in your Watch Tower papers do you? N.H.KNORR: Not that I recall. LAWYER: In fact, it is set forth directly as God's Word, isn't it? N.H.KNORR: Yes, as His Word. LAWYER: Without any qualification whatsoever? N.H.KNORR: That is right." {Action for Libel: Olin R. Moyle v. F.W.Franz, et al, May 10 - May 27 **1943**, New York Supreme Court, Appellate Division, sections 2596-7, 4420-1} [The testimony in the **1940** lawsuit is similar. N.H.Knorr was, and F.Franz later became, the President of the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society. So Jehovah God is the editor of the Watchtower since **1931**, since which date the magazine cannot contain errors]

**1943**  
"Man on earth can no more get rid of these demonic 'heavens' (the organization of wicked spirits) than man can by airplane or rockets or other means get up above the air envelope which is about our earthly globe and in which man breathes." {TMYF 285}

**1943**  
"The final war will come as a most sudden and complete surprise .. Nevertheless, the appearing of the 'desolating abomination in the holy place' is an unerring proof that the unknown day and hour of the beginning of the final war is dangerously near." {TMYF 341}

**1943**  
"This is not giving any credit to the magazine's [The Watchtower's] publishers, but is due to the great Author of the Bible with its truths and prophecies, and who now interprets its prophecies. He it is that makes possible the material that is published in the columns of this magazine .." {WT Apr 15 **1943** 127}

**1943**  
"Christ Jesus, the court's official mouthpiece of interpretation, reserves to himself that office as Head of Jehovah's 'faithful and wise servant' class. He merely uses the 'servant' class to publish the interpretation after the Supreme Court by Christ Jesus reveals it. How does the Lord God make known the interpretation? By causing the facts to come to pass visibly which are in fulfillment of the prophecy.." {WT Jul 1 **1943** 203}

## **1944**

**1944**  
"[The establishment of the United Nations was] one of the most positive evidences that 'the kingdom of heaven is at hand' and that the end of the world arrangement is now near. Jesus foretold the setting up of that anti-Christ organization." {KIAH 342} [strange then is "We cannot but admire the high principles embodied in the proposed League of Nations, formulated undoubtedly by those who have



no knowledge of the great plan of God. This fact makes all the more wonderful the ideals which they express.. the league shall not be established merely for the purpose of promoting peace by threat or coercion; but that its purpose, when put into operation, will be to make of all nations of earth one great family, working together for the common benefit in all the avenues of national life. Truly this is idealistic, and approximates in a small way that which God has foretold that he will bring about after this great time of trouble." {WT Feb 15 1919 51}}

## 1945

1945

"The Meek Shall Inherit the Earth' .. When the "day of vengeance of our God" will have passed and the "meek of the earth" will come forth from their place of hiding from Armageddon's storm, they will look for the place once occupied by the wicked bosses and oppressors of men. But it shall not be! There will be a free New World, free from unrighteous men and from the demons under Satan. The cleansed earth will be open for occupancy by the meek [all those big houses]; and they will appreciate the literal fulfillment of the divine promise: 'Wait on the LORD [Jehovah], and keep his way, and he shall exalt thee to inherit the land: when the wicked are cut off, thou shalt see it.' (Psalm 37: 10, 34) .. the meek will wait upon the King and his visible princes in the earth to locate them and assign them their portion in the land.. They will gladly accept the grant of land that the King graciously makes to them. When Jehovah God in ancient days settled the nation of Israel in the Promised Land of Palestine, he aided them by his miraculous power to dispossess the wrongful, wicked occupiers thereof, the religious demon worshipping heathen. He thrust out the Canaanites .. in their place he located the Israelites who kept covenant with him. The religious worshipers or false gods were not let possess the land, but those who worshiped the true and living God Jehovah were planted in the land." {MEEK 24-7} [do they "stake out" your house when they come witnessing?] 1945

"Blood transfusions [are] pagan [and] God-dishonoring" {WT Jul 1 1945 198-201} [But WR 1909 4374 had stated "Then they briefly summed up, not as Law .. Abstain.. (2) and from blood;" - so the prohibition on blood in Acts 15 was not a law for Christians]

## 1946

1946

"the disaster of Armageddon, greater than that which befell Sodom and Gomorrah, is at the door." {LGBT 194}

## 1949

1949

"Spare Parts for Your Body'.. Organ transplants [are] wonders of modern surgery" {CONS Dec 22 1949} [see 1967, when that which was recommended was reclassified as "cannibalism" and prohibited!]

## 1950

1950

"By keeping the people ignorant they led them into having Jesus killed on a torture stake at Calvary. Thirty-seven years later this willfully cultivated ignorance led to its fatal consequences, the destruction of the city of Jerusalem with an enormous loss of human lives, just as Jesus had predicted, and the breaking up of the Jewish nation till this day. And now in this 'time of the end' the revived nation of Israel with capital at the modern city of Jerusalem chooses to go on in the steps of its forefathers .." {WT Sep 1 1950 277, WT Nov 1 1950 407} [The destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A.D. happened 37 years after Jesus' death, and 1914 + 37 = 1951]

1950

"It is good to remember there is only one table of the Lord. Ample supply of excellent food is prepared and served there, and, if you know such to be the case, then why go nibbling at the table of those who are opposed to this wise steward of the Master's provisions? You might get spiritual poison, for their food has not been Theocratically tested. Why be concerned with the meager dishes of those outside of God's faithful household when there is so much to digest in the Lord's house? Those who are without are not cooperating with the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society and therefore cannot help you, for they do not have the Lord's blessing, and you will be dishonoring God the Provider." {WT Aug 1 1950 231}

## 1951

1951

"The length of time is indicated by him when he said, 'Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' (Matt. 24:34) The actual meaning of these words is, beyond question, that which takes a 'generation' in the ordinary sense, as at Mark 8:12 and Acts 13:36, or for those who are living at the given period." {WT Jul 1 1951 404}

1951

"There are those who may think it strange that these 2500-year-old prophecies {Daniel 12:7-12} are now receiving fulfillment in a few short years. But we must realize that they must come to pass sometime, and why not now?" {WT Jul 15 1951 433-4}

**1951**

"Counting from the end of the 'appointed times of the nations' in 1914, we are 37 years into the 'time of the end' of this world. (Luke 21:24, Daniel 12:4) During these crucial years Jehovah's witnesses have sought shelter and strength in him, and they can confess for themselves that he is a "well-proved help in trouble". If it were not for this, they would not be here today nor increasing in numbers. But we are entering the most serious and trialsome years of this "time of the end". The final conflict of Armageddon draws near." {WT Feb/Mar 3 1951 179}

**1951**

"Whereas the 'appointed times of the nations' ended in 1914, it is now 37 years that we have been in the 'time of the end' of Satan's world." {WT Apr 1 1951 214} [and the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 A.D. happened 37 years after Jesus' death, as claimed in WT Sep 1 1950]

**1951**

[vigorous promotion of Zone Therapy, including the placing of rubber bands on certain toes in certain positions, to alleviate pain, ailments and even diseases elsewhere in the body, was pursued over ten years] {AWAK Sep 22 1951 27-8}

**1951**

"But if each of us were left to himself just because he has a copy of the Bible and were to direct his movements independently as he thought he understood the Word, what? It is likely, or possible, that there would be a great deal of confusion or working in competition among us. Hence, besides individually possessing God's Word, we need a theocratic organization. Yes, besides having God's spirit of illumination, a Christian needs Jehovah's theocratic organization in order to understand the Bible." {WT Jun 15 1951 375} [Competition might promote understanding - what is wrong with that?]

## **1952**

1952

"The Holy Spirit [is] God's impersonal active force" {WT Jun 1 1952 24} [And the name of that impersonal force would not happen to be WTBTs, now?]

**1952**

"Know that all living at Armageddon will be baptized, either with fire for destruction with the wicked or with salvation for life with the theocratic organization." {WT Jun 1 1952 350}

**1952**

"We should meekly go along with the Lord's theocratic organization and wait for further clarification, rather than balk at the first mention of a thought unpalatable to us and proceed to quibble and mouth our criticisms and opinions as though they were worth more than the slave's provision of spiritual food. Theocratic ones will appreciate the Lord's visible organization and not be so foolish as to pit against Jehovah's channel their own human reasoning and sentiment and personal feelings." {WT Feb 1 1952 80}

**1952**

"In the case of where a father or mother or son or daughter is disfellowshipped, how should such person be treated by members of the family in their family relationship? .. We are not living today among theocratic nations where such members of our fleshly family relationship could be exterminated for apostasy from God and his theocratic organization, as was possible and was ordered in the nation of Israel in the wilderness of Sinai and in the land of Palestine. 'Thou shalt surely kill him; thy hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. And thou shalt stone him to death with stones, because he hath sought to draw thee away from Jehovah thy God, .. And all Israel shall hear, and fear, and shall do no more any such wickedness as this is in the midst of thee.'-Deut. 13:6-11, AS. Being limited by the laws of the worldly nation in which we live.. we can take action against apostates only to a certain extent.. Of course, if the children are of age, then there can be a departing and breaking of family ties in a physical way, because the spiritual ties have already snapped.. The purpose of observing the disfellowship order is to .. safeguard your own salvation to life in the new world in vindication of God (2 Thessalonians 3:14, 15; Titus 2:8) .. do not defeat the purpose of the congregation's disfellowship order by eating spiritual or religious food with such one or receiving such one favorably in a religious way and bidding him farewell with a wish for his prosperity in his apostate course." {WT Nov 15 1952} **1952** "Really, our colored brothers have a great cause for rejoicing. Their race is meek and teachable, and from it comes a high percentage of the theocratic increase." {WT Feb 1 1952 95}

## **1953**

1952-3

"We must show understanding, appreciating our relationship to the visible theocratic organization, remembering the fate of those like Korah, Achan and others, who forgot the theocratic order. Jehovah God deals with his people as a servant class. He does not feed each one individually nor does he appoint an individual over them. No individual student of God's Word reveals God's will or interprets His Word. God interprets and teaches through Christ the Chief Servant, who in turn uses the discreet 'slave' class as the visible channel, the visible theocratic organization. David approached God through the priestly organization represented by Abiathar, who had the

ephod; and a servant today must likewise look to God's visible organization for spiritual food that is timely and for directions in Kingdom service." {**YEAR 1953** Nov 9}

**1953**  
"After almost six thousand years of human sorrow, suffering and death, at last permanent relief is near at hand and will be realized within this generation." {**NHNE** 7}

**1953**  
"What does all this mean? Jesus' words, at the conclusion of telling his disciples of all these things, give us the answer. He says: 'Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' (Matt. 24:34, NW) He meant what he said. The generation that began to see these things in **1914** will witness the final accumulated judgments of Jehovah God, though some individuals who are part of this generation may die before the end of this world's system of things takes place." {**WT** Feb 1 **1953** 124}

**1953**  
"These events began to occur on earth in the year **1914**, and continue to assert themselves to the present day. Not just one or two of these momentous happenings have come upon this generation, but all of them. **NO FALSE ALARM THIS!**" {**WT** Nov 1 **1953** 648}

**1953**  
"It is all right for the faithful members of the family to ride with the disfellowshipped one in a car bound for the Kingdom Hall, but upon arrival the faithful ones should not sit with or associate with the disfellowshipped one at the hall, but rejoin him only when departing for home." {**WT** Apr 1 1953 223}

**1953**  
"No question about it, if we would gain life, we must study the Bible. But does that in itself mean we need The Watchtower? Cannot we individually go to the Bible and gain all the knowledge and understanding necessary? Can we? At Acts, chapter 8, we read of an official of Queen Candace, an Ethiopian eunuch, who went directly to his Bible, but when he was asked by the disciple Philip, 'Do you really know what you are reading aloud?' what was his answer? 'Really how could I ever do so, unless someone guided me?' He realized his need of help. And Philip, having been guided by others in the first place, was equipped to give this Ethiopian eunuch the guidance he needed." {**WT** Oct 15 **1953** 621} [Upon this little anecdote the Governing Body of WTBTs has built a Castle of Eunuchdom, treating all JWs as eunuchs requiring guidance]

**1953**  
"Vaccinations are no longer considered feeding on blood and no longer considered related to sex relations." {**MSAT** 48}

## **1954**

**1954**  
"In view of its unbreakable connection with the Christian theocratic organization, the Bible is organization-minded and it cannot be fully understood without our having the theocratic organization in mind.. All the sheep of God's flock must be organization-minded, like the Bible." {**WT** Sep 1 **1954** 529} [compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {**WR** Oct **1883** 536}]

## **1955**

**1955**  
"If we have love for Jehovah and for the organization of his people we shall not be suspicious, but shall, as the Bible says, 'believe all things,' all the things that The Watchtower brings out.." {**QTBM** 156}

**1955**  
"In the light of the fulfillment of Bible prophecy it is becoming clear that the war of Armageddon is nearing its breaking-out point." {**YMSA** 331}

**1955**  
"Jehovah's Witnesses are an organization of truth. We should want to speak the truth and be absolutely accurate in every detail at all times." {**QTBM**} [!]

## **1956**

**1956**  
"Who controls the organization, who directs it? Who is head? A Man? A group of men? A Clergy class? A pope? A hierarchy? Council? No, none of these. How is this possible? In any organization is it not necessary that there be a directing head or policy-making part that controls or guides the organization? Yes!.. Is the living God, Jehovah, the theocratic Christian organization? Yes!.. because of the fact the heaven-enthroned Christ Jesus is Jehovah's Executive Officer carrying on his work in the earth and because of the further fact that the spirit of God by Christ Jesus." {**WT** Nov 1 **1956** 666} [With 'the Number of the Beast' as page]

**1956**

"Getting and Giving the Thoughts of God .. We may not be overreached by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his designs. We should know the clever tricks of his propagandists.. But to be pushed around.. is to show a pathetic immaturity, an inability to think for ourselves .. We should gain accurate knowledge for ourselves, 'in order that we should no longer be babes, tossed about as by waves and carried hither and thither by every wind of teaching by means of the trickery of men, by means of craftiness in contriving error.' -2 Cor. 2:11; Eph. 4:14, NW. Why be tricked by crafty men into adopting their thoughts, especially when those men have themselves been snared by Satan and pumped full of his poisonous subtleties and like ventriloquists' dummies chatter them out under his unseen direction? Why allow yourself to be brainwashed by dupes oblivious to their own mental bondage? The brains of millions need a washing.." {WT Jun 15 1956 360} [So thinking for ourselves is now good - but in {WT Jan 15 1983 27} and other places it became very dangerous. And talk about brain-washing!]

**1956**

"This cannot be very far off, for Jesus said that the generation that saw 1914 'will by no means pass away until all these things occur.'- Matt. 24:34, NW." {WT Oct 15 1956 616} [Did Jesus mention 1914?] 1956 "Certain blood fractions, particularly albumin, also come under the Scriptural ban." {AWAK Sep 8 1956 20} [The ban dating from 1945, though albumin has many other sources. The prohibition against blood fractions was then reversed, allowing it in WT Sep 15 1958 575. Then banned again in WT Sep 15 1961 557. Then allowed again in WT Nov 1 1961 66970. Then banned yet again with "Any fraction of blood considered as a nutrient not to be used in medical treatment." in WT Feb 15 1963 123-4. And partially reversed in AWAK Aug 22 1965 18. But AWAK Feb 22 1975 30 may have reimposed it. Then grudgingly allowed for haemophiliacs in WT Jun 15 1978 20 and expanded on in BSYL 27. Finally, and many deaths later, came in 1982 "Witness religious understanding does not absolutely prohibit the use of components such as albumin, immune globulins, and hemophiliac preparations; each Witness must decide individually if he can accept these." {AWAK Jun 22 1982 25}? Also read WT Jun 1 1990 30, WT Aug 15 1990 29, WT Oct 1 1994 31, AWAK Nov 8 1996 30 for concessions and further rules]

**1956**

"The enemies [here identified as those who resist or persecute Jehovah's Witnesses] did not deserve to learn the truth to the hurt or endangerment of Jehovah's servants. In wartime it is proper to misdirect the wolfish enemy. .. It is proper to cover over our arrangements for the work that God commands us to do. If the wolfish foes draw wrong conclusions from our maneuvers to outwit them, no harm has been done to them by the harmless sheep, innocent in their motives as doves." {WT Feb 1 1956 80/86} {Lying is acceptable - see next quotation]

**1957**

**1957**

"Trust Your Proved, Faithful Brothers.. Showing respect for Jehovah's organization really resolves itself down to our attitude toward God's visible channel and the trust that we place in our proved, faithful brothers. If we have become thoroughly convinced that this is Jehovah's organization, that he is guiding and directing his people, then we shall not be unsettled by anything that happens. If something comes up that we do not understand we will wait patiently until it is made thoroughly clear to us. If we feel sure something is wrong we will 'keep the commandment' of our Father and take whatever theocratic steps are open to us and then wait on Jehovah. We will not 'forsake our mother's teaching' by immediately beginning to criticize and find fault. We will realize that Jehovah knows what is going on in his organization, and if he is willing to permit it, who are we to insist it should be different? If we really have faith, we will know that if it is wrong he will straighten it out eventually, and we are far safer inside his organization even with these minor difficulties than we would be on the outside where only chaos and destruction await us.. [We must] show our respect for Jehovah's organization, for she is our mother and the beloved wife of our heavenly Father, Jehovah God.. A Witness of Jehovah was going from house to house in Eastern Germany when she met a violent opposer. Knowing at once what to expect she changed her red blouse for a green one in the very next hallway. No sooner had she appeared on the street than a Communist officer asked her if she had seen a woman with a red blouse. No, she replied, and went on her way. Did she tell a lie? No, she did not. She was not a liar. Rather, she was using theocratic war strategy, hiding the truth by action and word for the sake of the ministry." {WT May 1 1957 284-5} [Do not criticize the Organization, and Lying is commendable, as for 1956, 1960, 1988, 1993]

**1957**

"'Appreciating Basic Christian Publications' Their zeal for knowledge may even prompt them to dig back into things that were published long before they came into the truth, expanding and deepening their understanding, and ever growing in Christian maturity.. Do you dig out older publications to expand and deepen your knowledge on subjects about which questions arise? Have you really studied these earlier publications?.. How is your background of knowledge?.. Never think: "Oh, I know most of that." For you will find, indeed, that you do not and that you will be strengthened by your additional study.. once you have completed your study of them you can then look to even older publications.. Only by studying earlier publications and digging back through previous issues of The Watchtower kept in the library at your local Kingdom Hall. There is much in the way of spiritual riches and aids toward mature knowledge in these earlier publications, and their study is most certainly worth your time." {WT May 5 1957 313-5} [I commend you to study those earlier publications - but not only the 'selection' made available by the Society. Plenty of information is available in this document]

**1957**

"The world is full of Bibles, which Book contains the commandments of God. Why, then, do the people not know which way to go? Because they do not also have the teaching or law of the mother, which is light. Jehovah God has provided his holy written Word for all mankind and it contains all the information that is needed for men in taking a course leading to life. But God has not arranged for that Word to speak independently or to shine forth life-giving truths by itself. His Word says: 'Light is sown for the righteous.' (Ps. 97:11) It is through his organization that God provides this light that the proverb says is the teaching or law of the mother. If we are to walk in the light of truth we must recognize not only Jehovah God as our Father but his organization as our mother." {WT May 1 1957 274} [Independent Bible reading is dangerous.. to the Society]

**1957**

"It is on its deathbed and the prophecies of God's Word foretell its end within the generation of men that has been living since **1914**. (Matt. 24:33, 34)" {WT Sep 1 1957 568}

**1957**

"Why do Jehovah's witnesses say that Christ 'returned' in the year **1914** and then began to rule as King? Because they have faith that it is so. Why do they teach that the universal war called Armageddon will take place within this present generation and will utterly wipe out this world's present systems of religion, commercialism and politics, and that millions of people will survive that global catastrophe and live on forever on earth under ideal conditions? It is because they have faith that it will be so." {WT Jan 15 1957 73}

**1957**

"Jehovah has established a very definite channel of communication through which he deals with his people.. It is vital that we appreciate this fact and respond to the directions of the 'slave' as we would to the voice of God." {WT Jun 15 1957 370} [This means, follow the Society as you would follow God] **1957** "Question: What is 'this generation (genea)'?(Mt. 24:34; Mr. 13:30; Luke 21:32) TDNT (many Commentaries) say: genea' 'mostly denotes the sense of contemporaries.' Volume. 1, p. 663 Most all say genea' differs from genos. genos means offspring, people, race. See TDNT Volume. 1 p. 685 (genos at 1 Pet. 2:9) Answer may be tied to question on Mt. 24:33. What is meant by: 'When you see all these things'? Lange's Commentary (vol. 8) suggests that 'these things' do not refer to C.E. 70, nor the parousia **1914** but to vss. 29, 30 the celestial phenomena that He now see began with the space age **1957** onward. In that case it would then be the contemporary generation of mankind living since **1957**. Three Sections Lange's Commentary divides Matthew 24th chapter into 'three cycles.' His 1st cycle - Matt. 24:1-14 2nd cycle - Matt. 24:15-28 3rd cycle - Matt. 24:29-44 (synteleia or conclusion) (See Volume. 8 pp 421, 424 and 427) Based on Matt. 24:3 question in three parts. The Watchtower and God's kingdom of a Thousand Years (ka) Have now also divided Matthew 24 into three parts so to speak (1) Matt. 24:3-22 Has parallel fulfillments in 1st century and today since **1914**. (See w 75 p. 273, ka p. 205) (2) Matt. 24:23-28 Period into Christ's parousia of **1914**. (See w 75 p. 275) (3) Matt. 24:29-44 'Celestial Phenomina' have literal application since the space age began in **1957** and onward to include Christ's erkhomenon (coming as the executioner at the beginning of the 'great tribulation.')(See w 75 p 276 par. 18; ka pp 323 to 328) 'All these things' would have to throw back in the context to the nearest items listed in the composite sign, namely, the celestial phenomina of verses 29 and 30. \* If this is true: to Then 'this generation' would refer/contemporary mankind living as knowledgeable ones from **1957** onward. \* Confirmed in thought by C. T. Russell in Berean Commentary, p. 217: 'Genea, people living contemporaneously which witness the signs just mentioned.' Volume. 4 p. 604." {Unanimous Report of Chairman's Committee to members of the Governing Body of the Watchtower Bible & Tract Society Mar 3 1980} [While not a published document, this amazing transcript (disclosed in Raymond Franz: Crisis of Conscience 218-20) shows the Society was seriously considering shifting the start date for 'this generation' who would witness Armageddon from those who were following the events of **1914** to those who were following the events of **1957**, as that was when the first Russian Sputnik was launched into earth's outer space. "Evidently the Chairman's Committee felt that that event could be accepted as marking the start of the fulfillment of these words of Jesus: '.. the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven will be shaken.' (Matt 24:29)]

## **1958**

**1958**

"Sometime between April 16 and 23, 1957, Armageddon will sweep the world! Millions of persons will perish in its flames and the land will be scorched.' So prophesied a certain California pastor, Mihran Ask, in January 1957. Such false prophets tend to put the subject of Armageddon in disrepute." {WT Oct 15 1958 613}

**1958**

"The faithful and discreet slave' [refers to the] 'Remnant of Spiritual Israelites' [i.e. the anointed remnant on earth of the 144,000 'heavenly class'] {PLPR 193} [{WT Dec 1 1916 through to WT Mar 1 1923 68} stated 'The faithful and wise servant' - an exactly analogous term, used interchangeably - was C.T.Russell]

## **1959**

**1959**

"Down with the Old-Up with the New! .. but, Who will be Jehovah's prophet to the nations, to speak to them everything that He should command? Who will be the modern Jeremiah?.. So who will prophesy with his message in this time of the end of the nations of this world? .. How was the question answered? .. Back there, about forty years ago, that was the question. Today we may ask, How was the question answered? There are facts to show. We should not appeal to religious pride or boasting or self-made claims. We



should appeal to the facts. Let facts speak for themselves.. The fact that decides the answer to the question is, not, Do all the clergy of Roman Catholicism and of Protestantism agree that Jehovah's witnesses have been and are God's prophet to the nations? But, Who discerned the divine will for Christians in this time of the world's end and offered themselves to do it? Who have undertaken God's foreordained work for this day of judgment of the nations? Who have answered the call to the work and have done it down till this year **1958**? Whom has God actually used as his prophet? By the historical facts of the case Christendom is beaten back in defeat. Jehovah's witnesses are deeply grateful today that the plain facts show that God has been pleased to use them.. It has been because Jehovah thrust out his hand of power and touched their lips and put his words in their mouths .." {WT Jan 15 **1959** 39-41 }

**1959**  
["Princes" not to be resurrected until after Armageddon.] {HIS1 252-3} [compare with **1929** teachings re Beth Sarim being built for the physical resurrection of the princes in **1929**, before Armageddon]

**1959**  
"There is no doubt that many throughout this period were overzealous in their statements as to what could be expected. Some read into the Watch Tower statements that were never intended, and while it was necessary for Russell to call attention to the certainty that a great change was due at the end of the Gentile times, he still encouraged his readers to keep an open mind, especially as regards the time element." {HIS1 52} [How then "But I am not willing to admit that this calculation is even one year out" {HOTW 84}, co-author Russell?]

**1959**  
"The announcement in the Watchtower magazine of October 15, **1932**, at the end of 2,300 evenings and mornings was the official notification made by Jehovah through his visible channel of communication that his sanctuary of anointed 'living stones' had been cleansed, vindicated and justified" {WT Oct 1 **1959** 601 }

**1959**  
"The evidence of the holy spirit in the quality and content of the writings published by the Watchtower Society should be the thing that satisfies, that convinces, together with a comparison of these things with the inspired Word of God, the Holy Scriptures." {WT Oct 1 **1959** 607-8}

**1959**  
"Intolerance Is a Sign of Weakness .. [it] appears in many guises. Such is fallen human nature that one may be afflicted with it and not be aware of that fact.. Synonyms for intolerance are 'narrowness, prejudice, dogmatism'.. God eventually will annihilate all the wicked ones. (Ps. 145:20) He will not tolerate them in his universe, but that does not make God intolerant.. Perhaps nowhere is intolerance more a sign of weakness than in the field of religion.. We find the same religious intolerance prevalent today.. God's Word tells Christians how to wage their spiritual warfare and what weapons to use.." {WT Jun 1 **1959** 323-4 [Here speaks the most intolerant and invasive of religions!]

## **1960**

1960  
"God's Word commands: 'Speak truth each of you with his neighbor.' (Eph. 4:25) This command, however, does not mean that we should tell everyone who asks us all he wants to know. We must tell the truth [only] to one who is entitled to know, but if one is not so entitled we may be evasive.. What about telling a prospective mate the unfavorable truth about one's past, such as before one became one of Jehovah's witnesses?.. If one is not asked, then it would be up to one's discretion and conscience.. the Christian must ever bear in mind. As a soldier of Christ he is in theocratic warfare and he must exercise caution when dealing with God's foes. Thus the Scriptures show that for the purpose of protecting the interests of God's cause, it is proper to hide the truth from God's enemies." {WT Jun 1 1960 352} [Lying is proper - also see 1956-7, 1988, 1993]

**1960**  
"Revelation 22: .. Trees are the anointed remnant.. Leaves are the organizational arrangements made through the anointed remnant.. The facts show that during this time and up to the present hour the 'slave' class has served as God's sole collective channel of communication from heaven to earth for the flow of Biblical truth to men on earth ... Thus organizationally the 'discreet slave' class since **1919** has been channeling an ever-increasing flow of Biblical publications by the millions that contain the 'waters of life' featuring Jehovah's will as emanating from God's throne in heaven." {WT Jul 15 **1960** 439-41} [Water of life from the Society got deeper and deeper following **1919** until by **1931** you could barely swim through it]

## **1961**

**1961**  
"They have come to know that there exists a true prophet in spiritual Israel and that there is no God anywhere in the earth except among the prophet's people, spiritual Israel." {LYNS 347}

**1961**  
"The blood in any person is in reality the person himself.. poisons due to personal living, eating and drinking habits .. The poisons that produce the impulse to commit suicide, murder, or steal are in the blood. Moral insanity, sexual perversions, repression, inferiority complexes, petty crimes - these often follow in the wake of blood transfusion." {WT Sep 1 **1961** 564} [But as the Society repeatedly states man is wholly physical - monochotomous - how can sin be transmitted by physical blood?]

## 1961

"[Taking [a] blood transfusion [is] grounds for disfellowshipping." {WT 1961 63-4} [Having read the excellent technical argument in {WT Sep 1 1961 564} against transfusion, what more can be said?]

## 1961

"Regardless of whether it is whole blood or a blood substance that is involved, God's law remains the same." {BMLG 14} [Why then 13 years later, and only in a footnote, did appear "When this happens, the serum might be administered." {WT Jun 1 1974 351} ? To compound the matter, "This journal and its companion, The Watchtower, have commented consistently on the matter.. some Christians have concluded that to them it does not seem a violation of Bible law .. The decision whether to take RhIG [Rhogam serum] remains finally, though, a matter for each Christian couple to decide conscientiously." {AWAK Dec 8 1984 27}]

## 1961

"The foretold events having begun A.D. 1914, the generation of mankind that is still alive from that year is the generation meant by Jesus Christ." {WT Apr 15 1961 236}

## 1961

"Worship of an organization is wrong." {WT Sep 1 1961 525}

## 1962

1962 "A Look at Mormonism.. Mormons acknowledge that they accept the Bible as the inspired Word of God, but they are quick to qualify their acceptance by saying: 'We believe the Bible to be the word of God as far as it is translated correctly.' This loophole permits them to reject any Biblical statement that conflicts with Mormon teaching." {WT Apr 1 1962 216} [As ever, Jehovah's Witnesses are guilty of exactly the sins they attribute to others, relying on their own specially translated NWT, and condemning Bible study unaided by THEIR literature]

## 1963

1963 "Jesus [was an] angel [who became] a man" {WT May 15 1963 307}

## 1964

### 1964

"Jehovah, the God of Progressive Revelation.. THE KINGDOM'S ESTABLISHMENT .. As Jehovah revealed his truths by means of the first-century Christian congregation so he does today by means of the present-day Christian congregation. Through this agency he is having carried out prophesying on an intensified and unparalleled scale. All this activity is not an accident. Jehovah is the one behind all of it. The abundance of spiritual food and the amazing details of Jehovah's purposes that have been revealed to Jehovah's anointed witnesses are clear evidence that they are the ones mentioned by Jesus when he foretold a 'faithful and discreet slave' class that would be used to dispense God's progressive revelations in these last days.. The holy spirit of Jehovah is working mightily today! How thankful we should be for the provision God has made of this slave class, the modern spiritual remnant, as they faithfully dispense the revealed truths of Jehovah! With these rich truths to light the way, Christians do not grope in this dark, jungle-like world as do the masses of people in Christendom and heathendom alike." {WT June 15 1964 365-6}

### 1964

"Pay Attention to Prophecy.. for God has on earth today a prophetlike organization, .. Jehovah's anointed witnesses on earth." {WT Oct 1 1964 601}

### 1964

"But, you may ask, how can a woman have deep respect for a husband who takes a hateful course toward the truth and toward his wife's worship of Jehovah? Certainly you cannot respect a man's views when they are anti-God.. A difficult situation arises where the husband has been disfellowshipped from the Christian congregation and is still in a disfellowshipped state.. the wife.. can have no spiritual fellowship with him. (Rom. 16:17) .. If the disfellowshipped husband asked his wife to pray for the family in his presence, she would have to refuse. However, she could pray silently for herself and for the children even though he were present, but not at his direction." {WT Apr 1 1964 2034}

### 1964

"The holy spirit of Jehovah is working mightily today! How thankful we should be for the provision God has made of this slave class, the modern spiritual remnant, as they faithfully dispense the revealed truths of Jehovah!" {WT Jun 15 1964 365}

## 1965

### 1965

"The best method of proof is to put a prophecy to the test of time and circumstances. The Bible invites such a test." {WT Mar 1 1965 151}

## 1965

[Resurrection will include people of "Tyre and Sidon", and "Sodom and Gomorrah" as well as most who die before Armageddon, even if having heard and rejected the message of Jehovah's Witnesses.] {WT Mar 1 1965 137/142} [compare with CONS May 6 1936 508 which says almost exactly the opposite]

## 1965

"Not only must we study God's Word, have the right mental attitude and pray for God's spirit, but we must recognize God's visible organization. God .. does not impart his holy spirit and and understanding and appreciation of his Word apart from his visible organization.. to be able to understand it we need the help of God's holy spirit, for which we are told to pray. However, for God to answer our prayers for his spirit we must meet his conditions, among which is that we recognize the visible channel he is using for that very purpose." {WT Jul 1 1965 391}

## 1967

1967

"Parents who are Jehovah's witnesses have another very sound reason for channeling their children's lives into useful trades. They know from fulfilled Bible prophecy that today's industrial society is near its end. Soon it will be given its death stroke by Almighty God himself. After that, in God's new order a reconstruction work will be done to transform this entire earth into a paradise. Trades of many types will be very useful then, as will skills in agriculture and homemaking. So by guiding their children away from the so-called 'higher' education of today, these parents spare their children exposure to an increasingly demoralizing atmosphere, and at the same time prepare them for life in a new system as well." {AWAK Jun 8 1967 38}

## 1967

"Thus the Bible is an organizational book and belongs to the Christian congregation as an organization, not to individuals, regardless of how sincerely they may believe that they can interpret the Bible. For this reason the Bible cannot be properly understood without Jehovah's visible organization in mind.. Since 1879 the Watch Tower magazine has been used by this collective group to dispense spiritual food regularly to those of this 'little flock' of true Christians.. Jehovah poured out his spirit upon them and assigned them the responsibility of serving as his sole visible channel, through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come. Those who recognize Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, therefore, must recognize and accept this appointment of the 'faithful and discreet slave' and be submissive to it.. Make haste to identify the visible theocratic organization of God that represents his king, Jesus Christ. It is essential for life.. in submitting to Jehovah's visible theocratic organization, we must be in full and complete agreement with every feature of its apostolic procedure and requirements." {WT Oct 1 1967 587-92}

## 1967

"When men of science conclude that this normal process will no longer work and they suggest removing the organ and replacing it directly with an organ from another human, this is simply a shortcut. Those who submit to such operations are thus living off the flesh of another human. That is cannibalistic. However, in allowing man to eat animal flesh Jehovah God did not grant permission for humans to try to perpetuate their lives by cannibalistically taking into their bodies human flesh, whether chewed or in the form of whole organs or body parts taken from others." {WT Nov 15 1967 702-4} [See 1968 entry for further light]

## 1968

1968

".. Christian Witnesses of Jehovah.. consider all transplants between humans as cannibalism." {AWAK Jun 8 1968 21} [Amazingly this 1968 item got left out of the CD-ROM versions of AWAKE. It contradicted "The question of placing one's body or parts of one's body at the disposal of men of science or doctors at one's death for purposes of scientific experimentation or replacement in others is frowned upon by certain religious bodies. However, it does not seem that any scriptural principle or law is involved. It is therefore something that each individual must decide for himself." {WT Aug 1 1961 480}. it was later reversed in "There is no Biblical command pointedly forbidding the taking in of other human tissue.. It is a matter for personal decision. The congregation judicial committee would not take disciplinary action if someone accepted an organ transplant." {WT Mar 15 1980 31}. So the Society's position changed at least twice, 1961 -> 1968 -> 1980. And further "Accepting a bone marrow transplant is up to your conscience." {WT May 15 1984 31}. As a history of reversals, the blood transfusion saga - see 1956 - is even more amazing]

## 1968

"During world war I, God's people expected it to lead directly into Armageddon, but Jehovah prevented such a climax at that time. We didn't succumb to such an expectation during world war II." {KMIN Jan 1968 5}

## 1968

"As Jesus said, the end would occur in the same generation that saw the beginning of the 'last days' in 1914.-Matt. 24:34" {WT 1968 265} [When did Jesus mention 1914?]

## 1968

"Thus, Adam's naming of the animals and his realizing that he needed a counterpart would have occupied only a brief time after his creation. Since it was also Jehovah's purpose for man to multiply and fill the earth, it is logical that he would create Eve soon after

Adam, perhaps just a few weeks or months later in the same year, 4026 B.C.E. After her creation, God's rest day, the seventh period, immediately followed. 'When were Adam and Eve created?'. After [Eve's] creation, God's rest day, the seventh period, immediately followed. Therefore, God's seventh day and the time man has been on earth apparently run parallel. To calculate where man is in the stream of time relative to God's seventh day of 7,000 years, we need to determine how long a time has elapsed from the year of Adam and Eve's creation in 4026 B.C.E.. The seventh day of the Jewish week, the sabbath, would well picture the final 1,000-year reign of God's kingdom under Christ when mankind would be uplifted from 6,000 years of sin and death. (Rev. 20:6) Hence, when Christians note from God's timetable the approaching end of 6,000 years of human history, it fills them with anticipation. Particularly is this true because the great sign of the "last days" has been in the course of fulfillment since the beginning of the "time of the end" in **1914**... eight years remain to account for a full 6,000 years of the seventh day. Eight years from the autumn of **1967** would bring us to the autumn of **1975**, fully 6,000 years into God's seventh day, his rest day. The immediate future is certain to be filled with climatic events, for this old system is nearing its complete end. Within a few years at most the final parts of Bible prophecy relative to these 'last days' will undergo fulfillment, resulting in the liberation of surviving mankind into Christ's glorious 1,000-year reign!" {**WT** May 1 **1968** 271-3} [the cautionary "No one can say with certainty what any particular year will bring," clearly being lost in the tumult]

## 1968

"A religion may claim to advocate worship of the true God of the Bible and it may use the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, but of what value is this if it is contaminated with Babylonish doctrines and practices?.. [We] need to make a clean break from any and all organizations of Babylon the Great. We need to quit sharing in their activities" {**TLEL** 134-5} [Look for 'Swaggart']

## 1968

"Jesus was obviously speaking about those who were old enough to witness with understanding what took place when the 'last days' began. Jesus was saying that some of those persons who were alive at the appearance of the 'sign of the last days' would still be alive when God brought this system to its end.. Even if we presume that youngsters 15 years of age would be perceptive enough to realize the import of what happened in **1914**, it would still make the youngest of 'this generation' nearly 70 years old today. So the great majority of the generation to which Jesus was referring has already passed away in death. The remaining ones are approaching old age. And remember, Jesus said that the end of this wicked world would come before that generation passed away in death." {**AWAK** Oct 8 **1968** 13-4} [So the end of the wicked world is very close.. **1975** at the latest, by which time those 15 year olds will be 76, older than any Biblically defined generation]

## 1968

"The Bible speaks of the time in which we are living as the 'last days' or the "time of the end." (2 Timothy 3: 1; Daniel 11: 40) The facts show that this is a limited period that has a definite beginning and a definite end. It began in **1914** when Jesus Christ was enthroned as king in the heavens. It will end when God destroys this present wicked system of things.. How soon will that be? God's own Son, Jesus Christ, gives the answer. After drawing attention to the many things that mark the period from **1914** onward as the 'time of the end' Jesus said: 'This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' (Matthew 24:34) Which generation did he mean? Jesus had just referred to persons who would 'see all these things.' 'These things' are the events that have taken place since **1914** and those yet to occur down to the end of this wicked system. (Matthew 24:33) Persons born even as much as fifty years ago could not see 'all these things.' They came on the scene after the foretold events were already under way. But there are people still living who were alive in **1914** and saw what was happening then and who were old enough that they still remember those events. This generation is getting up in years now. A great number of them have already passed away in death. Yet Jesus very pointedly said: 'This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' Some of them will still be alive to see the end of this wicked system. This means that only a short time is left before the end comes!" {**TLEL** 94}

## 1968

"True, there have been those in times past who predicted an 'end' to the world, even announcing a specific date. Yet nothing happened. The 'end' did not come. They were guilty of false prophesying. Why? What was missing? Missing from such people were God's truths and the evidence that He was using and guiding them. .. But what about today? Today we have the evidence required, all of it. And it is overwhelming! All the many, many parts of the great sign of the last days are here, together with verifying Bible chronology." {**AWAK** Oct 8 **1968** 23} [Incredible then is "Is it not far preferable to make some mistakes because of overeagerness to see God's purposes accomplished...?" {**WT** Dec 1 **1984** 1618}]

## 1968

"Bible prophecy reveals unmistakably that we are living now during 'the conclusion of the system of things.'" {**TLEL** 185}

## 1969

### 1969

"In view of the short time left, a decision to pursue a career in this system of things is not only unwise but extremely dangerous .. Many young brothers and sisters were offered scholarship or employment that promised fine pay. However, they turned them down and put spiritual interests first." {**KMIN** Jun **1969** 3} [compare with **WT** Nov 1 **1992** 18 "If .. minimal or even high school education will only allow them to find jobs providing insufficient income to support themselves as pioneers, then supplementary education or training might be considered. This would be with the specific goal of full-time service." A complete volte-face.]

## 1969

"[In Revelation] Abaddon-Apollyon [refers to] Jesus Christ" {TFMG 232} [But according to TFIM it refers to Satan!] 1969 "What Influences Decisions in Your Life? Many schools now have student counselors who encourage one to pursue higher education after high school, to pursue a career with a future in this system of things. Do not be influenced by them. Do not let them "brainwash" you with the Devil's propaganda to get ahead, to make something of yourself in this world. The world has very little time left! Any 'future' this world offers is no future! .. Make pioneer service, the fulltime ministry, with the possibility of Bethel or missionary service your goal. This is a life that offers an everlasting future!" {WT Mar 15 1969 171} [statistics having revealed that people possessing anything more than the most basic level of education were unlikely to be converted to 'the truth', there was a danger that upon educating themselves, even existing followers would leave]

**1969**

"If you are a young person, you also need to face the fact that you will never grow old in this present system of things. Why not? Because all the evidence in fulfillment of Bible prophecy indicates that this corrupt system is due to end in a few years. Of the generation that observed the beginning of the 'last days' in 1914, Jesus foretold: 'This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' Therefore, as a young person, you will never fulfill any career that this system offers. If you are in high school and thinking about a college education, it means at least four, perhaps even six or eight more years to graduate into a specialized career. But where will this system of things be by that time? It will be well on the way towards its finish, if not actually gone! This is why parents who base their lives on God's prophetic Word find it much more practical to direct their young ones into trades that do not require such long periods of additional schooling.. True, those who do not understand where we are in the stream of time from God's viewpoint will call this impractical. But which is really practical: preparing yourself for a position in this world that soon will pass away? or working toward surviving this system's end and enjoying eternal life in God's righteous new order?" {AWAK May 22 1969 15} [The poor high school youngster would now be 45 years old and still be waiting..]

**1969**

"More recently earnest researchers of the Holy Bible have made a recheck of its chronology. According to their calculations the six millenniums of mankind's life on earth would end in the mid-seventies. Thus the seventh millennium from man's creation by Jehovah God would begin within less than ten years. Apart from the global change that present-day world conditions indicate is fast getting near, the arrival of the seventh millennium of man's existence on earth suggests a gladsome change for war-stricken humankind.. In order for the Lord Jesus Christ to be Lord even of the Sabbath day, his thousand-year reign would have to be the seventh in a series of thousand-year periods or millenniums. (Matt 12:8, AV) Thus it would be a sabbatic reign. Since early in the existence of mankind Satan the Devil has been on the loose, making the human family to toil in hard bondage, causing the earth to be filled with violence before the global flood of Noah's day and inducing the same old earth to be filled with even greater violence today. Soon now six millenniums of his wicked exploiting of mankind as his slaves will end, within the lifetime of the generation that has witnessed world events since the close of the gentile times in 1914 till now, according to the prophetic words of Jesus in Matthew 24:34. Would not, then, the end of six millenniums of mankind's laborious enslavement under Satan the Devil be the fitting time for Jehovah God to usher in a Sabbath millennium for all his human creatures? Yes, indeed! And his King Jesus Christ will be Lord of that Sabbath." {WT Oct 15 1969 622-3, APTY 25-6}

**1969**

"We need to examine, not only what we personally believe, but also what is taught by any religious organization with which we may be associated. Are its teachings in full harmony with God's Word, or are they based on the traditions of men? If we are lovers of the truth, there is nothing to fear from such an examination." {TLEL 13, WT Mar 15 1969 166}

**1969**

"Jehovah's organization as directed by his 'faithful and discreet slave' class should influence our every decision also. How may we avail ourselves of this good influence? By doing personal research in the Bible publications of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society on whatever subject our decision concerns. This always proves to be a real aid in making clear to us the Bible principles involved and their application to our lives." {WT Mar 15 1969, p. 172}

1970 1970 " .. millions of persons have been shocked to learn things they were taught as being vital for salvation are now considered by their church to be wrong. .. A businessman in Medellin, Colombia, expressed the effect that changes have had on many. [He said,] 'How can I have confidence in anything? How can I believe in the Bible, in God, or have faith? Just ten years ago we Catholics had the absolute truth, we put all our faith in this. Now the pope and our priests are telling us this is not the way to believe anymore, but we are to believe new things. How do I know the new things will be the truth in five years?.. If you are a Catholic, can you understand how a practice that was considered by the Church a 'mortal sin' can suddenly be approved? If it was a sin five years ago, why is it not today?' .. The change in teaching has shaken their confidence in the Church. Would you not feel the same way if what you had always been taught to be vital for salvation was suddenly considered unnecessary? Would you not be inclined to question other teachings of your church also?" {AWAK Apr 22 1970 8} [see the 1997 entry for the Society's reversal on blood transfusion] 1970 "Jehovah's witnesses want people to know that God is going to bring an end to wicked conditions in the earth.. The time for that to happen is very near; it is to occur in this generation. People must be warned of this fact.. The churches of Christendom are not teaching people these vital Bible truths." {WT Apr 15 1970 245-6} [so, generation of 1914 has become the generation of 1970!]

**1971**



**1971**

"Why, then, is the name [Jehovah, or YHWH] absent from the extant manuscripts of the Christian Greek Scriptures or the so called 'New Testament'? Evidently because by the time those extant copies were made (from the third century C.E. onward) the original text of the writings of the apostles and disciples had been altered. The divine name in the Tetragrammaton form was undoubtedly replaced with 'Kyrios' and 'Ho Theos' by later copyists." {AIDB 887} [so there is no evidence at all that "YHWH" or "Jehovah" were ever intended to be used in the New Testament - though the Society has packed it with such references in its NWT version of the Bible]

**1971**

"The first recorded use of this form [Jehovah] dates from the thirteenth century C.E. Raymundus Martini, a Spanish monk of the Dominican Order, used it in his book Pugeo Fidei of the year 1270 C.E." {AIDB 884-5} [so the insisted-upon usage is unscriptural]

**1971**

"There is an authentic prophetic class of Christians among us. Jehovah has raised up a genuine 'prophet' within our generation. Regardless of how Christendom views or regards this group of anointed witnesses of Jehovah, the time must come, and that shortly, when those making up Christendom will know that really a 'prophet' of Jehovah was among them.. Whom could the real 'chariot' of Jehovah's organization roll up to and confront that He might bestow upon this qualified one the commission to speak as a prophet in the name of Jehovah?... They were a small minority group of men and women who had dedicated themselves to Jehovah as God by following in the footsteps of his Son Jesus Christ.. Who is Ezekiel's present-day counterpart, whose message and conduct correspond with that of that ancient prophet of Jehovah? Of whom today was he a 'sign' or 'portent'? Not of some individual man, but of a group of people.. Who were they?.. they became Jehovah's witnesses." {TNSK 58-9/61/66}

**1971**

"How Is Your Heart? .. The heart, nevertheless, is intricately connected with the brain by the nervous system and is well supplied with sensory nerve endings. The sensations of the heart are recorded on the brain. It is here that the heart brings to bear on the mind its desires and its affections in arriving at conclusions having to do with motivations. In reverse flow, the mind feeds the heart with interpretations of the impulses from the senses and with conclusions reached that are based on the knowledge it has received, either at the moment or from the memory. There is a close interrelationship between the heart and the mind, but they are two different faculties, centering in different locations. The heart .. more significantly [has] our emotional and motivating capacities .. built within it. Love, hate, desire (good and bad), preference for one thing over another, ambition, fear - in effect, all that serves to motivate us in relationship to our affections and desires springs from the heart.. It is significant that heart-transplant patients, where the nerves connecting the heart and brain are severed, have serious emotional problems after the operation.. the new heart in turn registers few, if any, clear factors of motivation on the brain. To what extent the nerve endings of the body and the new heart are able to make some connections in time is not clear, but this cannot be ruled out as one of the several factors causing the serious mental aberrations and disorientation that doctors report are observed in heart-transplant patients. These patients have donor-supplied pumps for their blood, but do they now have all the factors needed to say they have a 'heart'? One thing is sure, in losing their own hearts, they have had taken away from them the capacities of 'heart' built up in them over the years and which contributed to making them who they were as to personality." {WT Mar 1 1971 133-9} [Heart transplants change personalities?]

**1971**

"And have you read the older publications of the Society in your language? To the extent that you can make time to read the material, there is a blessing in store for you." {THEO 21} {Please do, a selection having been provided at the start}

**1971**

"A Governing Body [is] chosen to rule over the organization [as] the representative of the 'faithful and discreet slave' class." {WT 1971 755-62} [compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct 1883 536}]

**1971**

"The modern-day history of Jehovah's witnesses shows that attempts have been made by some, making up an 'evil slave' class, to assume control over Jehovah's work and his people. This was especially seen during the World War I period. Jehovah, however, has cleansed his organization, and made it wholly theocratic." {WT Jul 15 1971 437} **1971**

"So, as we draw close to the completion of six thousand years of human existence during this decade, there is the thrilling hope that a grand Sabbath of rest and relief is indeed at hand." [AWAK Oct 8 1971]

**1972**

**1972**

"Wanted - a Messenger.. **WHAT IS REQUIRED OF GOD'S MESSENGER..** More accurately, was there any group on whom Jehovah would be willing to bestow the commission to speak as a 'prophet' in His name, as was done toward Ezekiel back there in 613 B.C.E.? .. It is of importance to every individual on earth to identify the group that Jehovah has commissioned as his 'servant' or messenger. We must recognize and understand the warning that he brings. We need to take action on the warning to safeguard our lives, for they are in a danger as grave as that of the lives of Jerusalem's citizens as that city neared destruction. For this reason forthcoming issues of

The Watchtower will further discuss the identity and work of Jehovah's commissioned messenger as revealed in His vision to Ezekiel." {WT Mar 15 1972 189-90}

**1972**

"While both homosexuality and bestiality are disgusting perversions, in the case of neither one is the marriage tie broken" {WT Nov 1 1972 32}

**1972**

"Loving Oversight of the Congregation of God.. Each week the principal Bible study aid published by Jehovah's witnesses, the Watchtower magazine, is studied by the congregation as a whole. This is done in the form of a question-and-answer discussion. For this meeting the entire congregation usually meets in one place. Through the columns of The Watchtower comes increased light on God's Word as Jehovah makes it known. Because of the vital nature of these discussions, the Watchtower study is the most important meeting for all of Jehovah's Christian witnesses and interested persons. Therefore, the Watchtower study conductor, who presides over this meeting, has an important responsibility. This study enables all to be united in the same line of thought.-1 Cor. 1:10." {WT Aug 1 1972 460} [No dissenting opinions permitted, as they admit]

**1972**

"'They Shall Know that a Prophet Was Among Them' People today can view the creative works. They have at hand the Bible, but it is little read or understood. So, does Jehovah have a prophet to help them, to warn them of dangers and to declare things to come? .. IDENTIFYING THE 'PROPHET' .. These questions can be answered in the affirmative. Who is this prophet? .. This 'prophet' was not one man, but was a body of men and women. It was the small group of footstep followers of Jesus Christ, known at that time as International Bible Students. Today they are known as Jehovah's Christian witnesses. They are still proclaiming a warning .. Of course, it is easy to say that this group acts as a 'prophet' of God. It is another thing to prove it. The only way that this can be done is to review the record. What does it show?" {WT Apr 1 1972 197} [An excellent question!]

**1972**

"Does this admission of making mistakes stamp them [Watchtower] as false prophets? Not at all, for false prophets do not admit to making mistakes." {WT Nov 1 1972 644}

**1972**

"If it is his purpose to have this beautification of the whole earth accomplished by the end of his seventh creative day - Scripturally a period of seven thousand years, then the time is near at hand for the ruining of the earth by exploiters to be stopped by theocratic power and the blessed transformation to a delightful garden to begin. Already, nearly six thousand years of man's existence from the close of the sixth creative day have run their dreary course. We must be approaching the threshold of that thousand-year-long reign of Jesus Christ, which must be accompanied by Paradise according to what Jesus promised the sympathetic evildoer on the stake there at Mount Calvary." {PRTM 18}

**1972**

"Jehovah, the God of the true prophets, will put all false prophets to shame either by not fulfilling the false prediction of such self-assuming prophets or by having His own prophecies fulfilled in a way opposite to that predicted by the false prophets. False prophets will try to hide their reason for feeling shame by denying who they really are." {PRTM 353-4}

**1972**

"From Adam's creation to the end of 1943 A.D. is 5,971 years .. We are therefore near the end of six thousand years of human history" {TMYF 152} [so another 29 years, in 1972, would come year 6,000 since Adam]

**1972**

"From this it is clearly seen that the editor and publisher of Zion's Watch Tower disavowed any claim to being individually, in his person, that 'faithful and wise servant'. He did not claim to be such." {GKTY 346} [He was specifically named as such - see quotations for 1916/7]

## **1973**

**1973**

"What is the view of Jehovah's Witnesses toward interracial marriage? .. [while interracial marriages are not intrinsically wrong, 'deep-seated prejudices' remain 'in the world' and] "A Christian, being realistic, must face life as it is - not as he wishes it might be." {WT Dec 1 1973 755-6} [i.e., if such a marriage would compromise one's potential to give a witness for Jehovah, it might be theocratically imprudent to pursue it]

**1973**

"Consider, too, the fact that Jehovah's organization alone, in all the earth, is directed by God's holy spirit or active force. (Zech. 4:6) Only this organization functions for Jehovah's purpose and to his praise. To it alone God's Sacred Word, the Bible, is not a sealed book.. How very much true Christians appreciate associating with the only organization on earth that understands the 'deep things of God!'" {WT Jul 1 1973 402}

**1973**

"we should be deeply appreciative of all the fine spiritual food that 'the faithful and discreet slave' class has been providing through The Watchtower, now for ninety-four years." {WT Aug 1 1973 460}

**1973**

".. the generation alive in **1914**, some will see the major fulfillment of Christ Jesus' prophecy and the destruction." {**AWAK** Oct 8 **1973** 19}

**1973**

"The Encouragement of Parents Helps' .. At times the heart's desire for what is good needs to be strengthened. Parents can do much to aid their children in this regard.. An elder in Korea encouraged his four children to pioneer. At a circuit assembly he and the children were interviewed. The oldest daughter related how she had been the highest scholastically in her high school. She herself wanted to go to college at one point. However, her father informed her that, while she was free to choose such a course, she could not expect financial support from him. She changed her mind about college, and now she is enjoying many blessings as a pioneer. The next oldest, a son, told how he also at one time wanted to go to college and follow a worldly course. But his father sat down and reviewed the Scriptures with him. His father also told him that, if he insisted on following a worldly course, he would also have to find another place to live. He heeded his father's counsel and is very grateful that his father was kind but firm in his stand. The two younger children explained that they were impressed by what happened to the two older ones. From the beginning they planned to become pioneers. The youngest son gave up his high school education to pioneer." {**KMIN** May **1973** 6} [compare this with "The endeavor to compel all men to think alike on all subjects, culminated in the great apostasy and the development of the great Papal system; and thereby the 'gospel,' the 'one faith,' which Paul and the other apostles set forth, was lost buried under the mass of uninspired decrees of popes and councils. The union of the early church, based upon the simple gospel and bound only by love, gave place to the bondage of the church of Rome a slavery of God's children, from the degradation of which multitudes are still weak and suffering." {**WR** **1893** 1572}]

**1973**

"Do You Really Believe It?.. If you are one of Jehovah's dedicated witnesses, you believe that the generation of people now living is in its 'last days'.. We know that Jesus Christ will take such action within this generation. Bible chronology clearly establishes that in **1914** C.E. he was given rulership over the world of mankind." {**WT** Jan 15 **1973** 56/61}

**1973**

"Truly it is 'intellectually dishonest' not to want any opposing views heard on such a disputed matter. It has to make reasonable persons ask, Why?" {**AWAK** Oct 22 **1973** 7}

**1974**

**1974**

"When persons are in great danger from a source they do not suspect or are being misled by those they consider their friends, is it an unkindness to warn them? They may prefer not to believe the warning. They may even resent it. Does that free one from the moral responsibility to give that warning?" {**WT** Jan 15 **1974** 35} [All part of the **1975** hysteria, but well applicable to JW's themselves!]

**1974**

"At times I detect among certain [Jehovah's Witnesses] leftover attitudes of racial superiority, and I have sometimes seen a certain uncomfortableness of some of them when in close association with persons of another race" {**WT** Dec 1 **1974** 713-4}

**1974**

"If you are a Christian woman, what should you do if, in spite of all precautions, you are set upon by a rapist? If you cannot deter him by reasoning, or by calling upon the name of Jehovah, then what? As a Christian you are under obligation to resist. This resistance includes screaming and creating as much disturbance as possible .. Resistance is imperative, because the rapist is after, not just money, but your virtue. An issue of integrity to Jehovah's laws is involved here. So by no means would it be proper quietly to submit to rape, as that would be consenting to fornication. -1 Thessalonians 4:3.. Would it be different if the man had a weapon and threatened to kill you if you did not submit? No, the Scriptures plainly state that Christians are under obligation to 'flee from fornication.' (1 Cor. 6:18). It is true that you face the possibility of death in this case.." {**AWAK** Aug 3 **1974** 14} [Needs no comment] **1974**

"The true God, who is himself 'the God of truth' and who hates lies, will not look with favor on persons who cling to organizations that teach falsehood. And, really, would you want to be even associated with a religion that had not been honest with you?" {**ITLA** 46}

**1974**

"Mormons and Racism.. at a news conference, Mormon president Spencer W. Kimball was questioned on the Mormon practice of excluding blacks from full and equal privileges in their religion.. Thus the question of racial discrimination was evaded. In refreshing contrast, the Bible plainly says that 'God is not partial' and 'makes no distinction at all' among those sincerely seeking him.-Acts 10:34, 35; 15:7-9." {**WT** Nov 1 **1974** 656} [Breathtaking hypocrisy from the WTBS, who supported racial segregation (see **1919**), who excluded black members from even sitting in parts of their church (see **1914**) and who till today have been exclusively governed by old white American men]

**1974**

"Bible prophecy and the physical facts in fulfillment thereof prove that since **1914** C.E. the generation now living is in the 'time of the end.'" {**WT** **1974** 123}

**1974**

"Similarly, the 'false prophet' is not a person, but is a system or an organization." {**WT** Jun 15 **1974** 381} [Sounds very true!]

## 1974

"How Are You Using Your Life? .. Yes, the end of this system is so very near! Is that not reason to increase our activity? In this regard we can learn something from a runner who puts on a final burst of speed near the finish of a race. Look at Jesus, who apparently stepped up his activity during his final days on earth. In fact, over 27 percent of the material in the Gospels is devoted to just the last week of Jesus' earthly ministry!-Matt. 21:1-27:50; Mark 11:115:37; Luke 19:29-23:46; John 11:55-19:30. By carefully and prayerfully examining our own circumstances, we also may find that we can spend more time and energy in preaching during this final period before the present system ends. Many of our brothers and sisters are doing just that. This is evident from the rapidly increasing number of pioneers. Yes, since the summer of **1973** there have been new peaks in pioneers every month. Now there are 20,394 regular and special pioneers in the United States, an all-time peak. That is 5,190 more than there were in February **1973**! A 34-percent increase! Does that not warm our hearts? Reports are heard of brothers selling their homes and property and planning to finish out the rest of their days in this old system in the pioneer service. Certainly this is a fine way to spend the short time remaining before the wicked world's end.-1 John 2:17. Remain an enduring witness to his wisdom and faithfulness!" {KMIN May **1974** 3} [compare with WT Nov 1 **1992** 18 "If .. minimal or even high school education will only allow them to find jobs providing insufficient income to support themselves as pioneers, then supplementary education or training might be considered. This would be with the specific goal of full-time service." A complete volte-face.] **1974**

'It also tells us that this millennium must be preceded immediately by the most destructive war in all human history. We can now see the political rulers .. being gathered.. for that War of all wars..' {WT Jul 1 **1974** 397}

## 1974

"Although the fig tree itself may not blossom,.. I will exult in Jehovah himself. - Hab. 3:17, 18." {Year Text **1974**}[Covering their bases in case **1975** did not mark the End!] You are kindly invited to look up the references at your local Kingdom Hall.

## 1975

### 1975

".. To give aid today in this critical time to prospective sons of God,' announced President Knorr, 'a new book in English, entitled 'Life Everlasting - in Freedom of the Sons of God,' has been published.' .. It did not take the brothers very long to find the chart beginning on page 31, showing that 6,000 years of man's existence end in **1975**. Discussion of **1975** overshadowed about everything else. 'The new book compels us to realize that Armageddon is, in fact, very close indeed,' .. **THE YEAR 1975** .. 6,000 years of human experience will end in **1975**, about nine years from now. What does that mean? Does it mean that God's rest day began 4026 B.C.E.? It could have. The Life Everlasting book does not say it did not.. 'What about the year **1975**? What is it going to mean, dear friends?' asked Brother Franz. 'Does it mean that Armageddon is going to be finished, with Satan bound, by **1975**? It could! It could! All things are possible with God. Does it mean that Babylon the Great is going to go down by **1975**? It could. Does it mean that the attack of Gog of Magog is going to be made on Jehovah's witnesses to wipe them out, then Gog himself will be put out of action? It could. But we are not saying. All things are possible with God. But we are not saying. And don't any of you be specific in saying anything that is going to happen between now and **1975**. But the big point of it all is this, dear friends: Time is short. Time is running out, no question about that.' {WT Oct 15 1966 628-31}

### 1975

"Today, there are many teenage baptized servants of Jehovah.. how far should they go with a secular education? It would hardly be consistent for such a youth, of his own choice, to pursue extensive secular studies beyond what is required by the law and by his parents.. additional years of college education may present snares." {WT Sep 1 **1975** 543}

### 1975

"How Much Longer Will It Be?' 6,000 Years Completed in **1975** .. In what year, then, would the first 6,000 years of man's existence and also the first 6,000 years of God's rest day come to an end? The year **1975**.. Hence, the fact that we are nearing the end of the first 6,000 years of man's existence is of great significance. Does God's rest day parallel the time man has been on earth since his creation? Apparently so. From the most reliable investigations of Bible chronology, harmonizing with many accepted dates of secular history, we find that Adam was created in the autumn of the year 4026 B.C.E. Sometime in that same year Eve could well have been created, directly after which God's rest day commenced.. There is another chronological indication that we are rapidly nearing the closing time for this wicked system of things. It is the fact that shortly, according to reliable Bible chronology, 6,000 years of human history will come to an end.. After six thousand years of toil and bondage to sin, sickness, death and Satan, mankind is due to enjoy a rest and is in dire need of a rest. (Heb. 4:1-11) Hence, the fact that we are nearing the end of the first 6,000 years of man's existence is of great significance.. In what year, then, would the first 6,000 years of man's existence and also the first 6,000 years of God's rest day come to an end? The year **1975**. This is worthy of notice, particularly in view of the fact that the 'last days' began in **1914**, and that the physical facts of our day in fulfillment of prophecy mark this as the last generation of this wicked world. So we can expect the immediate future to be filled with thrilling events for those who rest their faith in God and his promises. It means that within relatively few years we will witness the fulfillment of the remaining prophecies that have to do with the 'time of the end.'" {AWAK Oct 8 1966 19-20}

### 1975

"6,000 Years Nearing Completion.. The fact that fifty-four years of the period called the 'last days' have already gone by is highly significant. It means that only a few years, at most, remain before the corrupt system of things dominating the earth is destroyed by



God. Today, many years later, we may ask, What does the phrase 'the immediate future' mean? How many years are 'a few years at most'? .. According to reliable Bible chronology, Adam and Eve were created in 4026 B.C.E.. There is another way that helps confirm the fact that we are living in the final few years of this 'time of the end.' (Daniel 12:9) The Bible shows that we are nearing the end of a full 6,000 years of human history. What significance does this have? When God gave his laws to ancient Israel, one of those laws involved keeping the sabbath day holy. On the seventh day of the week there was to be no labor. The people were to rest from all their toil. (Ex 20:8-11) The Bible states that 'the Law has a shadow of the good things to come.' - Heb. 10:1. Revelation chapter 20, verse 6, shows that God's heavenly kingdom will rule over the earth for one thousand years after the end of this system of things. That millennium will bring a sabbath like rest to the earth and all those then inhabiting it. Hence, the first six thousand years since man's creation could be likened to the first six days of the week in ancient Israel. The seventh one-thousand-year period could be likened to the seventh day, the sabbath, of that week. - 2 Pet. 3:8. How fitting it would be for God, following this pattern, to end man's misery after six thousand years of human rule and follow it with His glorious Kingdom rule for a thousand years! .. only seven more years from the autumn of **1968** to complete 6,000 full years of human history. That seven-year period will evidently finish in the autumn of the year **1975**.. Concerning political instability, former U.S. Secretary of State Dean Acheson said in **1960**: 'I know enough of what is going on to assure you that, in 15 years from today (or, by **1975**), this world is going to be too dangerous to live in..' [Chart] **1975** C.E. END OF 6,000 YEARS .. In the book *Famine - 1975!* food experts W. and P. Paddock state: .. 'I forecast a specific date, **1975**, when the new crisis will be upon us in all its awesome importance.'" {**AWAK** Oct 8 **1968** 14-5}

**1975**

"Would there be another creative 'day,' a seventh 'day,' at the close of the 'morning' of which the whole earth would be populated with a human family and be a global Paradise? 'Evening' of seventh creative 'day' begins, 4026 B.C.E." {**GEPT** 51} [4026 B.C.E. + 6000 years to take to start of the seventh day = **1975**]

**1975**

"The time is fast drawing near for the reality that was foreshadowed by the Jubilee of liberty to be proclaimed throughout the earth to all mankind.. Most certainly the near future would be the most appropriate time for it. God's own written Word indicates that it is the appointed time for it.. In this twentieth century an independent study has been carried on that does not blindly follow some traditional chronological calculations of Christendom, and the published timetable resulting from this independent study gives the date of man's creation as 4026 B.C.E. So six thousand years of man's existence on earth will soon be up, yes, within this generation.. Since the time of Ussher intensive study of Bible chronology has been carried on. In this twentieth century an independent study has been carried on that does not blindly follow some traditional chronological calculations of Christendom, and the published timetable resulting from this independent study gives the date of man's creation as 4026 B.C.E. According to this trustworthy Bible chronology six thousand years from man's creation will end in **1975**, and the seventh period of a thousand years of human history will begin in the fall of **1975** C.E. So six thousand years of man's existence on earth will soon be up, yes, within this generation. Jehovah God is timeless, as it is written in Psalm 90:1, 2: "O Jehovah, you yourself have proved to be a real dwelling for us during generation after generation. Before the mountains themselves were born, or you proceeded to bring forth as with labor pains the earth and the productive land, even from time indefinite to time indefinite you are God." So from the standpoint of Jehovah God these passing six thousand years of man's existence are but as six days of twenty-four hours, for this same psalm (verses 3, 4) goes on to say: "You make mortal man go back to crushed matter, and you say: 'Go back, you sons of men.' For a thousand years are in your eyes but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch during the night." So in not many years within our own generation we are reaching what Jehovah God could view as the seventh day of man's existence. So in not many years within our own generation we are reaching what Jehovah God could view as the seventh day of man's existence. How appropriate it would be for Jehovah God to make of this coming seventh period of a thousand years a sabbath period of rest and release, a great Jubilee sabbath for the proclaiming of liberty throughout the earth to all its inhabitants! This would be most timely for mankind. It would also be most fitting on God's part, for, remember, mankind has yet ahead of it what the last book of the Holy Bible speaks of as the reign of Jesus Christ over earth for a thousand years, the millennial reign of Christ. Prophetically Jesus Christ, when on earth nineteen centuries ago, said concerning himself: "For Lord of the sabbath is what the Son of man is." (Matthew 12: 8). It would not be by mere chance or accident but would be according to the loving purpose of Jehovah God for the reign of Jesus Christ, the 'Lord of the Sabbath,' to run parallel with the seventh millennium of man's existence." {**LEIF** 26-30}

**1975**

"**1975** - 6000 End of 6th 1,000-year day of man's existence (in early autumn)" {**LEIF** 35}

**1975**

"In order for the Lord Jesus Christ to be 'Lord even of the sabbath day,' his thousand-year reign would have to be the seventh in a series of thousand-year periods or millenniums. (Matt. 12:8, AV) Thus it would be a sabbatic reign. Since early in the existence of mankind Satan the Devil has been on the loose, making the human family to toil in hard bondage, causing the earth to be filled with violence before the global flood of Noah's day and inducing the same old earth to be filled with even greater violence today. Soon now six millenniums of his wicked exploiting of mankind as his slaves will end, within the lifetime of the generation that has witnessed world events since the close of the Gentile Times in **1914** till now, according to the prophetic words of Jesus in Matthew 24:34. Would not, then, the end of six millenniums of mankind's laborious enslavement under Satan the Devil be the fitting time for Jehovah God to usher in a Sabbath millennium for all his human creatures? Yes, indeed!" {**WT** Oct 15 **1969** 623, **PTY** 267}

**1975**

"More recently earnest researchers of the Holy Bible have made a recheck of its chronology. According to their calculations the six millenniums of mankind's life on earth would end in the mid-seventies. Thus the seventh millennium from man's creation by Jehovah God would begin within less than ten years." {**PTY** 25}



**1975**

"Interestingly, the autumn of the year **1975** marks the end of 6,000 years of human experience. This is ascertainable from reliable chronology preserved in the Bible itself. What will that year mean for humankind? Will it be the time when God executes the wicked and starts off the thousand-year reign of his Son Jesus Christ? It very well could, but we will have to wait to see.. A glorious new order is immediately before us." {WT May 1 **1967** 262}

**1975**

"According to reliable Bible chronology Adam was created in the year 4026 B.C.E., likely in the autumn of the year, at the end of the sixth day of creation. Then God brought the animals to man to name. Yet, of Adam, Genesis states these words of Jehovah: 'It is not good for the man to continue by himself.' (Gen. 2:18) Adam would realize this lonely condition very quickly, perhaps in just a few days or a few weeks. He would realize he needed another earthling with whom he could communicate, share his experiences, and his life. Nor would his naming the animals take an unduly long time. The basic animal kinds could have been relatively quickly named, for when such basic kinds were taken into the ark in Noah's day, it did not involve millions of beasts, but perhaps only a few hundred basic kinds. Thus Adam's naming of the animals and his realizing that he needed a counterpart would have occupied only a brief time after his creation. Since it was also Jehovah's purpose for man to multiply and fill the earth, it is logical that he would create Eve soon after Adam, perhaps just a few weeks or months later in the same year, 4026 B.C.E. After her creation, God's rest day, the seventh period, immediately followed.. Eight years from the Autumn of **1967** would bring us to the Autumn of **1975**, fully 6,000 years into God's seventh day, his rest day.. The immediate future is certain to be filled with climactic events, for this old system is nearing its complete end. Within a few years at most the final parts of Bible prophecy relative to these 'last days' will undergo fulfillment, resulting in the liberation of surviving mankind into Christ's glorious 1,000-year reign. What difficult days, but, at the same time, what grand days are just ahead!" {WT May 1 **1968** 271-2}

**1975** "Of what significance is this today? It means that by the fall of **1963** mankind has dwelt upon this earth 5,988 years. Does this mean, then, that by **1963** we had progressed 5,988 years into the 'day' on which Jehovah 'has been resting from all his work'? (Gen. 2:3) No, for the creation of Adam does not correspond with the beginning of Jehovah's rest day. Following Adam's creation, and still within the sixth creative day, Jehovah appears to have been forming further animal and bird creations. Also, he had Adam name the animals, which would take some time, and he proceeded to create Eve. (Gen. 2:18-22; see also NWT, **1953** Ed., footnote on Vs. 19) Whatever time elapsed between Adam's creation and the end of the 'sixth day' must be subtracted from the 5,988 years in order to give the actual length of time from the beginning of the 'seventh day' until now. It does no good to use Bible chronology for speculating on dates that are still future in the stream of time." {ASII 286}

**1975**

"'The Book of Truthful Historical Dates' .. Do we know that the seventh year from now will conclude the 6,000th year since Adam was created? And if we live to that year **1975**, what should we expect to happen?" {WT Aug 15 **1968** 488}

**1975**

"WHY ARE YOU LOOKING FORWARD TO **1975**? .. What about all this talk concerning the year **1975**? Lively discussions, some based on speculation, have burst into flame during recent months among serious students of the Bible. Their interest has been kindled by the belief that **1975** will mark the end of 6,000 years of human history since Adam's creation. The nearness of such an important date indeed fires the imagination and presents unlimited possibilities for discussion.. of what benefit is this information to us today?.. why should we be any more interested in the date of Adam's creation than in the birth of King Tut?.. in the fall of the year **1975**, a little over seven years from now .. it will be 6,000 years since the creation of Adam." {WT Aug 15 **1968** 494}

**1975**

"'Adam Created At Close Of 'Sixth Day' .. in the fall of the year **1975**, a little over seven years from now .. it will be 6,000 years since the creation of Adam, the father of all mankind! Are we to assume from this study that the battle of Armageddon will be all over by the autumn of **1975**, and the long-looked-for thousand-year reign of Christ will begin by then? Possibly, but we wait to see how closely the seventh thousand-year period of man's existence coincides with the Sabbath-like thousand-year reign of Christ.. Are we to assume from this study that the battle of Armageddon will be all over by the autumn of **1975**, and the long-looked-for thousand-year reign of Christ will begin by then? Possibly, but we wait to see how closely the seventh thousand-year period of man's existence coincides with the Sabbath like thousand-year reign of Christ. If these two periods run parallel with each other as to the calendar year, it will not be by mere chance or accident but will be according to Jehovah's loving and timely purposes. Our chronology, however, which is reasonably accurate (but admittedly not infallible), at the best only points to the autumn of **1975** as the end of 6,000 years of man's existence on earth. It does not necessarily mean that **1975** marks the end of the first 6,000 years of Jehovah's seventh creative 'day.' Why not? Because after his creation Adam lived some time during the 'sixth day,' which unknown amount of time would need to be subtracted from Adam's 930 years, to determine when the sixth seven-thousand-year period or 'day' ended, and how long Adam lived into the 'seventh day.' And yet the end of that sixth creative 'day' could end within the same Gregorian calendar year of Adam's creation. It may involve only a difference of weeks or months, not years.. This time between Adam's creation and the beginning of the seventh day, the day of rest, let it be noted, need not have been a long time. It could have been a rather short one. The naming of the animals by Adam, and his discovery that there was no complement for himself, required no great length of time.. One thing is absolutely certain, Bible chronology reinforced with fulfilled Bible prophecy shows that six thousand years of man's existence will soon be up, yes, within this generation! (Matt. 24:34) This is, therefore, no time to be indifferent and complacent. This is not the time to be toying with the words of Jesus that 'concerning that day and hour nobody knows, neither the angels of the heavens nor the Son, but only the Father.' To the contrary, it is a time when one should be keenly aware that the end of this system of things is rapidly

coming to its violent end. Make no mistake, it is sufficient that the Father himself knows both the 'day and hour.' .. There was a ring of alarm and a cry of urgency in all their [the apostles] writings.... And rightly so. If they had delayed or dillydallied and had been complacent with the idea the end was some thousands of years off they would never have finished running the race set before them." {WT Aug 15 1968 499501, in accordance with the Adam/Eve age-difference claims in AID 333/538}

**1975**

"It is just as a former United States Secretary of State noted in the June 13, 1960, issue of U.S. News & World Report. He declared that our time is 'a period of unequaled instability, unequaled violence,' and warned: 'I know enough of what is going on to assure you that, in 15 years from today, this world is going to be too dangerous to live in.' Fifteen years from 1960 brings us to 1975. He predicted that by 1975 this world would be too dangerous! Interestingly, this date is also the one indicated by the most reliable Bible research as marking the end of 6,000 years of rebellion of men and demons against God." {AWAK Jan 8 1968 19}

**1975**

".. as reported back in 1960, a former United States Secretary of State, Dean Acheson, declared that our time is 'a period of unequaled instability, unequaled violence.' and he warned: 'I know enough of what is going on to assure you that, in fifteen years from today, this world is going to be too dangerous to live in.'" {TLEL 9} [1960 + 15 = 1975; however TLEL 1981 ed 9 was amended so the words "and he warned: 'I know enough of what is going on to assure you that, in fifteen years from today,'" disappeared and in their place appeared "Based on what he knew was then going on in the world, it was his conclusion that soon "]

**1975**

"More recently, the book entitled "Famine-1975!" [by W. & P. Paddock, 1967, pp. 52, 55, 61.] said concerning today's food shortages: "Hunger is rampant throughout country after country, continent after continent around the undeveloped belt of the tropics and subtropics. Today's crisis can move in only one direction - toward catastrophe. Today hungry nations; tomorrow starving nations.. By 1975 civil disorder, anarchy, military dictatorships, runaway inflation, transportation breakdowns and chaotic unrest will be the order of the day in many of the hungry nations." {TLEL 88-9} [Elsewhere, the same source is quoted as stating "By 1975 a disaster of unprecedented magnitude will face the world. Famines, greater than any in history, will ravage the undeveloped nations."]

**1975**

"Making some special effort to do more than the usual helps us live up to our dedication. In view of the short period of time left, we want to do this as often as circumstances permit. Just think, brothers, there are only about ninety months left before 6,000 years of man's existence on earth is completed. . Do you remember what we learned at the assemblies last summer? The majority of people living today will probably be alive when Armageddon breaks out, and there are no resurrection hopes for those who are destroyed then. So, now more than ever, it is vital not to ignore that spirit of wanting to do more." {KMIN Mar 1968 4} [Mar 1968 + 90 months = Oct 1975]

**1975**

"The publications of Jehovah's witnesses have shown that, according to Bible chronology, it appears that 6,000 years of man's existence will be completed in the mid-1970's. But these publications have never said that the world's end would come then. Nevertheless, there has been considerable individual speculation on the matter." {WT Oct 15 1974 635}

**1975**

".. millions of people now living will see the 'day' of Christ's coming to mete out justice upon this system of things .." {WT Jan 1 1975 11}

**1975**

".. the Creator's promise of a new order of lasting peace and true security within our generation." {AWAK Jan 8 1975}

**1975**

"Another speaker, F. W. Franz, the Society's vice-president, forcefully impressed on the audience the urgency of the Christian preaching work. He stressed that, according to dependable Bible chronology, 6,000 years of human history will end this coming September according to the lunar calendar. This coincides with a time when "the human species [is] about to starve itself to death," as well as its being faced with poisoning by pollution and destruction by nuclear weapons. Franz added: 'There's no basis for believing that mankind, faced with what it now faces, can exist for the seventh thousand-year period' under the present system of things.' .. Does this mean that we know exactly when God will destroy this old system and establish a new one? Franz showed that we do not, for we do not know how short was the time interval between Adam's creation and the creation of Eve, at which point God's rest day of seven thousand years began (Heb. 4:3,4). But, he pointed out, 'we should not think that this year of 1975 is of no significance to us,' for the Bible proves that Jehovah is 'the greatest chronologist' and 'we have the anchor date, 1914, marking the end of the Gentile Times.' So, he continued, 'we are filled with anticipation for the near future, for our generation.' {WT May 1 1975 285} [tick tock, four months of 1975 over]

**1975**

"However, the Bible's time clock does indicate to us that 6,000 years of human history end in this year 1975.. Does this mean, then, that mankind has now reached 6,000 years into the 7,000 year period that God blessed and made sacred as his rest day? .. No, It does not mean that.. Well, the Bible record shows that God's creations on the 'day' just preceding that 7,000-year 'rest day' did not end with Adam's creation. It shows a time lapse between the creation of Adam and that of his wife, Eve. During that time, God had Adam name the animals. Whether that period amounted to weeks or months or years, we do not know." {WT Oct 1 1975 579} [tick tock]

**1975**

"Just think where we are in the stream of time! Its importance was deeply impressed on our minds back in 1966. God's people then received the absorbing book Life Everlasting - in Freedom of the Sons of God. It did not take long for most of them to note the

chronological chart in it that identified **1975** as the "end of 6th 1,000-year day of man's existence (in early autumn)." This certainly raised questions. Does this mean that Babylon the Great will go down by **1975**? Will Armageddon be over, with Satan bound, by then? 'It could,' acknowledged F. W. Franz, the Watch Tower Society's vice-president, .. ' .. And don't any of you be specific in saying anything that is going to happen between now and **1975**. But the big point of it all is this, dear friends: Time is short.'" {**YEAR 1975** 256}

**1975**  
"However, suddenly, there came an end to World War I. It did not lead on, as Bible students expected, into world revolution and anarchy or the battle of Armageddon. And the sincere worshippers of Jehovah who were in the new covenant with him through his Mediator Jesus Christ, found themselves still in the flesh on the earth." {MSWD 98} 1975

"'Morning' of seventh creative 'day' begins, 526 B.C.E. The first half or 'evening' period of God's seventh creative 'day' was now closing, 3,500 years from creation of Adam and Eve." {GEPT 131} [so another 2,500 years of the 6,000 would bring us to 1975]

**1975**  
".. this marked the beginning of a period of education in the written Word of God from the standpoint that Bible prophecy is best understood after it has been fulfilled. So there needed to be a correction of our previous views, and the surviving remnant of spiritual Israel needed to be readjusted to the postwar realities and opportunities.. This revised program of Bible education had a profound effect on the remnant. It oriented their work in the right direction." {MSWD 191}

**1975**  
"Jehovah's Witnesses have nothing in common with other religious groups and can never seek any affiliation with them." {AWAK Nov 22 1975} [In **1980**, the State of California informed Jimmy Swaggart Ministries that tax was due for religious books and tapes sold in the state since **1974**. The case was appealed to the United States Supreme Court. On June 22, **1989**, the Watchtower Bible & Tract Society filed an 'amicus curiae' (friend of the court) brief on behalf of Jimmy Swaggart Ministries (No. 88-1374 in the Supreme Court of the United States, October Term, **1988**). Others who acted similarly included the National Council of Churches and the Society for Krishna Consciousness. On January 17, **1990**, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled against them them declaring that the sales tax must be paid. 35 days later an official Society letter to (all) congregations failed to mention this but instead claimed set prices for literature items were being eliminated because 'By adopting a method of literature distribution based completely on donation, Jehovah's people are able to greatly simplify our Bible education work and separate ourselves from those who commercialize religion.' There has been rumoured legal collaboration in **1999** with the Church of Scientology in one or more countries of what used to be the Eastern bloc.]

**1975**  
"'Choosing the best way of life' .. In modern times such eagerness, commendable in itself, has led to attempts at setting dates for the desired liberation from the suffering and troubles that are the lot of persons throughout the earth. With the appearance of the book Life Everlasting in Freedom of the Sons of God, and its comments as to how appropriate it would be for the millennial reign of Christ to parallel the seventh millennium of mans existence, considerable expectation was aroused regarding the year **1975**. Unfortunately, however, along with such cautionary information, There were other statements published that implied that such realization of hopes by that year was more of a probability than a mere possibility. There were statements made then, and thereafter, stressing that this was only a possibility. It is to be regretted that these latter statements apparently overshadowed the cautionary ones and contributed to a buildup of the expectation already initiated .. In saying anyone, the Watchtower included all disappointed ones of Jehovah's Witnesses, hence including persons having to do with the publication of the information that contributed to the buildup of hopes centered on that date." {WT Mar 15 1980 17-8}

**1975**  
".. acknowledged the Society's responsibility for some of the disappointment a number felt regarding **1975**." {**YEAR 1980** 30-1}

**1975**  
"More recently, many Witnesses conjectured that events associated with the beginning of Christ's Millennial Reign might start to take place in **1975**. Their anticipation was based on the understanding that the seventh millennium of human history would begin then." {AWAK Jun 22 1995 9}

**1975**  
[NO MENTION!] {HIS2 Section 'Notable Dates' - Official **1993** version of WTBT's history of predictions}

**1975**  
"Following Adam's creation, and still within the sixth creative day, Jehovah appears to have been forming further animal and bird creations. Also, he had Adam name the animals, which would take some time, and he proceeded to create Eve. (Gen. 2:18-22; see also NW, **1953** Ed., footnote on vs. 19) Whatever time elapsed between Adam's creation and the end of the 'sixth day' must be subtracted from the 5,988 years in order to give the actual length of time from the beginning of the 'seventh day' until now." {ASII 286} [**1963** + (6000 - less than 5988) = more than **1975**, allowing an escape from the **1975** prediction. However, see below AID 333/538, also WT Aug 15 1968 499 - at most, an extra year] **1975**-

## **1975-1976**

**1975-1976**

"Adam at age 130 had a son, Seth .. Eve at age 130 had a son, Seth" {AID 333/538} [hence the difference in age between Adam and Eve is shown to be less than one year. So the postponement of the '1975 prediction' claimed in ASII 286 etc. can at most be more one year i.e. to 1976, as also claimed in WT Aug 15 1968 499. These previous statements are ignored in WT Jul 1976 436]

## 1976

1976  
"Although the time of Adam's creation can be determined, the beginning of God's 'rest day' cannot. This is so because there was a time lapse of unspecified length between Adam's creation and the creation of Eve. Not until after the creation of Eve did God's 'rest day' begin. The start of that day being unknown, its end is likewise unknown." {WT Jan 1 1976 30} [how then were predictions made on this basis in 1966 and with such confidence from 1968 to 1971?]

1976  
"Would not a failure to respond to direction from God through his organization really indicate a rejection of divine rulership?" {WT Feb 15 1976 214} [excusing therefore the imprudent and indiscreet actions re 1975. But compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct 1883 536}]

1976  
"They do not claim infallibility or perfection. Neither are they inspired prophets." {WT May 15 1976 297} [1975 prediction having just failed]

1976  
"He has put his word, his message of the hour, into the mouth of the spiritual remnant for them to confess openly before all the world, for their own salvation, and for that of responsive hearers." {SPIR 176} [So Society is not responsible for those who missed the few caveats re 1975]

1976  
"The very fact that, as part of Jehovah's secret, no one today is able to find out how much time Adam and later Eve lived during the closing days of the sixth creative period, so no one can now determine when six thousand years of Jehovah's present rest day come to an end. Obviously, whatever amount of Adam's 930 years was lived before the beginning of that seventh-day rest of Jehovah, that unknown amount would have to be added to the 1976 date." {WT Feb 1 1955 95}

1976  
"It is a serious matter to represent God and Christ in one way, then find that our understanding of the major teachings and fundamental doctrines of the Scriptures was in error, and then after that, to go back to the very doctrines that, by years of study, we had thoroughly determined to be in error. Christians cannot be vacillating - 'wishy washy' - about such fundamental teachings. What confidence can one put in the sincerity or judgment of such persons?" {WT May 15 1976 298}

1976  
"It may be that some who have been serving God have planned their lives according to a mistaken view of just what was to happen on a certain date or in a certain year. They may have, for this reason, put off or neglected things that they otherwise would have cared for. But they have missed the point of the Bible's warnings concerning the end of this system of things, thinking that Bible chronology reveals the specific date.. it is not advisable for us to set our sights on a certain date, neglecting everyday things we would ordinarily care for as Christians, such as things that we and our families really need. We may be forgetting that, when the 'day' comes, it will not change the principle that Christians must at all times take care of all their responsibilities. If anyone has been disappointed through not following this line of thought, he should now concentrate on adjusting his viewpoint, seeing that it was not the word of God that failed or deceived him and brought disappointment, but that his own understanding was based on wrong premises." {WT Jul 15 1976 440-1}

1976  
"Spirit of Life from God Entered into Them.. The announced purpose behind God's pouring out of his spirit upon all sorts of flesh was that the recipients thereof might prophesy. The facts substantiate that the remnant of Christ's anointed disciples have been doing that prophesying to all the nations for a witness in favor of God's kingdom. Logically, then, they must be the ones upon whom God's spirit has actually been poured out. That spirit is behind their worldwide preaching. Why argue about it?" {SPIR 148}

1976  
"No obstacle put in His way by the enemies will prove to be insurmountable for Jehovah. Just as at Mount Sinai He put his word in the mouth of his chosen people through the mediator Moses and thereafter he led them under the protective shadow of his hand into the Promised Land, so he has done for the remnant of spiritual Israel. He has put his word, his message of the hour, into the mouth of the spiritual remnant for them to confess openly before all the world, for their own salvation and for that of responsive hearers." {SPIR 175-6} [So the Society is not responsible for those who missed the very few caveats expressed re 1975]

## 1977

1977



".. many a person might decline blood simply because it is essentially an organ transplant that at best is only partially compatible with his own blood." {JWQB 41} [A most amazing 'medical' analogy!]

## 1978

1978

"Avoid bloodguilt from (1) eating blood [blood transfusions], (2) sharing in blood guilty organizations" {WT Jun 15 1978 25}

1978

"A WATCHTOWER enables a person to look far into the distance and announce to others what is seen. Likewise, this magazine, published by Jehovah's Witnesses, aids the reader to see what the future holds" {WT masthead for many years} [Therefore, a prophet]

1978

"[The generation of 1914 includes those who] "were able to observe" [the events of 1914] {WT Oct 1 1978} [The start of the change of the definition of the generation some of whom were promised by the Society to witness Armageddon before they died - see AWAK Oct 8 1968 13-4, where it had been those were able to witness "with understanding what took place" in 1914 who comprised the generation!]

## 1979

1979

"In the second issue of the Watch Tower [published Aug 1879], we expressed our confidence that it 'has .. Jehovah for its backer.'" {WT Jul 1 1979 4} ["we" shows that the same organization has been the publisher throughout, and that the early works of Russell are accepted, as {WT Dec 1 1990 19} asserts]

1979

"Is there any cause for us to lose faith in Jehovah's visible organization because of mounting difficulties in this world [e.g. its false prophecy about 1975] ? Those who believe that Jehovah will never desert his faithful witnesses answer, 'Absolutely not!' In demonstration of such faith, we will keep on sticking to it and working with it without slacking the hand. Our unwavering faith will be rewarded with victory and the crown of life!" {WT Mar 1 1979 18} 1979

[Of those living at the time of Armageddon, only Jehovah's Witnesses will be saved] {WT Feb 15 1979 30}

1979

"Because of this hope, the 'faithful and discreet slave' has alerted all of God's people to the sign of the times indicating the nearness of God's Kingdom rule. In this regard, however, it must be observed that this 'faithful and discreet slave' was never inspired, never perfect. Those writings by certain members of the 'slave' class that came to form the Christian part of God's Word were inspired and infallible, but that is not true of other writings since. Things published were not perfect in the days of Charles Taze Russell, first president of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society; nor were they perfect in the days of J.F. Rutherford, the succeeding president. The increasing light on God's Word as well as the facts of history have repeatedly required that adjustments of one kind or another be made down to the very present time. But let us never forget that the motives of this 'slave' were always pure, unselfish; at all times it has been well-meaning." {WT Mar 1 1979 24}

1979

"Partly because of eagerness to be alive when Jesus Christ reveals himself in glory, there have been believers throughout the centuries who began looking for a particular period or a year for the windup of the ungodly system of things. this has happened right down to these 'last days.' Since certain expectations were not realized, many stumbled and returned to the ways of the world. In fulfillment of Peter's words, even today we hear the voice of ridiculers. (2 Peter 3:3, 4)" {CBWL 169}

1979

"PUT FAITH in a VICTORIOUS ORGANIZATION" {WT Mar 1 1979 1} [were the victories all invisible, like the Parousia, Angelic communication, End of time of the Gentiles, Christ's rule, etc.? Also compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct 1883 536}]

## 1980

1980

"What, then, is the 'generation' that 'will by no means pass away until all these things occur'? It does not refer to a period of time, which some have tried to interpret as 30, 40, 70 or even 120 years, but, rather, it refers to people, the people living at the 'beginning of pangs of distress' for this condemned world system. It is the generation of people who saw the catastrophic events that broke forth in connection with World War I from 1914 onward. As indicated by an article on page 56 of U.S. News & World Report of January 14, 1980, 'If you assume that 10 is the age at which an event creates a lasting impression on a person's memory,' then there are today more than 13 million Americans who have a 'recollection of World War I.' And if the wicked system of this world survived until the turn of the century, which is highly improbable in view of world trends and the fulfillment of Bible prophecy, there would still be



survivors of the World War I generation. However, the fact that their number is dwindling is one more indication that 'the conclusion of the system of things' moving fast toward its end. In this connection, the magazine *The Economist* of March 15, **1980**, gave an interesting review of a book entitled 'The Generation of **1914**' by Robert Wohl. It made this significant remark: 'Eventually Mr. Wohl voices his own opinions about the generation of **1914**. In a terse and condensed last chapter he suggests that generations are not mathematically definable in terms of numbers of years, but cluster around major historical crises, of which the first world war is the supreme example.' This lines up very well with the Scriptural viewpoint that Jehovah's Witnesses take on 'the generation of **1914**.' Yes, there was a generation of people that was living in **1914**, and that saw the major historical changes from an era of comparative tranquility to the present era of war, lawlessness and ruination. Many who are now Jehovah's Witnesses were among them. Truly, **1914** marked 'the supreme example' of change, for that year set in motion the foretold 'beginning of pangs of distress' among the nations. Many persons are still alive who can tell us how catastrophically conditions on earth changed in the year **1914**. And the world continues to plunge into worse and worse trouble. We can be happy, therefore, for Jesus' assurance that there will be survivors of 'the generation of **1914**' - that this generation will not have completely passed away - when the 'great tribulation' rings down the curtain on this wicked world system." {WT Oct 15 **1980** 31} [Down from 15 years old in **1914** {AWAK Oct 8 **1968** 13-4} to 10 years old; also changing the **1914** reference to one of World War I, which for Americans lasted from **1917-18**. This yields another  $5 + 4 = 9$  years to the generation - apocalypse postponed, thanks to the Society. Except it was they who had promoted it in the first place]

**1980**  
"Has Mass Persuasion Affected You? The person most easily brainwashed is the 'normal,' average individual. Such a one is already conditioned to accept opinions of others rather than to form strong convictions of his own.. Do not go along with an idea just because your associates accept it. Make sure that the views you adopt are truthful.. 'He that is correcting the ridiculer is taking to himself dishonor, and he that is giving a reproof to someone wicked - a defect in him. Do not reprove a ridiculer, that he may not hate you. Give a reproof to a wise person and he will love you.' (Prov. 9:7, 8) No good purpose is served by debating or wrangling with someone bent on defending his personal opinion regardless of whether it is right or wrong.. Do not be tricked into thinking that you are missing out on something or that you are unduly restricted because you conform .. In some respects our minds are like a container of water. If one adds just a drop or two of ink, all the water quickly becomes colored." {AWAK Aug 1 **1980** 13-4} [Keep away from anyone who is able to convince you of your error in being a JW!]

**1980** "The actual depopulation of the whole of Palestine did not occur until the year 135 A.D. (corresponding to our year **1980**), .. It is possible that A.D. **1980** may have something of special interest for Fleshly Israel, but certainly not for us. It is 70 years beyond **1910**, the date when Pastor Russell gave his great witness to the Jewish people in the New York Hippodrome." {TFIM 61-2}

## **1981**

**1981**  
"From time to time, there have arisen from among the ranks of Jehovah's people those who, like the original Satan, have adopted an independent, faultfinding attitude. They do not want to serve 'shoulder to shoulder' with the worldwide brotherhood. Rather, they present a 'stubborn shoulder' to Jehovah's words. (Zech. 7:11, 12) Reviling the pattern of the 'pure language' that Jehovah has so graciously taught his people over the past century, these haughty ones try to draw the 'sheep' away from the one international 'flock' that Jesus has gathered in the earth. (John 10:7, 10, 16) They try to sow doubts and to separate unsuspecting ones from the bounteous 'table' of spiritual food spread at the Kingdom Halls of Jehovah's Witnesses, where truly there is 'nothing lacking.' (Ps. 23:1-6) They say that it is sufficient to read the Bible exclusively, either alone or in small groups at home. But, strangely, through such 'Bible reading,' they have reverted right back to the apostate doctrines that commentaries by Christendom's clergy were teaching 100 years ago." {WT Aug 15 **1981** 28-9} [compare "just use the Bible" {WR **1913** 5156}]

**1981**  
"Do We Need Help to Understand the Bible?.. OUR VIEW OF THE 'SLAVE'.. We can benefit from this consideration. If we have once established what instrument God is using as his 'slave' to dispense spiritual food to his people, surely Jehovah is not pleased if we receive that food as though it might contain something harmful. We should have confidence in the channel God is using. At the Brooklyn headquarters from which the Bible publications of Jehovah's Witnesses emanate there are more mature Christian elders, both of the 'remnant' and of the 'other sheep,' than anywhere else upon earth.. Jehovah is not pleased if we receive that food as though it might contain something harmful. We should have confidence in the channel God is using.. Jesus' disciples wrote many letters to Christian congregations, to persons who were already in 'the way of the truth'. But nowhere do we read that those brothers first, in a skeptical frame of mind, checked the Scriptures to make certain that those letters had Scriptural backing, that the writers really knew what they were talking about.. No question about it. We all need help to understand the Bible, and we cannot find the Scriptural guidance we need outside the 'faithful and discreet slave' organization.. the only channel [of] God's truth" {WT Feb 15 **1981** 19} [Also, see below - God was clearly not bright enough to write the Bible clearly, He needed the help of the WTBTs!]

**1981**  
"Any person who wants to survive into God's righteous new order urgently needs to come into a right relationship with [Jehovah's] earthly organization now.. come to Jehovah's organization for salvation .." {WT Nov 15 **1981** 16-7/21}[compare with "For the same

reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct 1883 536}}

**1981** "However, it may have seemed to some as though that path has not always gone straight forward. At times explanations given by Jehovah's visible organization have shown adjustments, seemingly to previous points of view. But this has not actually been the case. This might be compared to what is known in navigational circles as 'tacking.' By maneuvering the sails the sailors can cause a ship to go from right to left, back and forth, but all the time making progress toward their destination in spite of contrary winds.. No matter where we may live on earth, God's Word continues to serve as a light to our path and a lamp to our roadway as to our conduct and beliefs. (Ps. 119:105) But Jehovah God has also provided his visible organization, his 'faithful and discreet slave,' made up of spirit anointed ones, to help Christians in all nations to understand and apply properly the Bible in their lives. Unless we are in touch with this channel of communication that God is using, we will not progress along the road to life, no matter how much Bible reading we do." {WT Dec 1 1981 27}

**1981** [The Gospel preached since **1918** (about the enthronement of Christ in **1914**) is a "new Gospel", never before preached] {WT May 1 1981 17} [A new Gospel is an Addition to the Bible!]

## **1982**

**1982**

"The Bible not only foretold these things, but indicated that they would occur on a worldwide scale. Also, the Bible said that all these things would happen upon the generation that was alive in **1914**. Yet what were prominent world leaders foretelling just before **1914**? They were saying that conditions promising world peace were never more favorable. Yet the terrible troubles the Bible foretold began right on time, in **1914**! In fact, world leaders now say that **1914** was a turning point in history. After drawing attention to the many things that have marked the period from **1914** onward, Jesus said: 'This generation will by no means pass away until all these things [including the end of this system] occur.' (Matthew 24:34, 14) Which generation did Jesus mean? He meant the generation of people who were living in **1914**. Those persons yet remaining of that generation are now very old. However, some of them will still be alive to see the end of this wicked system. So of this we can be certain: Shortly now there will be a sudden end to all wickedness and wicked people at Armageddon." {YCLF 154}

**1982**

"Be as Men Who Are Facing Har-Magedon Unafraid.. In behalf of such right-hearted individuals Jehovah has considerably raised up his 'prophet to the nations.' .. In behalf of such individuals who at heart seek God's rule instead of man's rule, the 'prophet' whom Jehovah has raised up has been, not an individual man as in the case of Jeremiah, but a class. The members of this class are, like the prophet-priest Jeremiah, wholly dedicated to Jehovah God through Christ and, by the begetting of Jehovah's holy spirit, they have been made part of 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession' .. At this late date, there is a mere remnant of this 'prophet' class yet on earth." {WT Oct 1 1982 26-7}

**1982**

"God's people must treat his name as holy and make it known throughout the earth.. There is only one people that is really following Jesus' example in this regard. Their main purpose in life is to serve God and bear witness to his name, just as Jesus did. So they have taken the scriptural name 'Jehovah's Witnesses'." {YCLF 185}

**1982**

"Today, a remnant of this 'faithful slave' is still alive on earth. They occupy a position similar to that of Paul .. when that apostle said of the wonderful truths .. 'It is to us God has revealed them through his spirit.' .. How vital it is for everyone in God's family to submit loyally to the teachings and arrangements of the Great Theocrat, Jehovah, and his King-Son, Christ Jesus, as transmitted through the 'faithful slave' on earth." {WT Jun 1 1982 17 etc.}

**1982**

"Today people talk a lot about living together in peace, and have even set up a 'United Nations' organization. Yet people and nations are divided as never before. What is needed? The hearts of people need to change. But it is simply impossible for the governments of the world to perform such a miracle. The Bible's message about God's love, however, is doing it." {YCLF 183}

**1982**

"At the headquarters of Jehovah's Witnesses in Brooklyn, New York, there is a governing body of older Christian men from various parts of the earth who give the needed oversight to the worldwide activities of God's people. This governing body is made up of members of 'the faithful and discreet slave.' It serves as a spokesman for that faithful 'slave.' The men of that governing body, like the apostles and older men in Jerusalem, have many years of experience in God's service. But they do not rely on human wisdom in making decisions. No, being governed theocratically, they follow the example of the early governing body in Jerusalem, whose decisions were based on God's Word and were made under the direction of holy spirit." {YCLF 195}

**1982**

"[Jehovah's Witnesses live] in Satan's world, but still [are] no part of it." {YCLF 212}

**1982**

"Do not conclude that there are different roads, or ways, that you can follow to gain life in God's new system. There is only one. There was just one ark that survived the Flood, not a number of boats. And there will be only one organization - God's visible organization - that will survive the fast-approaching 'great tribulation.' It is simply not true that all religions lead to the same goal .. You must be part of Jehovah's organization, doing God's will, in order to receive his blessing of everlasting life." {YCLF 255} [but

"[The time period from **1914** until Armageddon is the] 'great tribulation.'" {WT Aug 15 **1935** 246-51}, so it began 68 years earlier, and cannot therefore be fast-approaching]

## **1983**

**1983**  
"A third requirement is that we be associated with God's channel, his organization. God has always used an organization.. To receive everlasting life in the earthly Paradise we must identify that organization and serve God as part of it." {WT Feb 15 **1983** 12} [compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct **1883** 536}]

**1983**  
"The Scriptures show that if we are part of any organization that is blood guilty before God, we must sever our ties with it if we do not want to share in its sins. (Rev. 18:4, 24: Mic. 4:3)" {UWTG 155}

**1983**  
"And just as in the first century there was only one true Christian organization, so today Jehovah is using only one organization. (Ephesians 4:4, 5; Matthew 24:45-47) Yet there are some who point out that the organization has had to make adjustments before, and so they argue: 'This shows that we have to make up our own mind on what to believe.' This is independent thinking. Why is it so dangerous? Such thinking is an evidence of pride. And the Bible says: 'Pride is before a crash, and a haughty spirit before stumbling.' (Proverbs 16:18) If we get to thinking that we know better than the organization, we should ask ourselves: 'Where did we learn Bible truth in the first place? Would we know the way of the truth if it had not been for guidance from the organization? Really, can we get along without the direction of God's organization?' No, we cannot!.. Fight against independent thinking." {WT Jan 15 **1983** 27} [compare with "For the same reasons that Jesus did not organize congregations while present with his disciples in the Jewish harvest, we do not consider expedient or necessary organizations even simple and unsectarian as those established by the apostles." {WR Oct **1883** 536}]

**1983**  
"Even though Witness youths are interested in a good education, they do not pursue schooling with the intention of obtaining prestige or prominence. Their main goal in life is to serve effectively as ministers of God, and they appreciate schooling as an aid to that end. So they generally choose courses that are useful for supporting themselves in the modern world. Thus, many may take vocational courses or attend a vocational school. When they leave school they desire to obtain work that will allow them to concentrate on their principle vocation, the Christian ministry." {SCHO 5}

**1983**  
"Avoid Independent Thinking .. How is such independent thinking manifested? A common way is by questioning the counsel that is provided by God's visible organization." {WT Jan 15 **1983** 22}

**1983**  
"Consider some of the other 'twisted things' used to mislead God's people today. On occasion opposers will question the various teachings that Jehovah's people hold in common. Often this becomes a debate about words, just as it was in the first century. (1 Timothy 6:3,4) They may also question the need for an organization to direct the minds of God's people. Their view is, God's spirit can direct individuals without some central, organized body of men giving direction. They will declare that all one needs to do is to read the Bible." {WT Mar 1 **1983** 25} [A wicked idea indeed]

**1983**  
"Although the overseers are imperfect men, there is no need for anyone in the congregation to hold back from being submissive since it is Jehovah's arrangement and he will hold the overseers responsible for their actions." {OAOM 39} [and if they commit child abuse?]

## **1984**

**1984**  
"Some of that 'generation [of **1914**]' could survive until the end of the century. But there are many indications that 'the end' is much closer than that!" {WT Mar 1 **1984** 18-9}

**1984**  
"Why not read other's literature? .. Witnesses do not go to people's doors searching for truth or enlightenment. Rather, they already have devoted countless hours learning the truth .. people who believe that 'there is good in all religions' might consider it narrow-minded to think otherwise.. Jehovah's Witnesses are not ignorant of others' beliefs. They have gained considerable basic knowledge of the doctrinal beliefs of religions [from] 'What Has Religion Done for Mankind?' as well as numerous articles in The Watchtower and Awake! [very unbiased information!] God's Word warns Christians that 'Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light. It is therefore nothing great if his ministers also keep transforming themselves into ministers of righteousness. But their end shall be according to their works.' (2 Corinthians 11:14, 15) Satan so successfully appeared as 'an angel of light' that he was able to deceive even a perfect human, Eve. (1 Timothy 2:14) So it would be foolhardy, as well as a waste of valuable time, for Jehovah's Witnesses to accept and expose themselves to false religious literature that is

designed to deceive. They have no intention of falling into the sad course of the Jews, whom Paul said 'exchanged the truth of God for the lie.'-Romans 1:25, NW; Revised Standard Version. Furthermore, some of the religious literature that people may urge Jehovah's Witnesses to read is written by, or contains the thoughts of, individuals who have apostatized. True Christians are commanded to shun such apostates.. not have been interested in listening to apostates, nor in obtaining any poisonous writings that these might distribute 'for the sake of dishonest gain.' Why finance their wickedness by buying their literature? (Titus 1:11) As loyal Christians .. holding appreciatively and loyally to the channel from which we first learned Bible truth." {WT May 1 1984 31} [None are so blind as those forbidden to see]

**1984**

"Is There Time Enough?.. These definitions embrace both those born around the time of a historic event and all those alive at that time. If Jesus used 'generation' in that sense and we apply it to **1914**, then the babies of that generation are now 70 years old or older. And others alive in **1914** are in their 80's or 90's, a few even having reached a hundred. There are still many millions of that generation alive. Some of them 'will by no means pass away until all things occur.' .. From a purely human viewpoint, it could appear that these developments could hardly take place before the generation of **1914** disappears from the scene. But fulfillment of all the foretold events affecting the generation of **1914** does not depend on comparatively slow human action. Jehovah's prophetic word through Christ Jesus is: 'This generation (of **1914**) will by no means pass away until all things occur.' (Luke 21:32) And Jehovah, who is the source of inspired and unfailing prophecy, will bring about the fulfillment of his Son's words in a relatively short time - Isaiah 46:9, 10; 55:10, 11" {WT May 15 1984 5-7} [all bracketed text is in original - INSERTING words into scripture!]

**1984**

"It is easy for the established churches of Christendom and other people to criticize Jehovah's Witnesses because their publications have, at times, stated that certain things could take place on certain dates. But is not such line of action in harmony with Christ's injunction to 'keep on the watch'? .. But is it not far preferable to make some mistakes because of overeagerness to see God's purposes accomplished..?" {WT Dec 1 1984 17-8}

**1984**

"The Catholic Church occupies a very significant position in the world and claims to be the way of salvation for hundreds of millions of people. Any organization that assumes that position should be willing to submit to scrutiny and criticism." {AWAK Aug 22 1984 28}

**1984**

"[God] has put his 'words', his message, into the mouths of his servants, for them to proclaim earthwide." {SURV 109}

**1984**

"So stay in that house, eating and drinking the things they provide, for the worker is worthy of his wages. Do not be transferring from house to house." {NWT Luke 10:7} [But this Scripture verse speaking against house-to-house work, is not quoted in the index of the **1984** NWT]

**1984**

"Generally rapists try to get a woman in some isolated place where people are not around. At times they have a weapon and threaten to use it if the victim does not co-operate. Should a Christian quietly submit? No.. the rapist is asking a person to break God's law by committing fornication. Under such circumstances a Christian is obligated to resist. -1 Corinthians 6:18.. 'If I gave in and he raped me, I would eventually die and have no hope of a resurrection.'" {AWAK Feb 22 1984 24-7}

**1984**

"Even the Watchtower Society's publications have been the subject of rumours - for example, that one of the artists had secretly been introducing pictures of demons into the illustrations, was subsequently found out and disfellowshipped.. Certainly, the rumour concerning the Society's publications was harmful, as well as slanderous. [But was it true?]" {WT Sep 1 1984 20}

## **1985**

**1985**

"It means reading the footnotes in Watchtower articles, some of which refer the reader to an older publication that provides a fuller explanation of a certain passage or prophecy. It requires digging deeper, putting forth effort to locate that older publication and then studying the pages referred to." {WT Jun 15 1985 12} [it is even more fruitful to study pages from older publications that were not referred to]

**1985**

"Recently the two questions addressed to baptismal candidates were simplified so that candidates could answer with full comprehension of what is involved in coming into intimate relationship with God and his earthly organization." {WT Apr 15 1987 12} [The 'simplification' was in **1985** from "(1) Have you repented of your sins and turned around, recognizing yourself before

Jehovah God as a condemned sinner who needs salvation, and have you acknowledged to him that this salvation proceeds from him, the Father, through his Son Jesus Christ? (2) On the basis of this faith in God and in his provision for salvation, have you dedicated yourself unreservedly to God to do his will henceforth as he reveals it to you through Jesus Christ and through the Bible under the enlightening power of the holy spirit?" {WT May 1 1973 280} to "The first question is: On the basis of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, have you repented of your sins and dedicated yourself to Jehovah to do his will? The second is: Do you understand that your dedication and baptism identify you as one of Jehovah's Witnesses in association with God's spirit-directed organization?" {WT Apr 15 1987 12}. So the pledge is now explicitly to/through the WTBTs. This is explicitly against the previously taught "A Christian, therefore, cannot be baptized in the name of the one actually doing the immersing or in the name of any man, nor in the name of any organization" {WT 1955 411}; "We do not dedicate ourselves to a religion, nor to a man, nor to an organization" {WT 1966 603}. So why this change in oath? To protect WTBTs against litigation from unfairly disfellowshipped persons - see the quotation for 1986 from {WT Apr 1 1986 30-1} - now the allegiance is at least partly to WTBTs and the unique teachings of it

**1985**  
"According to the Bible, when we deliberately put someone's life unnecessarily in danger, we could become bloodguilty. (Compare 1 Chronicles 11:17-19.)" {AWAK Jun 22 1985} [check the numerous GA excerpts for examples of the Society's bloodguilt through medical quackery]

**1985**  
"Christ as King did not immediately proceed to destroy all who refused to acknowledge Jehovah's sovereignty and himself as Messiah. Instead, as he had foretold, a global preaching work was to be done.. As King he would direct a dividing of peoples of all nations, those proving to be righteous being granted the prospect of everlasting life, and the wicked being consigned to everlasting cutting off in death .. In the meantime, the very difficult conditions foretold for 'the last days' would prevail .. Before the last members of the generation that was alive in 1914 will have passed off the scene, all the things foretold will occur, including the 'great tribulation' in which the present wicked world will end." {RFTS 97} [but "[The time period from 1914 until Armageddon is the] 'great tribulation.'" {WT Aug 15 1935 246-51}, so it began 68 years earlier, and cannot therefore be a future event in 1985]

**1985**  
"[Our] beliefs and practices are not new but are a restoration of first-century Christianity.. Jesus was [only] a perfect man .. not God in flesh" {RFTS 203/306}

## **1986**

**1986**  
".. how can you identify the true Christian congregation? By examining the Scriptures about the first-century Christian congregation and then by seeing who today follow the same pattern." {UDGW 5-7, 12-3, 26}

**1986**  
"You must search out and find the true, unhypocritical worship that will bring you God's peace and protection.. Does any such worship exist today? Millions have found it among Jehovah's Witnesses." {TPAS 33}

**1986**  
"Why you should resist an attacker from the first moment.. 5. Your conscience will be clear. (Even if you are raped, you will not sacrifice your self-respect or cleanness before God)" {AWAK May 22 1986 23}

**1986**  
"Shocking as it is, even some who have been prominent in Jehovah's organization have succumbed to immoral practices, including homosexuality, wife swapping, and child molesting. It is to be noted, also, that during the past year, 36,638 individuals had to be disfellowshipped from the Christian congregation, the greater number of them for practicing immorality." {WT Jan 1 1986 13}

**1986**  
"Now, what will you do if you are confronted with apostate teaching [picture of Witness throwing such literature into the garbage can as soon as received] - subtle reasonings - claiming that what you believe as one of Jehovah's Witnesses is not the truth? For example, what will you do if you receive a letter or some literature, open it and see right away that it is from an apostate? Will curiosity cause you to read it, just to see what he has to say? You may even reason: 'It won't affect me; I'm too strong in the truth. And, besides, if we have the truth, we have nothing to fear. The truth will stand the test.' In thinking this way, some have fed their minds upon apostate reasoning and have fallen prey to serious questioning and doubt.. Therefore, resolve in your heart that you will never even touch the poison that apostates want you to sip." {WT Mar 15 1986 12/20}[Interesting that the JW's 'Truth' does not stand the test!]

**1986**  
"Why have Jehovah's Witnesses disfellowshipped for apostasy some who still profess belief in God, the Bible and Jesus Christ? Approved association with Jehovah's Witnesses requires accepting the entire range of the true teachings of the Bible, including those Scriptural beliefs that are unique to Jehovah's Witnesses. What do such beliefs include? .. The Governing Body of Jehovah's Witnesses are the sole interpreters of the Bible.. That 1914 marked the end of the Gentile Times and the establishment of the Kingdom of God in the heavens, as well as the time for Christ's foretold presence.. Only 144,000 will go to heaven.. Armageddon is near, followed by the Paradise earth, where the rest of the Witnesses will live." {WT Apr 1 1986 30-1} [So failure to believe in C.T.Russell's writings would still in 1986 be grounds for disfellowshipping for apostasy. And compare with "We would not refuse to



treat one as a brother because he did not believe the Society is the Lord's channel.. If others see it in a different way, that is their privilege. There should be full liberty of conscience." {WT Apr 1 1920 100-1}}

**1986**  
"Prophetic information in the Bible about our day detail the following: .. The survival of at least some of the generation that saw the beginning of 'the conclusion of the system of things.'" {TPAS 70}

**1986**  
[1986 was declared by United Nations to be 'International Year of Peace' which caused much expectations with Witnesses about the expected declaration of "peace and security", a sign of the imminent end based on a special interpretation of 1Th 5:3] {WT Oct 1 1985}

**1986**  
"Would That All Were Prophets! .. You will be interested to learn that God has on earth a people, all of whom are prophets, or witnesses for God. In fact, they are known throughout the world as Jehovah's Witnesses" {AWAK Jun 8 1986 9}

## 1987

**1987**  
".. right from the beginning of the Christian congregation, Christ had the holy spirit, angels, and a visible governing body at his disposal to enable him actively to lead his disciples on earth.. the Jerusalem elders became a part of the governing body of the early Christian congregation, along with the 12 apostles." {WT Aug 1 1987 12-3} [no Scriptural reference, though, for "God via Governing Body"]

**1987**  
"Be careful that they don't get the impression that they are in a demonstration at the circuit assembly, when they would show that the first things in life are service and going to the Kingdom Hall. Show hobbies, crafts, social activity, sports, and especially plans for the future. Be careful they don't all say that they are going to be pioneers. Plans can be trade, getting married and having children, journalism, and all kinds of other things. Maybe you can show an interest in art and the theatre. They must be clean, moral, honest, but with the interests that you would expect from other young people." {CUST 42} [this from a long book advising on how to win child custody cases in the courts, which somehow does not contain a title page or copyright notice or anything showing it originated from the Society. Compare the advice with the assertion that Field service and Kingdom Hall activities should be "the most important thing in their lives" {WT Apr 1 1979 14}]

## 1988

**1988**  
Presumptuousness .. To Be Carefully Guarded Against.. The danger is great, therefore, and something to be closely guarded against. A presumptuous act is a much more serious sin than a mistake. Whether one is in a high position or a low one, the taking of liberties is a detestable thing in God's sight.. Presumptuousness leads to disastrous results; modesty will save a person. The wise man says: 'Has presumptuousness come? Then dishonor will come; but wisdom is with the modest ones.' (Pr 11:2). Disrespect for God's Sovereignty.. When a person acts presumptuously toward God he is showing disrespect for Jehovah's sovereignty and Godship. Those claiming to be his servants and misrepresenting him are most reprehensible. Of the false prophets, Jehovah said: 'The prophet who presumes to speak in my name a word that I have not commanded him to speak.. that prophet must die.. When the prophet speaks in the name of Jehovah and the word does not occur or come true, that is the word that Jehovah did not speak. With presumptuousness the prophet spoke it.'" De 18:20-22.. Matthew 7:15-16: Be on the watch for the false prophets that come to YOU in sheep's covering, but inside they are ravenous wolves.. By their fruits YOU will recognize them." Zechariah 13:3: And it must occur [that] in case a man should prophesy anymore, his father and his mother, the ones who caused his birth, must also say to him, 'You will not live, because falsehood is what you have spoken in the name of Jehovah.' And his father and his mother, the ones who caused his birth, must pierce him through because of his prophesying.' {INS2 680-1}

**1988**  
"The three essentials for establishing the credentials of a true prophet, as given through Moses, were: The true prophet would speak in Jehovah's name; the things foretold would come to pass (De 18:20-22); and his prophesying must promote true worship" {INS2 696}

**1988**  
"Parents - Reach Your Child's Heart From Infancy.. Why Train From Infancy?.. Timothy received instruction from the holy writings from as far back as his memory could reach, from the time when he was only a baby. And with what fine results! (Philippians 2:19-22) Yet, can newborn babies really benefit from such early teaching? The Faithful Slave even suggests we wisely consider the benefits of the unborn fetus's ability to learn, but especially stresses beginning instructing them from the moment they are born. Every parent who wants their child to become a model publisher in the Christian congregation should consider this wise counsel from the Faithful Slave.. parents can never start too early to instruct their children. (Deuteronomy 31:12) .. the young mind is especially malleable.. One of the best books a parent can start their child out with, the moment they enter this world as an infant, is .. published by the Watchtower Bible & Tract Society of New York.. Of course, the goal of Christian parents is {to ensure} that the

children never depart from serving God. (Proverbs 22:6) Such efforts need to be made long before the child enters school, in order to prepare him for the tests he will face there. Kindergarten or day-care programs, for instance, feature birthday and holiday parties that can be fun for children. So the child needs to understand why Jehovah's servants do not participate. Otherwise he may grow to hate his parents' religion. This last point is important to consider. If a child is not taught from infancy that some forms of 'having fun' are wrong, such as birthdays and holiday parties, they may grow to hate their parents' religion (which is adhering to the teachings of the Watchtower Society as one of Jehovah's Witnesses). This tragedy can be avoided with proper teaching from as early in the infant's life as possible.. the chapter explains that the only two birthday parties mentioned in the Bible were celebrated by pagans, who did not worship Jehovah, and that at each party 'someone's head was chopped off.' (Mark 6:17-29; Genesis 40:20-22) How can you use this information to reach your child's heart? Think about it.. 'His ability to quote scriptures makes him very effective in the house-to-house ministry, since many householders are amazed and cannot resist the offer of Bible magazines he presents. He has shared in this Christian service since he was three years old, and is now [at age 6] often more effective in placing Bible literature with people than my wife and I.' Awake!, January 22, **1965**, pages 3-4. Most parents in the truth dream of their children growing up to achieve these noteworthy goals in service.. The importance of having regular periods for teaching your children simply cannot be overemphasized.. He would follow.. verbally repeating the words after me.. when he was three we began to have him memorize .. Before our boy goes to bed I have him repeat .. A vital part of the program should be training in the public ministry from an early age." {WT Aug 1 **1988** 13-5} [Shocking, manipulative mind control of youngsters]

**1988**  
".. this does not mean that a person is under obligation to divulge truthful information to people who are not entitled to it. ... Evidently the course of Abraham, Isaac, Rahab, and Elisha in misdirecting or in withholding full facts from non-worshippers of Jehovah must be viewed in the same light. -Ge 12:10-19; chap 20 [Abraham lying to Pharoah and Abimelech]; 26:1-10 [Isaac lying to Abimelech]; Jos 2:1-6; Jas 2:25 [Rahab lying to king of Jericho]" {INS2 245} [Lying is O.K. - also see **1956-7, 1960, 1993**]

**1988**  
"Pride .. Pride Is Deceptive and Destructive. The proud person may not recognize that he is proud and may attribute his actions to other causes in order to avoid facing the fact of his pride. Each person should examine himself and his motives thoroughly to determine whether he has this bad trait. The apostle Paul shows the need for the right motive, and the knowledge a person should have of himself in this respect, when he says: 'If I give all my belongings to feed others, and if I hand over my body, that I may boast [kau·khe'so·mai], but do not have love, I am not profited at all.' -1Co 13:3." {INS2 682}

**1988**  
"You will find valuable information in the older publications." {KMIN Jan **1988** 7} [a fair selection of which appears above]

**1988**  
"Some young couples have decided to remain childless. Although the wives had maternal instincts just as strong as those in other women, they decided, in agreement with their husbands, to refrain from having children in order to devote themselves to serving Jehovah full-time. Many of them have served as pioneers or missionaries.. Many married couples throughout the world who have relinquished the joys of parenthood have been able to serve Jehovah in the circuit work, the district work, or at Bethel. [Remaining childless is a condition of continuing in these responsible positions] These likewise look back with satisfaction over their lives spent in serving Jehovah and their brothers in these special privileges. They have no regrets. While they have not had the joy of bringing children into the world, they have played a vital part in furthering Kingdom interests in their various fields of activity.. So the matter of childbearing in this time of the end is a personal one that each couple must decide for itself. However, since 'the time left is reduced,' married couples would do well to weigh carefully and prayerfully the pros and cons of child bearing in these times." {WT Mar 1 **1988** 25-6}

**1988**  
".. the clergy of Christendom have been the most prominent members of Satan's seed.. All her hundreds of millions of church members, if they continue to support Christendom's religion, become like scorched blades of grass, spiritually wilted in God's eyes.. No one looking at the fruits of the third of the world occupied by Christendom can deny that she is groping in gross spiritual darkness. She is most blameworthy, for she claims to be Christian. Hence, it is only proper that the fourth angel should trumpet the fact that Christendom's 'light' is, in fact, darkness, and her sources of 'light' are Babylonish-non-Christian.. Christendom is truly the most reprehensible part of Satan's system of things.. In other places, the Kingdom literature continues to expose Christendom's Babylonish doctrines and ways, bringing her deserved harm in a figurative way." {REVE 30/134/140-1/154}

**1988**  
"And in response one of the elders said to me: 'These who are dressed in the white robes, who are they and where did they come from?' So right away I said to him 'My lord, you are the one that knows.' (Revelation 7:13, 14a) Yes, that elder could locate the answer and give it to John. This suggests that resurrected ones of the 24-elders group may be involved in the communicating of divine truths today." {REVE 125} [This is belief in the spirit medium. Note who creates such ideas: "Now Satan knows that his time is very short until the great fight at Armageddon takes place, and he hastens to drive all men into spiritism or devilism and therefore against God; and for that reason at the present time there is a great turning to spiritism and spirit mediums throughout the land." {RICH 101}. The Society has thus proven - by its own logic - that Satan drives it]

## 1989

1989

"Before the 1914 generation completely dies out, God's judgment must be executed." {WT May 1 1985 4}

1989

"Most of the generation of 1914 has passed away. However, there are still millions on earth who were born in that year or prior to it. Jesus' words will come true, 'this generation will not pass away until all these things have happened.. J. A. Bengel states in his New Testament Word Studies: 'The Hebrews. . . reckon seventy-five years as one generation, and the words, shall not pass away, intimate that the greater part of that generation [of Jesus' day] indeed, but not the whole of it, should have passed away before all should be fulfilled.'" {WT Apr 8 1988 14 [1914 + 75 = 1989 even if babies born in 1914 were included!]

1989

"In the early part of our 20th century prior to 1919, the Bible Students, as Jehovah's Witnesses were then known, had to be released from a form of spiritual captivity to the ideas and practices of false religion. Although having rejected such false teachings as the Trinity and immortal soul, they were still tainted by Babylonish practices. Many had developed a self-righteous attitude in character development. Some were exalting creatures, indulging in a personality cult that focused on Charles T. Russell, the first president of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society. Without any Biblical basis, they were observing birthdays and Christmas. the cross was still prominent in their thinking. Some even wore a cross-and-crown lapel emblem, while others sought the respectability accorded Christendom." {WT May 1 1989 3}

1989

"Back in 1904, the book The New Creation called attention to this new organization that came into existence in the first century C.E. (Studies In The Scriptures, Series VI, Study V, entitled 'The Organization of the New Creation') Owing to its view of what the end of the Gentile Times would mean, that book did not envision the remarkable organizational work that was due to take place after the crippling effects of the first world war of human history." {WT Sep 1 1989 12-3}

1989

"Are You Open to New Ideas?.. Some people close their mind to any new idea. They may reject it because it differs from their viewpoint.. many Jews harbored an unreasoning prejudice against Christian teachings. In some ways, it resembled the prejudice of seclusionist Japanese against the outside world.. Nevertheless, there were people willing to look beyond their prejudices.. Yes, overcoming prejudice and examining new ideas can widen our horizon and may benefit us in other ways. However, does that mean that we have to be open to every new idea that comes along? What can we learn from this? That we should be selective about accepting new ideas.. Rather than blindly accepting every new idea presented to us, we need to do careful and exact research, just as a judge would in hearing a legal case. If we are selective, we will not be swayed by every passing fad or by new ideas that are really harmful.. So do not adopt a seclusionist attitude when the Witnesses call at your home. Rather, why not open your door and listen to what they have to say? Do not close your mind to ideas that can be of eternal benefit to you." {WT Jan 15 1989 5-7} [In accordance with Scripture, JW's are strongly advised to follow their own advice and STUDY this List with an open mind!]

1989

"They have a modern Governing Body of older Christian men from various parts of the earth who give needed oversight to the worldwide activities of God's people. these men, like the apostles and older men in Jerusalem in the first century, are anointed members of the faithful and discreet slave class designated by Jesus to care for all of his Kingdom interests here upon earth. History has proved that they can be trusted to follow the direction of the holy spirit and that they do not rely on human wisdom in teaching the flock of God the ways of genuine peace." {WT Dec 15 1989 6}

## 1990

1990

"Adult Christians too can be disappointed, and this has in some cases led to spiritual disaster. Some set their hope on a date when they were sure Armageddon would come. When nothing happened on that day, they felt let down." {WT Apr 15 1990 27}

1990

"identifying themselves with Jehovah's organization is essential to their salvation." {KMIN Nov 1990 1}

1990

"We cannot take part in any modern version of idolatry - be it worshipful gestures toward an image or symbol or the imputing of salvation to a person or an organization." {WT Nov 1 1990 26} [The name of one of the centres for Jeroboam to worship golden calves was "Bethel" (1 Kings 12:28-33)]

1990

".. there are common threads going through the confused tapestry of the world's religions. Many religions have their roots in mythology. Nearly all are tied together by some form of belief in a supposed immortal human soul that survives death and goes to a hereafter or transmigrates to another creature. Many have the common denominator of belief in a dreadful place of torment and torture called hell. Others are connected by ancient pagan beliefs in triads, trinities, and mother goddesses. Therefore, it is only appropriate that they should all be grouped together under the one composite symbol of the harlot 'Babylon the Great.'" {MSFG 369-70}

1990

"For over a century, delightful, correct words of truth covering every aspect of life have been presented in the Watch Tower Society's publications .." {WT Dec 15 1990 26} [i.e. since 1890, when C. T. Russell was in the middle of publishing the Studies in Scriptures etc. - check them out above]

**1990**  
".. show love for our brothers who take the lead in the congregation or in connection with Jehovah's visible organization worldwide. This includes being loyal to 'the faithful and discreet slave.' [of Brooklyn] (Matthew 24:45,47) Let us face the fact that no matter how much Bible reading we have done, we would never have learned the truth on our own." {WT Dec 1 1990 19}

## 1991

**1991**  
"But we are as strong for it as we ever were, and we are appreciating it all the more the longer we have to wait for it. It is something worth waiting for, even if it required a million years." {WT Dec 15 1991 11} [so 1799, 1874-8, 1910, 1914, 1915, 1918, 1925, 1929, 193x, 194x, 1975-6, pre-2000 is now postponed to 1,001,991 A.D.?]

**1991**  
"The present-day fulfillments of these and other prophecies prove that we are indeed living in "the last days." {WT Jul 15 1991 5} [these last days do.. last!]

**1991**  
"There is no allowance in this language for lying, deceit, or a tricky tongue. Those who speak this language must always speak truth." {WT Apr 1 1991 24}

**1991**  
"If we are Jehovah's Witnesses, we should remember that our life and the lives of others depend upon our obedience. (1 Timothy 4:15, 16) Each Witness needs to keep pace with Jehovah's organization." {WT Mar 15 1991 15}

**1991**  
"After many years of service to Jehovah, one brother said 'If one thing has been most important to me, it has been the matter of keeping close to Jehovah's visible organization. My early experience taught me how unsound it is to rely on human reasoning. Once my mind had been resolved on that point, I determined to stay by the faithful organization. How else can one get Jehovah's favor and blessing?' Do you similarly cherish your privilege of serving Jehovah with his joyful people? (Psalm 100:2) If so, you will let nothing draw you away from God's organization or destroy your relationship with the One whose arm saves all who love him." {WT Oct 1 1991 10}

**1991**  
"A God-fearing man named Charles Taze Russell separated himself from mainstream theology and began publishing this very journal - The Watch Tower." {WT Feb 15 1991 7} [the Society believes its followers are ignorant of all those past misfortunes?]

**1991**  
"['Awake' is] for the enlightenment of the entire family. It shows how to cope with today's problems, It reports the news, tells about people in many lands, examines religion and science. But it does more. It probes beneath the surface and points to the real meaning behind current events, yet it always stays politically neutral and does not exalt one race above another. Most important, this magazine builds confidence in the Creator's promise of a peaceful and secure new world before the generation that saw the events of 1914 passes away." {AWAK Feb 22 1991 4}

**1991**  
"In case of a natural disaster, arrange to provide comfort spiritually and to assist the brothers physically and materially. (w73 3/1 pp. 134-5; w73 2/1 pp. 95-6)" {PAYF} [and who looks after those not in the Society?]

**1991**  
"Marrying an unbeliever is contrary to Bible principles. (Deut. 7:3,4; 1 Cor. 7:39; 2 Cor. 6:14,15). If a dedicated, baptized Christian marries an unbeliever, this would result in disqualification from all special privileges for the time being. (1 Tim. 3:2,4,5,12,13; w82 3/15 p. 31)" {PAYF}

**1991**  
"A religion that teaches lies cannot be true." {WT Dec 1 1991 7}

## 1992

**1992**  
"The Year That Shocked The World.. Today, a small percentage of mankind can still recall the dramatic events of 1914. Will that elderly generation pass away before God saves the earth from ruin? Not according to Bible prophecy. 'When you see all these things,' Jesus PROMISED, 'know that he is near at the doors. Truly I say to you that THIS generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur.' - Matthew 24:33, 34." {WT May 1 1992 3}

**1992**

"Hailing God's New World of Freedom' .. the global work of witnessing about God's Kingdom is strong evidence that we are near the end of this wicked system and that true freedom is at hand. The ones calling on people with the hope-filled message of God's new world are described at Acts 15:14 as 'a people for [God's] name.' Who bear Jehovah's name and give the global witness about Jehovah and his Kingdom? The historical record of the 20<sup>th</sup> century answers: only Jehovah's Witnesses. Today they number more than four million in more than 66,000 congregations all over the world." {WT Apr 1 1992 12}

**1992**

"Before the 1914 generation passes away, the Kingdom-preaching work will have accomplished its purpose." {WT May 1 1992 7}

**1992**

"The Watchtower.. Since 1879 this magazine has grown in circulation to over 15 million copies semimonthly in 111 languages. It directs individuals to the Bible's promise that some of the generation of 1914 will be alive to see good physical and spiritual health restored to mankind. (Isaiah 33:24) The entire earth will be transformed into a paradise by millions of willing volunteers. (Psalm 37:29)" {WT Aug 15 1992 9}

**1992**

"In the present system of things under Satan's control, there are many things that may seem to promise fine benefits but can actually be damaging to our relationship with God. Such things as climbing the corporate ladder, pursuing higher education to advance one's position, courting unbelievers, or engaging in questionable business schemes can easily lead to a loss of faith and an eventual fall from Jehovah's favor. We must carefully count the cost when confronted with such temptations. A few years ago, a young Christian man in a large city in the Far East had the opportunity to go abroad to further his study. Though he already had a good secular education and a well-paying job, he felt that this was not enough; he wanted to better his lot in life. Fellow Christians tried to reason with him in line with the Scriptural points we have just considered, but he was adamant and went ahead with the plan. Though he tried to hold on to his faith at first, gradually he lost his appreciation for Bible truth, and doubt began to set in. In just a year or so, he lost his faith completely and claimed to be an agnostic." {WT Aug 15 1992 28-9}

**1992**

"This magazine has placed emphasis on the dangers of higher learning, and justifiably so, for much higher education opposes the 'healthful teaching' of the Bible." {WT Nov 1 1992 16-20}

**1992**

"Christians should regard education as a means to an end. In these last days, their purpose is to serve Jehovah as much and as effectively as possible. If, in the country where they live, minimal or even high school education will only allow them to find jobs providing insufficient income to support themselves as pioneers, then supplementary education or training might be considered. This would be with the specific goal of full-time service." {WT Nov 1 1992 18} [compare with "In view of the short time left, a decision to pursue a career in this system of things is not only unwise but extremely dangerous .. Many young brothers and sisters were offered scholarship or employment that promised fine pay. However, they turned them down and put spiritual interests first." {KMIN Jun 1969 3} and also "Reports are heard of brothers selling their homes and property and planning to finish out the rest of their days in this old system in the pioneer service. Certainly this is a fine way to spend the short time remaining before the wicked world's end." {KMIN May 1974 3}. What a volte face!]

**1993**

**1993**

"Jehovah's Witnesses, in their eagerness for Jesus' second coming, have suggested dates that turned out to be incorrect.. Never did they say, "These are the words of Jehovah."" {AWAK Mar 22 1993 4}

**1993**

"What about Rahab's misleading words [lies, actually] to pursuers of the spies? God approved of her course. (Compare Romans 14:4) She took a risk in order to protect his servants, giving evidence of her faith.. a person is not obligated to divulge truthful information.. Even Jesus Christ did not give full details or direct answers when doing so could have brought unnecessary harm. (Matthew 7:6; 15:1-6; 21:23-27; John 7:3-10) Evidently, Rahab's course of misdirecting the enemy officers must be view in that light." {WT Dec 15 1993 25} [In line with teachings from 1956-7, 1960 and 1988 - on this subject, the Society is steadfast. Lying can be Good]

**1993**

"True Christians share Jehovah's feelings toward such apostates; they are not curious about apostate ideas. On the contrary, they 'feel a loathing' toward those who have made themselves God's enemies, but they leave it to Jehovah to execute vengeance." {WT Oct 1 1993 19}

**1993**

"Jehovah's Witnesses are accused by their enemies of breaking up families. True, there are cases of families that become divided when one or more members become Jehovah's Witnesses.. If a mixed marriage breaks up, the initiative almost always comes from the non-Witness partner." {WT Jul 1 1993 15}

**1993**



"connecting a computer to an electronic bulletin board [the more modern equivalent being the Internet] can open the way to serious spiritual dangers. Just as an unscrupulous individual can place on a bulletin board a virus - a program designed to corrupt and destroy computer files - apostates, clergymen, and persons seeking to corrupt others morally or otherwise can freely place their poisonous ideas on bulletin boards. Unless a bulletin board, even one labeled 'JW Only,' is properly supervised, with its use being limited to those who are mature, faithful servants of Jehovah, it could expose Christian users to 'bad associations.' (1 Cor. 15:33) The Society has received reports that such so-called private networks have been used not only to speculate regarding spiritual matters but also to give bad advice, spread gossip and false information, plant negative ideas, raise questions and doubts that subvert the faith of some, and disseminate private interpretations of Scripture. On the surface, some information may appear to be Interesting and informative, and yet it may be laced with poisonous elements. Christians look to 'the faithful and discreet slave' for timely spiritual food and for clarifications." {WT Aug 1 1993 17} [How much more powerful Satan must be, to be such a great danger!]

## 1994

**1994**  
"It is not reasonable to expect that present favorable conditions for preaching the good news will continue indefinitely. [Not with the arrival of the Internet - see above!] Besides, did not Jesus say that this generation will not pass away until all things are fulfilled? A generation, according to Psalm 90:10, is from seventy to eighty years. The generation that witnessed the end of the Gentile Times in **1914** does not have many more years left." {WT Dec 1 1968 715} [**1914** + 80 = **1994**]

**1994**  
"Eager to see the end of this evil system, Jehovah's people have at times speculated about the time when the 'great tribulation' would break out, even tying this to calculations of what is the lifetime of a generation since **1914**. However, we bring a heart of wisdom in, not by speculating about how many years or days makeup a generation, but by thinking about how we 'count our days' in bringing joyful praise to Jehovah.. Therefore, in the final fulfillment of Jesus' prophecy today, 'this generation' apparently refers to the peoples of earth who see the sign of Christ's presence but fail to mend their ways .. Does our more precise viewpoint on 'this generation' mean that Armageddon is further away than we had thought? Not at all! Though we at no time have known the 'day and hour,' Jehovah God has always known it, and he does not change." {WT Nov 1 1995 18-20} [Generation of **1914** + 80 (upper end of predictions for length of a generation per WT Dec 1 1968 715) = **1994**]

**1994**  
"Webster's unabridged dictionary gives, in part, this definition of generation: 'The average lifetime of man, or the ordinary period of time at which one rank follows another, or father is succeeded by child; an age. A generation is usually taken to be about 33 years.' But the Bible is not so specific. It gives no number of years for a generation. And in Matthew 24:34, Mark 13:30 and Luke 21:32, the texts mentioning the generation the question refers to, we are not to take generation as meaning the average time for one generation to be succeeded by the next, as Webster's does in its 33-year approximation; but rather more like Webster's first-quoted definition, 'the average lifetime of man.' Three or even four generations may be living at the same time, their lives overlapping. (Ps. 78:4; 145:4) Before the Noachian flood the life span was hundreds of years. Down through the centuries since, it has varied, and even now is different in different countries. The Bible does speak of a man's days as being threescore and ten or fourscore years; but it assigns no specific number of years to a generation. - Ps. 90:10.. To try to say how many years before its end would be speculative. The texts merely set a limit that is sufficiently definite for all present practical purposes. Some persons living A.D. **1914** when the series of foretold events began will also be living when the series ends with Armageddon. All the events will come within the span of a generation. There are hundreds of millions of persons living now that were living in **1914**, and many millions of these persons could yet live a score or more years. Just when the lives of the majority of them will be cut short by Armageddon we cannot say." {WT Sep 1 1952 542-3} [**1914** + at least fourscore >= **1994**]

**1994**  
"From a purely human viewpoint, it could appear that these developments could hardly take place before the generation of **1914** disappears from the scene. But fulfillment of all the foretold events affecting the generation of **1914** does not depend on comparatively slow human action. Jehovah's prophetic word through Christ Jesus is: 'This generation (of **1914**) will by no means pass away until all things occur.' (Luke 21:32) And Jehovah, who is the source of inspired and unfailing prophecy, will bring about the fulfillment of his Son's words in a relatively short time." {WT May 15 1984 6}

**1994**  
"Bible prophecies indicate that Satan's world has been in its last days for nearly 80 years now, since the pivotal year **1914**. This world is nearing its end." {WT Mar 15 1994 20} [30,000 last days?]

**1994**  
"Channel to understanding the Bible.. All who want to understand the Bible should appreciate that the 'greatly diversified wisdom of God' can become known only through Jehovah's channel of communication, the faithful and discreet slave." {WT Oct 1 1994 8}

**1994**  
"Does the Bible Discourage Freedom Of Thought?" {AWAK Jun 8 1994 20-22} [This article sets out to justify the view that to have thoughts at odds with those of the WTBS is to be out of harmony with God - it has to be read as a whole; a subtle work]

**1994**

"Other Bible prophecies confirm that this would occur during the last days of the wicked system. That is where we are, in the conclusion of the system of things." {WT Apr 15 1994 11}

## 1995

1995  
"By now, in this latter part of 'the last days,' the great majority of the 144,000 have died and received their heavenly reward." {WT Jul 1 1995 15}

1995  
"Many divinely inspired Bible prophecies are being fulfilled today - a number of them on the Christian congregation." {WT Sep 1 1995 17} [see AWAK Nov 8 1995 below]

1995  
"Why Awake! is Published.. Most important, this magazine builds confidence in the Creator's promise of a peaceful and secure new world before the generation that saw the events of 1914 passes away." {AWAK for seven and a half years up to Oct 22 1995}

1995  
"Why Awake! is Published.. Most important, this magazine builds confidence in the Creator's promise of a peaceful and secure world that is about to replace the present wicked, lawless system of things." {AWAK from Nov 8 1995} [reference to '1914 generation' deleted]

1995  
"Rather than providing a rule for measuring time, the term 'generation' as used by Jesus refers principally to contemporary people of a certain historical period, with their identifying characteristics." {WT Nov 1 1995 17} [cutting the link to the promise that the generation of 1914 will see Armageddon, and preparing the reader for the change to the declaration in AWAK]

## 1996

1996  
"Do You Have a Godly View of Alcoholic Beverages? A report from one European country indicates that at times some brothers and sisters arrive at the Kingdom Hall with a strong smell of alcohol on their breath. This has disturbed the consciences of others." {WT Dec 15 1996 29} [Alcohol is actually the best friend of the WTBTs. Only when one is intoxicated does much WTBTs literature make sense]

## 1997

1997  
"Modesty on the part of the faithful and discreet slave class, commissioned to provide the Christian household with food at the proper time, prevents it from presumptuously running ahead and wildly speculating about things that are still unclear. The slave class strives to avoid being dogmatic. It is not too proud to admit that as of now it cannot answer every question, keeping Proverbs 14:18 clearly in mind. But how thrilling to know that Jehovah, in his own due time and in his own way, will continue to reveal his secrets as to his purposes! Never should we become impatient with Jehovah's arrangement, indiscreetly trying to rush ahead of the Revealer of secrets. How reassuring it is to know that the channel Jehovah is using today does not do so! It is both faithful and discreet." {WT June 1 1997 14}

1997  
"As regards the alleged involvement of children, the [WatchTower Bible and tract Society] submits that children cannot become members of the association but only participate, together with their parents, in the religious activities of the community. In respect of the refusal of blood transfusion, the applicant association submits that there are no religious sanctions for a Jehovah's Witness who chooses to accept blood transfusion and that, therefore, the fact that the religious doctrine of Jehovah's Witnesses is against blood transfusion cannot amount to a threat to public health." {Sworn testimony submitted by the Society in evidence before the European Human Rights Commission Jul 3 1997} [An astounding pair of.. 'declarations']

## 1998

1998  
".. do some spiritual digging in order to begin getting the very knowledge of Jehovah's heavenly organization" {WT Jun 15 1998} [This list is a better start than the Official CD - which has much mysteriously missing, and only starts with 1950 - or their indexes. Even the NWT 1984 'index' seems suspect]

1998  
"We should.. gratefully accept.. counsel [from the] 'faithful slave' [on] our choice of music and entertainment.. we are grateful that the 'faithful and discreet slave' continues to help us.." {WT Jul 15 1998 13-4}

**1998**

"That 'slave' made up of anointed Christians, provides the very best of spiritually good things - accurate, Bible-based knowledge that can lead to eternal life" (WT Sep 1 1998 11)

**1999**

**1999**

"Since sterilization procedures are now said to be reversible on request, might a Christian view them as [an acceptable] birth-control option? .. Christians [should] shape their thinking and deeds by God's esteem for reproductive potential. (1 Timothy 3:2; Titus 1:8; 2:2, 5-8) This would reflect mature sensitivity to Scriptural indications. Yet, what if it became publicly known that a Christian blithely disregarded God's evaluations? Would not others doubt whether he (or, she) was a good example, having a reputation of making decisions in harmony with the Bible? Such a disturbing blemish on one's reputation could, of course, affect a minister's being qualified for special privileges of service.." {WT Jun 15 1999 27-8} [So no change since WT 1975 158-60. A vasectomy without serious medical cause in 1999 is a disturbing blemish on one's reputation in the eyes of the Society, carrying with it sanctions]

**1999**

"The apostle Paul was spearheading the Christian missionary activity. He was also laying a foundation for a work that would be completed in our 20th century." {WT Jan 1 1989 12} [bound volume changed "20th century" to "day"] 1999 ".. there are many indications that 'the end' is much closer than that [the turn of the century]" {WT Mar 1 1984 18-9}

**1999**

"Shortly, within our twentieth century, the 'battle in the day of Jehovah' will begin against the modern antitype of Jerusalem, Christendom." {TNSK 216}

**2000**

**2000**

"For the year 2000, I visualize a world transformed into a beautiful paradise! But I don't think that either the present world or its rulers will live to see that day.. We are living in the last days of the system of things." {AWAK Nov 8 1986 78}

**2000-2001**

"If the wicked system of this world survived until the turn of the century [the year 2001 ?], which is highly improbable in view of world trends and the fulfillment of Bible prophecy, there would still be survivors of the World War I generation. However, the fact that their number is dwindling is one more indication that 'the conclusion of the system of things' is moving fast toward its end." {WT Oct 15 1980 31} You are kindly invited to look up the references at your local Kingdom Hall

## **KEY TO INTERPRETATION**

EXAMPLE QUOTATION "1776" is the year the year to which the claim refers. Where no specific date is claimed, the earliest date of publication by WTBTs of the quoted text is shown. The list is sorted by this date. The section following that, within " ", is the quotation. Anything within brackets ( ) therein was also bracketed in the original. Anything in " " within the quoted text has been altered to ' ' for clarity. Text has only been omitted for brevity, without changing the meaning of the quotation - omitted text is replaced by .. The source publication is identified in { } - here BATT refers "C. T. Russell: Studies in the Scriptures IV - Battle of Armageddon (till 1910, called The Day of Vengeance), 1897, 1904-20, 1923-5, 1927". The key-list of publications appears at the end of Part 3/3. As no date is shown against the abbreviated name, the quotation is present in the earliest version (and is likely to be present in all versions, as there is no reference to the contrary). 584 refers to the page number on which the quotation is to be found in the version referred to. Text within [ ] represents (my) commentary. It may well contain other quotations in " ".

List of abbreviations used for Watchtower publications referred to:

ALL publications are by The Watchtower Bible And Tract Society (Organization of Jehovah's Witnesses)

*ABGM C. T. Russell: - The At-One-Ment Between God and Man 1888-1923*

*AIDA Aid to Bible Understanding A - Exodus, 1969*

*AIDB Aid to Bible Understanding, 1971*

*APTY The Approaching Peace of a Thousand Years, 1969*

*ARMA J. F. Rutherford: Armageddon the Greatest Battle of all Time, 1937*

*ASII All Scripture is inspired of God and Beneficial, 1963, 1983, 1990*

*AWAK Awake!*

*BABY Babylon the Great Has Fallen! God's Kingdom Rules!, 1963, 1981*

*BATT C. T. Russell: Battle of Armageddon 1897- 1927*

*BBTM Berean Bible Teacher's Manual, 1907-8*

*BERE Berean Bible Helps, 1917*

*BMLG Blood, Medicine, and the Law of God, 1961*

*BOPW Branch Office Procedure of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania, 1958*

*BRWG Is the Bible Really the Word of God?, 1969*

*BSM C. J. Woodworth: Bible Student's Manual, 1909*

*BSYF How Can Blood Save Your Life, 1990*

*CBWL Choosing The Best Way Of Life, 1979*

*CENT Centennial of the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania, 1984*

*CHIL J. F. Rutherford: Children, 1941*

*CLTD J. F. Rutherford: Can the Living Talk With the Dead?, 1920*

*COLJ Commentary on the Letter of James, 1979*

*COMF J. F. Rutherford: Comfort For The Jews, 1925*

*CONC Comprehensive Concordance of the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures, 1973*

*CONS Consolation*

*CREA J. F. Rutherford: Creation, 1927, 1939*

*CUST Direct and Cross-Examination Questions in Child Custody Cases, 1991*

*DELI J. F. Rutherford: Deliverance, 1926*

*DHMB G. W. Siebert: Daily Heavenly Manna and Birthday Record, 1905, 1907*

*DMGH Did Man Get Here By Evolution Or By Creation?, 1967, 1985*

*DOTL The Day of the Lord, 19??*

*DPOA C. T. Russell: The (Divine) Plan of the Ages, 1886-1927*

*EEGW Equipped for Every Good Work, 1946*

*ENEM J. F. Rutherford: Enemies, 1937*

*EVOL The Bible versus The Evolution Theory, 1898*

*FATF J. F. Rutherford: Face the Facts, 1938*

*FOOD Food for Thinking Christians 1881, 1884*

*GA The Golden Age [later renamed Awake!]*

*GBOI Your Youth - Getting the Best Out of It, 1976*

*GBOM Organization Manual, 1983*

*GCHP God's Chosen People, 1915-6*

*GEPT God's Eternal Purpose Now Triumphant For Man's Good, 1974*

*GKTY Frederick Franz: God's Kingdom of a Thousand Years has Approached, 1973*

*GREL The Greatest Man Who Ever Lived, 1991*

*GNMH Good News to Make You Happy, 1976*

*GOVT J. F. Rutherford: Government, 1928*

*GWOM The Bible - God's Word Or Man's?, 1989*

*HAPP Happiness - How To Find It, 1980*

*HERA N. H. Barbour & C. T. Russell Herald Of the Morning magazine, 1876-79 (see WT Jan 1 1994 20)*

*HIS1 Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose, 1959*

*HIS2 Jehovah's Witnesses, Proclaimers of God's Kingdom, 1993*

*HOTW N. H. Barbour & C. T. Russell: Three Worlds, and the Harvest of This World, 1877*

*IGTL Things In Which It Is Impossible for God To Lie, 1965*

*INF Informant*

*INS1 Insight On the Scriptures Volume 1 Aaron to Jehoshua, 1988*

*INS2 Insight On the Scriptures Volume 2 Jehovah to Zuzim, 1988*

*ITLA Is This Life All There Is?, 1974*

*JEHO J. F. Rutherford: Jehovah, 1934*

*JWQB Jehovah's Witnesses and the Question of Blood, 1977*

*KIAH The Kingdom Is at Hand, 1944*

*KLEF Knowledge That Leads to Everlasting Life, 1995 {YCLF replacement}*

*KMIN (Our) Kingdom Ministry*

*KMSC Kingdom Ministry School Course, 1960, 1972,*

*LAOD Announcing the Laodicean Messenger - Charles Taze Russell, 1923*

*LAWY J. F. Rutherford: Man's Salvation From a Lawyer's Viewpoint, 1906*

*LDHP Life Does Have a Purpose, 1977*



*LEIF Life Everlasting in Freedom of the Sons of God, 1966*

*LGBT Let God Be True, 1946, 1952*

*LIFE J. F. Rutherford: Life, 1929*

*LIST Listening to the Great Teacher, 1971*

*LIT1 J. F. Rutherford: Light, Book 1, 1930*

*LIT2 J. F. Rutherford: Light, Book 2, 1930*

*LYKC Let Your Kingdom Come, 1981*

*LYNS Let Your Name Be Sanctified, 1961*

*MBBS My Book of Bible Stories, 1978*

*MEEK The Meek Shall Inherit The Earth, 1945*

*MESS The Messenger*

*MFBA G. W. Siebert: My friends, Their Birthdays and autographs, 1907*

*MFLH Making Your Family Life Happy, 1978*

*MILL THE Millennium of Revelation, 19??*

*MLND J. F. Rutherford: Millions Now Living Will Never Die, 1920*

*MSAT Make Sure of All Things (Hold Fast to What Is Fine), 1953, 1957, 1965*

*MSFG Mankind's Search for God, 1990*

*MSWD Man's Salvation Out Of World Distress At Hand, 1975*

*NHNE New Heavens And A New Earth, 1953*

*OAOM Organized to Accomplish Our Ministry, 1983, 1989*

*OIWG Our Incoming World Government - God's Kingdom, 1977*

*OLOR J. F. Rutherford: Our Lord's Return, 1929*

*OMLR C. T. Russell: Object and Manner of Our Lord's Return, 1877*

*ORGA Organization for Kingdom-Preaching and Disciple-Making, 1972*

*OUTL Outlines, 1909*

*PAYF Pay Attention to Yourselves and to All the Flock, 1991*

*PHOT Scenario of the Photo-Drama of Creation, 1914*

*PLPR From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, 1958*

*POEM Poems of Dawn, 1902, 1912*

*PRES J. F. Rutherford: Preservation, 1932*

*PROP J. F. Rutherford: Prophecy, 1929*

*PROS J. F. Rutherford: Prosperity Sure, 1928*

*PRSS Pastor Russell's Sermons, 1917*

*PRTM Paradise Restored to Mankind - By Theocracy, 1972*

*QTBM Qualified To Be Ministers, 1955, 1967*

*QYPA Questions Young People Ask - Answers That Work, 1989*

*RECO J. F. Rutherford: Reconciliation, 1928, 1937*

*RELI J. F. Rutherford: Religion, 1940*

*REST J. F. Rutherford: Restoration, 1927*

*REVE Revelation - Its Great Climax is at Hand!, 1988*

*RFTS Reasoning From The Scriptures, 1985, 1989*

*RICH J. F. Rutherford: Riches, 1936*

*SALV J. F. Rutherford: Salvation, 1939*

*SCHO School and Jehovah's Witnesses, 1983*

*SIIW Shining as Illuminators In the World, 1977, 1989*

*SOFH The Secret of Family Happiness, 1996*

*SPIR Holy Spirit - The Force Behind the Coming New Order!, 1976*

*SURV Survival Into a New Earth, 1984*

*TAKP Theocratic Aid to Kingdom Publishers, 1945*

*TFIM The Finished Mystery, 1917-1927*

*TFMG Then Is Finished the Mystery Of God, 1969*

*TGOK M. F. Russell: This Gospel of the Kingdom, 1906*

*THEO Theocratic Ministry School Guidebook, 1971, 1992*

*THOG J. F. Rutherford: The Harp of God, 1921, 1924-8, 1937, 1940*

*THRE Three Worlds Tract, 1877*

*TIAH C. T. Russell: The Time Is At Hand, 1888-1927*

*TKIC C. T. Russell: Thy Kingdom Come, 1891- 1927*

*TLEL The Truth That Leads To Eternal Life, 1968, 1981*

*TMEL This Means Everlasting Life, 1950*

*TMYF The Truth Shall Make you Free, 1943, 1953*

*TNCR C. T. Russell: Studies in the Scriptures VI - The New Creation, 1904-20, 1923-7*

*TNSK The Nations Shall Know That I Am Jehovah - How?, 1971*

*TNWD The New World, 1942*

*TPAS True Peace and Security - From What Source? (How Can You Find It?), 1973, 1986*

*TSBS C. T. Russell: Tabernacle Shadows of the Better Sacrifices, 1899- 1920*

*TWAI M. F. Russell: The Twain One, 1906*

*TWTD J. F. Rutherford: Talking With the Dead, 1920*

*TWTP W. E. Van Amberg: The Way To Paradise, 1924*

*UDGW Jehovah's Witnesses: Unitedly Doing God's Will Worldwide, 1986*

*UNWN J. F. Rutherford: Universal War Near, 1935*

*UWTG United in Worship of the Only True God, 1983*

*VINI J. F. Rutherford: Vindication, Volume 1, 1931*

*VIN2 J. F. Rutherford: Vindication, Volume 2, 1932*

*VIN3 J. F. Rutherford: Vindication, Volume 3, 1932*

*WHAT J. F. Rutherford: What is Truth?, 1932*

*WR Watchtower Reprints*

*WRDM What Has Religion Done For Mankind?, 1951*

*WSPP Worldwide Security Under the 'Prince of Peace', 1986*

*WSSS What Say the Scriptures About Spiritism?, 1909*

*WT The Watchtower*

*YCLF You Can Live Forever In Paradise On Earth, 1982, 1989*

*YEAR WTBTS Yearbook*

*YMSA You May survive Armageddon Into God's New World, 1955*

*YWBD Your Will Be Done on Earth, 1958*

*YWLF Your Word Is a Lamp to My Foot, 1967*

*ZWT Zion's Watch Tower [later renamed The Watchtower]*

*Other Books Recommended and Sold by WTBTS:*

*J. H. Paton: Day Dawn, 1880, 1882, 1890*

*M. R. Bond: Thy Word Is Truth, 1905*

*J. Edgar: Where Are the Dead?, 1908*

*M. Edgar: The Great Pyramid and the Bible, 1912, 1915*

*M. Edgar: The Pyramid Portrayal of Creation, 1912*

*J. & M. Edgar: Great Pyramid Passages Volume I, 1912*

*J. & M. Edgar: Great Pyramid Passages Volume II, 1913 The Divine Plan and the Great Pyramid, 1913 The Divine*

*Plan of the Ages As Shown In the Great Pyramid, 1915*  
*J. G. Smith: Angels and Women (Spiritism), 1924*

*"And many false prophets will arise, and will mislead many." (Matthew 24:11)*

*"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables." (2 Timothy 4:3-4)*

*"If what a prophet proclaims in the name of the LORD does not take place or come true, that is a message the LORD has not spoken. That prophet has spoken presumptuously. Do not be afraid of him." (Deuteronomy 18:22)*

*Now - can you think who is a "false prophet" (Deuteronomy 18:20-22), turning away "their ears from the truth" towards "fables", ever changing what they claim is God's work and intention (Malachi 3:6; Hebrews 1:17, 13:8; James 1:17)? Prominent Bethelite can.*

*"And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them." (Ephesians 5:11)*

## **7. Altered And Discarded Teachings**

### **Thy Kingdom Come**

(1904 edition — Millennial Dawn, Volume 3) p.342

So, then, if we measure backward down the "First Ascending Passage" to its junction with the "Entrance Passage," we shall have a fixed date to mark upon the downward passage. This measure is 1542 inches, and indicates the year B.C. 1542, as the date at that point. Then measuring down the "Entrance Passage" from that point, to find the distance to the entrance of the "Pit," representing the great trouble and destruction with which this age is to close, when evil will be overthrown from power, we find it to be *3416 inches*, symbolizing *3416 years* from the above date, B.C. 1542. This calculation shows *AD. 1874* as marking the beginning of the period of trouble; for 1542 years B.C. plus 1874 years AD. equals 3416 years. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of *1874 was the chronological beginning* of the time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation -- no, nor ever shall be afterward. And thus it will be noted that this "Witness" fully corroborates the Bible testimony on this subject...

Thy Kingdom Come (1910, Studies In The Scriptures, vol. 3) p.342

So, then, if we measure backward down the "First Ascending Passage" to its junction with the "Entrance Passage," we shall have a fixed date to mark upon the downward passage. This measure is 1542 inches, and indicates the year B.C. 1542, as the date at that point. Then measuring down the "Entrance Passage" from that point, to find the distance to the entrance of the "Pit," representing the great trouble and destruction with which this age is to close, when evil will be overthrown from power, we find it to be *3457 inches*, symbolizing *3457 years* from the above date, B.C. 1542. This calculation shows *AD. 1915* as marking the beginning of the period of trouble; for 1542 years B.C. plus 1915 years AD. equals 3457 years. Thus the Pyramid witnesses that the close of *1914 will be the beginning* of the time of trouble such as was not since there was a nation -- no, nor ever shall be afterward. And thus it will be noted that this "Witness" fully corroborates the Bible testimony on this subject...

Thy Kingdom Come (SIS vIII) 1891 (1903 edition), p.313

[Note: not available on 1993/1995/1999 CD-ROM]

"The Testimony of God's Stone Witness and Prophet, the Great Pyramid in Egypt"

...the Great Pyramid... seems in a remarkable manner to teach, *in harmony with all the prophets, an outline of the plan of God, past, present, and future...*

The Divine Plan of the Ages [Studies in the Scriptures vol 1] 1886 (1908 edition) p.86

Jesus, the perfect one, has been highly exalted, and now we present ourselves to him that we may be formed and shaped according to his example, and that we may be built up as a building of God. In an ordinary building there is no *chief* corner-stone; but *in our building there is one chief corner-stone, the "top-stone,"...*

### **The Divine Plan of the Ages**

[Studies in the Scriptures vol I] 1886 (1908 edition), FOLD OUT CHART

CHART OF AGES

*Illustrating the Plan of God* for bringing many sons to glory, and his purpose —

[Chart uses physical *dimensions of Great Pyramid as basis of "the Plan of God".*]

\*\*\* The Divine Plan of the Ages, [Studies in the Scriptures vol I] 1886 (1908 edition) end notes \*\*\*

THINGS YOU OUGHT TO KNOW AS CHRISTIAN BIBLE STUDENTS

## DO YOU KNOW THAT

- We are now living in "the Time of the End" of this Gospel age?
- Our epoch is "the Day of God's Preparation" for the Millennial age?
- The "Days of Waiting" are ended and the "Cleansing of the Sanctuary" — the Church, — the separating of its Wheat and Tares, is now in progress?
- This is the reason for the beginning of the Return of Divine Favor to Fleshly Israel — blinded for centuries — to permit the gathering of an elect class from among the Gentiles?
- This favor is gradually taking shape and known as Zionism?
- Immanuel's Kingdom is now in process of establishment?
- *The Great Pyramid in Egypt is a Witness to all these event of the ages and of our day -- testifying in symbols?*
- *The Pyramid's downward passage under "A Draconis" symbolizes the course of Sin? Its First Ascending Passage symbolizes the Jewish age? Its grand Gallery symbolized the Gospel age? Its Upper Step symbolized the approaching period of tribulation and anarchy, "Judgments," upon Christendom? Its King's Chamber the Divine Nature, etc., of the Overcoming Church -- the Christ, Head and Body? Its Ante-Chamber the Correction in Righteousness of the "Great Company" etc.? Its Queen's Chamber those of Israel and the world who attain Restitution?*

All these interesting topics with ten Pyramid illustrations can be had in "Thy Kingdom Come" [Studies in the Scriptures vol III]

Watchtower 1922 June 15 p.187

In the *passages of the Great Pyramid of Gizeh* the agreement of one or two measurements with the present-truth chronology might seem accidental, but the correspondency of dozens of measurements *proves that the same God designed both pyramid and plan...*

Watchtower 1925 May 15 p.148

[Note: not available on 1993/1995/1999 CD-ROM]

The great Pyramid of Egypt, standing as a *silent and inanimated witness of the Lord*, is a messenger; and its testimony speaks with great eloquence concerning the divine plan...

Watchtower 1928 November 15 p.341

If the pyramid is not mentioned in the Bible, then *following its teachings is being led by vain philosophy* and false science and *not following after Christ*.

Watchtower 1928 November 15 p.344

It is more reasonable to conclude that the great pyramid of Gizeh, as well as the other pyramids thereabout, also the sphinx, were built by the rulers of Egypt and under the directions of Satan the Devil... *Then Satan put his knowledge in dead stone, which may be called Satans' Bible, and not God's stone witness...*

Watchtower 1956 May 15 pp.297-8 The Great Pyramid of Giza

## **The Great Pyramid of Giza**

Product of the true worship or the false?

THE Great Pyramid of Giza is one of "the seven wonders of the ancient world." It is the largest of nine pyramids found in Giza, in the valley of the Nile. The Great Pyramid is 486 feet high, or about the height of a modern 40-story building, and each of its four sides is 764 feet long; its base covers thirteen acres. The ratio of its height to the perimeter of its base is the same as that of the radius of a circle to its circumference, a most remarkable feature according to some mathematicians and astronomers. Its four sides line up perfectly with the four directions of the compass. There has been much speculation as to the reason why these pyramids of Giza were built, and in particular why the Great Pyramid was built. [...]

Because none of these theories fully and satisfactorily explain the purpose of building the Great Pyramid, *others have developed the hypothesis that it was built under divine inspiration; that perhaps Melchizedek was its builder and that God provided it as a witness in stone to corroborate the Bible. Such men as John Taylor of London, Professor Smyth and Dr. Edgar of Scotland advocated the theory\* that the measurements of the Great Pyramid and particularly the measurements of its internal passageways and chambers, were full of Scriptural meaning. What are the facts? Is the Great Pyramid truly a witness to Jehovah? Was it built by his true worshipers to corroborate the Bible, or was it built by the devotees of pagan religions?*

## **NOT OF DIVINE ORIGIN**

Jehovah God used some forty writers over a period of sixteen centuries to provide us with his Word. Is it reasonable to conclude that even before Moses began to write the Pentateuch God caused a massive structure to be built that was to corroborate his



Word? Rather, is it not an insult to God to hold that he felt it necessary to corroborate his inspired Word by some mute edifice? And that its meaning should be hidden from man for several thousand years and revealed only at a time when the structure had been robbed of all its external beauty?

Further, is it reasonable to hold that God would direct the construction of a building covering thirteen acres of ground, consisting of 90 million cubic feet of quarried stone, with stones as much as thirty feet long and estimated to weigh as much as 880 tons each, when *all such work had to be done by slave labor*? The very fact that the memory of the invading Shepherd kings who constructed these pyramids was so detested by the Egyptians for generations afterward would certainly put the building of the pyramids in the class of Pharaoh's building program rather than that of King Solomon.

Besides, if the Great Pyramid were built at God's command *should we not expect to find some reference to its construction in God's Word, the Bible*? The Bible tells us of the building of Solomon's temple and that built under the direction of Governor Zerubbabel; also of the building of a water aqueduct by King Hezekiah, yes and also of the building of the tower of Babel, *but not a word about any of the pyramids*. Relevant to this argument also is the fact that *none of the structures described in God's Word employ the design of a pyramid*.

The fact also cannot be gainsaid that *none of the measurements given in the Great Pyramid throw light on the all-important issue of universal sovereignty or why God has permitted evil*. Remarkable as some of its measurements seem to appear, it also cannot be denied that these have led to false hopes resulting in disappointments and none of them serve any purpose in magnifying the name of Jehovah and preaching "this good news of the kingdom," nor are those who put so much store by the Great Pyramid sharing in such preaching work. If there are facts about the Great Pyramid that cannot be explained solely on the basis of human wisdom, then in view of all the foregoing *we have no alternative but to conclude that it must have been accomplished by means of demon power rather than by the active force of Jehovah God*.

## THE ALTAR TO JEHOVAH

*Regardless of how interesting, fascinating or intriguing the mathematical, chronological and astronomical implications of the Great Pyramid of Egypt might be, they fade into insignificance when compared with the great work Jehovah is having done today by his altar in the midst of Egypt and his pillar at the border. What the people need today is not just an implied corroboration of Bible chronology but the truth regarding the great issue to be settled, Who rules supreme, Jehovah God or Satan the Devil? They need to see the clear line of demarcation that exists between God's organization and that of the Devil, and they must be shown the urgency of seeking Jehovah, righteousness and meekness before it is too late.—Zeph. 2:1-3.*

Since all the evidence points to the fact that *the Great Pyramid was not constructed at God's direction, for Christians to take it seriously would be tantamount to going down to Egypt for help*. (Isa. 31:1) Not by means of a pagan slave-labor-built pile of stone but by means of his Word, his organization and his active force, his holy spirit, Jehovah God is training his dedicated servants for the ministry.

## THE LIKELY MOTIVE

There remains but one question. Since it is clear that the Great Pyramid was not built at the direction of Jehovah, and since it appears that it was not built solely to serve as a tomb nor as a storehouse for treasure nor as a temple for pagan worship, *can any satisfactory explanation be given of Cheops' motive for having it built*?

Yes, there is one theory that has much to recommend it and that is *based on the prominence that the Great Pyramid gives to the sciences of mathematics and astronomy*. It is known that in ancient times astronomy and astrology were considered as one. And from Scriptural and secular history it is apparent that the Chaldeans excelled in both. And it further appears that Cheops and those with him, who conquered Egypt with apparently so little effort, came from Chaldea. Therefore, *in view of "the mysterious influence which astrologers ascribe to special numbers, figures, positions, and so forth, the care with which the Great Pyramid was so proportioned as to indicate particular astronomical and mathematical relations is at once explained."*

[...] we can find a justification for the building of the Great Pyramid, as a monument erected to astrology with the hope of discovering the fundamental secrets of life and all matter.—*The Great Pyramid*, R. A. Proctor.

*Thus, this most logical explanation of all as to the reasons underlying the construction of the Great Pyramid of Giza would indicate that it certainly was not built by those engaging in the true worship of Jehovah God but by those devoted to astrology, a manifestation of Devil religion, and was built in furtherance of such religion.* [Footnotes]

*Bible Students also held to this thought prior to 1928.*

Watchtower 1957 May 15 p.316 Appreciating Basic Christian Publications \*\*\*

17 At a home Bible study you meet a person who *has been told that the measurements of the Great Pyramid of Giza harmonize with Bible prophecy and that we should study it to learn God's purposes*. You do not know what to say about this, but know that long ago it was discussed in the Society's publications. So you search back year by year through the volumes of *The Watchtower* until you come

to the November 15 and December 1, 1928, issues. There you learn what is wrong with this idea and decide to present these points to your questioner: First, *Egypt was a Devil-ruled pagan country*, not a place for divine revelation; second, *God does not accomplish his work through the type of slave labor that built the pyramids*; third, *Christians are told that they must live by faith*, not by sight; and fourth, if the Christian congregation was to be taught by the measurements of this ancient pile of stone *either Jesus or some of the apostles would have said something about it; and they did not*. A briefer account of this is found in the May 15, 1956, issue of *The Watchtower*.

[Emphasis Added]

Watchtower April 15, 2002 "Two Pastors Who Appreciated Russell's Writings"

In 1891, Charles Taze Russell, who did outstanding work among true Christian worshipers of Jehovah, visited Europe for the first time. According to some reports, during a stopover in Pinerolo, Italy, Russell met Professor Daniele Rivoire, a former pastor of a religious group called the Waldenses...In 1903, Rivoire translated Russell's book *The Divine Plan of the Ages* into Italian and had it printed at his own expense...In the book's forward, Rivoire wrote: "We place this first Italian edition under the Lord's protection. May he bless it so that, in spite of its imperfections, it may contribute to magnify his most holy name and encourage his Italian-speaking children to greater devotion. *May the hearts of all those who, by reading this book, appreciate the depth of riches, wisdom, and knowledge of God's plan and love, be grateful to God himself, by whose grace publication of this work has been made possible.*

Another Waldensian pastor who esteemed Russell's publications was Giuseppe Banchetti...The authorized Italian edition of Russell's *Divine Plan of the Ages* was published in 1905. Banchetti wrote an enthusiastic review of the book..."For us", wrote Banchetti, *Russell's book "is the most illuminated and sure guide that any Christian may find to undertake a profitable and blessed study of Holy Scripture...*As soon as I read it, it seemed as though scales fell from my eyes, that the way to God was straighter and easier. Even apparent contradictions for the most part disappeared. Doctrines once difficult appeared simple and perfectly acceptable. Things hitherto incomprehensible became clear. The admirable plan of the world's salvation in Christ appeared before me with such awesome simplicity as to induce me to exclaim with the Apostle: O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!

## **8. The 1914 Date**

Of all the dates that the Watchtower Society has set for events to take place, The End/Armageddon, the Kingdom to be set up, or Abraham, Isaac and Jacob etc. to be resurrected, all these dates have been rejected and discarded by the Society with one notable exception – 1914. Should this date also have been discarded with the rest?

### ***WHAT DID THE WATCHTOWER FORETELL IN 1914?***

As one studies the old publications of the Watchtower Society, they soon find out that what the Society claims they foretold would happen in 1914, and what they did actually say would happen, are two different accounts:

Millennial Dawn, Volume 2, pages 76-78:

In this chapter we present the Bible evidence proving that the full end of the times of the Gentiles, i.e., the full end of their lease of dominion, will be reached in AD 1914; and that that date will be the farthest limit of the rule of imperfect men. And be it observed, that if this is shown to be a fact firmly established by the Scriptures, it will prove:

First, That at that date the Kingdom of God, for which our Lord taught us to pray, saying, "Thy Kingdom come," will have obtained full, universal control, and that it will then be "set up," or firmly established, in the earth.

Secondly, It will prove that he whose right it is thus to take the dominion will then be present as earth's new Ruler; and not only so, but it will also prove that he will be present for a considerable period before that date; because the overthrow of these Gentile governments is directly caused by his smashing them to pieces as a potter's vessel (Psalm 2:9; Revelation 2:27), and establishing in their stead his own righteous government.

Thirdly, It will prove that some time before the end of AD 1914 the last member of the divinely recognized Church of Christ, the "royal priesthood," "the body of Christ," will be glorified with the Head; because every member is to reign with Christ, being a joint-heir with him of the Kingdom, and it cannot be fully "set up" without every member.

Fourthly, It will prove that from that time forward Jerusalem shall no longer be trodden down of the Gentiles, but shall arise from the dust of divine disfavor, to honor; because the "Times of the Gentiles" will be fulfilled or completed.

Fifthly, It will prove that by that-date or sooner, Israel's blindness will begin to be turned away; because their "blindness in part" was to continue only "until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in " (Romans 11:25), or, in other words, until the full number from among the Gentiles, who are to be members of the body or bride of Christ, would be fully selected.

Sixthly, It will Drove that the great "time of trouble such as never was since there was a nation", will reach its culmination in a world-wide reign of anarchy.

From the above we learn that:

1. The Watchtower Society foretold that in 1914:

- a. The Kingdom of God is established on the earth.
- b. The Overthrow of Gentile governments, Armageddon would have taken place after world-wide anarchy.
- c. The Church would be taken to heaven before 1914.
- d. Jerusalem would return to honor.
- d. The Jews would return also to favor.

2. The "Times of the Gentiles" was understood to be:

The time that the Gentile nations would rule the earth, before God would destroy them and set up His kingdom on the earth. Nothing of the above is believed or taught today!

## **WHAT HAPPENED WHEN NOTHING TOOK PLACE?**

The Society's own publications will help to answer this question:

Light, (Volume 1, 1930) page 194:

### **SACKCLOTH**

"Sackcloth" is a symbol of reproach and mourning when applied to God's people: "For the zeal of your house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me. When I wept, and chastened my soul with fasting, that was to my reproach. I made sackcloth also my garment; and I became a proverb to them." (Psalm 69:9-11) Isaiah represented God's anointed people on earth and he prophesied in sackcloth. (Isaiah 20:2) The Watch Tower, and its companion publications of the Society, for forty years emphasized the fact that 1914 would witness the establishment of God's kingdom and the complete glorification of the church. During that period of forty years God's people on Earth were carrying on a witness work, which work was foreshadowed by Elijah and John the Baptist. All of the Lord's people looked forward to 1914 with joyful expectation. When that time came and passed there was much disappointment, chagrin and mourning, and the Lord's people were greatly in reproach. They were ridiculed by the clergy and their allies in particular, and pointed to with scorn, because they had said so much about 1914, and what would come to pass, and their 'prophecies' had not been fulfilled.

One wearing sackcloth usually puts it on himself. God's people on earth, after the reproach that came upon them, following 1914 put sackcloth upon themselves as an evidence of mourning. (Lamentations 2:10) This is proven by what appeared in The Watch Tower.

During the period of its publication The Watch Tower has been the mouthpiece of God's children on earth. Immediately following the end of the Gentile

This admission came in 1930 with the publication of the above book Light. Yet having admitted that they had said so much about 1914, and what would come to pass, and their 'prophecies' had not been fulfilled they still proceed to claim that they are the mouthpiece of God's children on earth!

## **THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES**

This expression was completely re-interpreted after 1914 and given a different meaning entirely. What they had foretold concerning the times of the Gentiles did not come to pass!

## **WHY WAS THE 1914 DATE RETAINED?**

The answer is simply because the World War broke out in that year. If by chance that traumatic event had not taken place, 1914 would have joined, 1874, 1878, 1915, 1918, 1920, 1925, and more recently 1975! Without exception, they were all false prophecies! (See the chapters on 1925, and 1975.)

## **9. 1925 And Beth-Sarim**

The Watchtower Society foretold that in 1925 the Kingdom on earth would be established and Abraham, Isaac and Jacob etc. would be resurrected to take charge of the visible affairs of earth. When this failed to happen, then a house was built called Beth-Sarim meaning "House of the Princes". It was to be a testimony to the world that they still expected the Princes to arrive in the

immediate future, and this home would be in readiness for these men of old to occupy. In the meantime, the president of the Society, Judge J. F. Rutherford, moved into the mansion. In 1942 he died there. He admitted before he died that he had made "an ass" of himself for what he predicted for 1925. Beth-Sarim has since been sold, but its memory is still an embarrassment to the Society. It is also a warning to others not to put their faith in such an organization!

## **THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE 1925 DATE**

Originally the Watchtower Society taught the Princes were to return in 1915. Pastor Russell wrote in *Studies in the Scriptures* Volume 4, (1897) on page 625:

"The beginning of the earthly phase of the Kingdom in the end of A.D. 1914 will, we understand, consist wholly of the resurrected holy ones of older time, from John the Baptizer back to Abel; Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the holy prophets."

Pastor Russell was so sure that God had given him these truths centered around Armageddon coming at the end of 1914, and the Princes at the beginning of 1915 that he wrote concerning it that God had "made no mistake and his plans alter not." - *Studies in the Scriptures* Volume 4, page 624.

## **PRINCES TO ARRIVE TEN YEARS LATER - NOW IN 1925!**

Pastor Russell died in 1916, after witnessing that all he had predicted for 1914 had failed to take place. He was succeeded as president of the Society by Judge Rutherford who now made the date for the Princes to return, ten years later:

"No doubt Satan believed the Millennial Kingdom was due to be set up in 1915. Be that as it may, there is evidence that the establishment of the Kingdom in Palestine will probably be in 1925, ten years later than we once calculated." *The Finished Mystery*, (Volume 7), page 128.

Rutherford further developed expectations for this date in the book, *Millions Now Living Will Never Die*, pages 88-97, where he foretold that in 1925, the Princes would be resurrected to establish the Kingdom on earth. (See the photocopy of this section of that book at the back of this Kit. Also see the section of the book, *The Way to Paradise*, where a description is given of what it would be like as these Princes were resurrected, and how you could call these Princes at Jerusalem on the telephone and request them to arrange to have your loved ones resurrected!)

## **THE 1925 DATE FAILS SO BETH-SARIM IS BUILT**

When the 1925 date passed, there was widespread disappointment. Those with a heavenly hope were especially disappointed

"The view had been somewhat general among the anointed that the remaining members of the body of Christ would be changed to heavenly glory that year (1925)" *Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose*, page 107. Those who were expecting to stay on earth, were also disappointed:

"...some prepared for their own loved ones with expectancy of their resurrection." *1975 Yearbook of Jehovah's Witnesses*, page 146.

Thousands left the Society! Watchtower leaders urged the members not to be discouraged because the Princes would still arrive soon. (See in this Kit a photocopy of *Millions Now Living Will Never Die*, where 1925 was rubbed out and soon rubber stamped over that date!) However, the most effective ruse was that of President Rutherford to build Beth-Sarim! (See *Salvation*, p.311.)

The house attracted a lot of publicity, which the Society encouraged. See the article in their big 1931 Assembly paper *The Messenger*, boasting of this. One picture of the house even had the caption:

What the back and the West side look like. Do you think David will like it?

The whole thing became a terrible embarrassment and laughing stock. Within the Society were murmurings with their President living in this lavish marIS1011 which had not been built in Jerusalem, but in lovely San Diego, California!

This drawing of Beth-Sarim appeared in one of the last books (*Salvation*) that J. F. Rutherford wrote before he died in this mansion. On the previous page he told why the house was built.

## **BETH-SARIM**

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth Sarim mean "House of the Princes"; and the purpose of acquiring that property and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who believe God and Christ Jesus and in His kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to

Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the

president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. To be sure, everything then on the earth will belong to the Lord, and neither the Lord nor the princes need others to build houses for them; but it was thought well and pleasing to God that the aforementioned house be built as a testimony to the name of Jehovah and showing faith his announced purposes. The house has served as a testimony to many persons throughout the Earth, and while the unbelievers have mocked concerning it and spoken contemptuously of it, yet it standing here as a testimony to Jehovah's name; And if and when the princes do return and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that introduced the building of Beth-Sarim. [Salvation, Page 311]

## **WATCH TOWER PUBLICATIONS DEALING WITH BETH-SARIM**

1931 Year Book, 36-37  
The Golden Age, March 19, 1930, 405-407  
The Watch Tower, April 1, 1930, 111  
The Messenger, July 25, 1931, 6-8  
The Messenger, July 30, 1931, 2  
The Watch Tower, August 1, 1931, 239  
The Watchtower, March 15, 1937, 86  
The Golden Age, May 5, 1937, 499  
Salvation (1939), 311-12  
The Watchtower, June 1, 1940, 162  
Consolation, April 30, 1941, 14  
Consolation, November 26, 1941, 17-18  
Consolation, May 27, 1942, 3-16  
The New World (1942), 104-05  
1943 Yearbook, 33-34  
The Watchtower, December 15, 1947, 382  
Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose (1959), 252-253  
"Let Your Name Be Sanctified," (1961), 335-336  
1975 Yearbook (1974), 193-194  
Jehovah's Witnesses-Proclaimers of God's Kingdom (1993), 76, 89  
The Golden Age, September 2, 1931, 800  
The Watchtower, February 1, 1933, 34  
The Watchtower, December 15, 1937, 370  
The Watchtower, October 15, 1943, 317  
The Watchtower, November 1, 1955, 655  
The Watchtower, June 1, 1985, 27  
The Watchtower, March 1, 1992, 27

## **JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 1931 YEAR BOOK**

During the year loving hands provided a comfortable house pleasantly situated at San Diego, California, wherein the president and his office assistants can escape the rigors of the winter and there be enabled to go on with the work. This provision is graciously acknowledged as from the Lord. He knows who are the givers, and will bless them accordingly. The title to that house is in the Society, and is held in trust for the perpetual use of God's faithful ones. It was thought appropriate to give a name to the house, and henceforth it will be known by the name "Beth-Sarim". This is a compound Hebrew word, and its meaning is "house of the princes", and is intended for the princes mentioned by the Lord. It is confidently expected that in God's due time some of the faithful men mentioned in Hebrews 11, and whom Christ shall "make princes in all the earth", will find an abode in that house while carrying on the work the Lord will give them to do. The house is a small matter, but it reminds us that there is a direct and close relationship between all the creatures that are truly devoted to God. Some blessed day all of God's creation who are faithful will be gathered together into one family under Christ his beloved One. (Ephesians 1:10) To what extent the Lord will use the houses his people have built on earth in the past few years is for him to decide, of course.

We are always glad, however, to believe, according to his Word, that he is pleased to have his people recognize the close relationship between all that love God.

The enemy gave wide publication of and concerning the building of that house at San Diego. The purpose of the enemy, of course, was to bring reproach upon the work of the Society. Others have given friendly mention of the house through the public press.



The publication which has spread over the earth has served to let the people know that there are some on Earth who have full faith and confidence in God and his promises, and see that his kingdom is at hand, and that in his kingdom he will have faithful men on earth to represent him. The mere amount of publication could not have been bought for five times the cost of the house. This is another evidence of the fact that the enemy often overreaches himself and never succeeds in accomplishing a real purpose. In the days of the early church the apostle wrote: "Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife, and some also of good will: the one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds." (Philippians 1:15, 16) It is even so today. The campaign of education goes grandly on. *Jehovah's Witnesses 1931 Year Book (1930), Pages 36, 37.*

## **THE GOLDEN AGE, MARCH 1930**

The Truth About the San Diego House

By B. J. Martin

In view of the fact that there are so many slanderous reports circulated about Brother Rutherford, the real purpose of which is to injure the Lord's work, I feel disposed to give the facts concerning some of them, not for the benefit of the slanderers, but for the benefit of those who are really loyal to the Lord.

**SOCIETIES BUILDINGS:** During the past ten years the Society, under the business management of Brother Rutherford, has financed on a business basis and erected for the benefit of the work the following buildings:

The Bethel Home, furnishing commodious quarters for the workers there.

The Brooklyn factory, with a capacity of 20,000 volumes a day, in one of the best appointed and lighted factories in the world.

A factory and home for the work in Switzerland.

A factory and home for the work and workers in Magdeburg, Germany.

A home for the workers in Czechoslovakia.

Prior to this period the Society rented its headquarters in most of the places, including London. In the last few years the Society has acquired title to the London Bethel. The Society has also built offices and a printing plant at Toronto, Canada.

To my personal knowledge Brother Rutherford has been untiring in his efforts to get all this housing and equipment for the benefit of the Lord's work.

As is well known by the brethren, he and others were confined in prison during the War because of faithfulness to the Lord's cause. Following his release he had a severe case of pneumonia, and since then has had only one good lung. It is almost impossible for him to remain in Brooklyn in the winter season and get on with the arduous duties that he has to perform. To my personal knowledge there is no man in America that does more real hard work daily than he. Four years ago he went to San Diego, California, under the treatment of Doctor Eckols. The climate is so superior to that of almost any other place that Doctor Eckols has repeatedly urged him to spend as much time as possible in San Diego. When he goes he takes with him his office force and works early and late, and except for the work he has done the factories would not be able to operate and it is hardly probable that we could have been operating the radio stations.

It is not always convenient to get a comfortable place to live when it is necessary to rent a house for a few months. For the past two years I and other brethren close to Brother Rutherford have urged upon him the necessity of a house in San Diego where he can live and do the work that is so necessary to be done. Last year, in company with a few other brethren, we pressed this matter upon him, at that time the Lord having provided the means for the building of the house so that it would not be a burden on the Society. He finally consented that the house might be built only upon condition that it should be exclusively for the use of the Lord's work, henceforth and for ever and not for any private gain for any one. In October, 1929, I went to California and acquired the title, to the ground in my name and entered into a contract with the builder, and the house was constructed in my name. I again went to California at the beginning of the year 1930 to close up the building arrangements. I am happy to have any part in this because I know what it means for the Lord's work.

I feel sure that the Lord loves Brother Rutherford as much as he loved David. David built a house for himself and afterwards thought about building one for the Lord. After repeated urging by loyal brethren the San Diego home was built, but Brother Rutherford refused to have it for himself except to use it for the Lord's work. A deed was made conveying the title to the house. This

deed was written by Brother Rutherford himself. I am certain there is no other deed to any piece of property like it under the sun. I am grateful to the Lord that I had anything to do with it The deed is a matter of public record on the deed records of San Diego, California, and therefore I am at full liberty to publish it and I do here submit the deed for publication so that all may see and understand how much Brother Rutherford has been libeled and slandered by those who would injure the Lord's work.

I am certain that the loyal ones would have been glad to help finance the house had opportunity been given, and that they will rejoice when they know that this property will be for ever for the Lord's people; that when Brother Rutherford is through with it somebody else in the Lord's work will have it, and when David and Joseph or some of the other ancient worthies return they will have it.

The enemy charges that the house cost \$100,000. Of course it did not cost one-fourth that amount; but their falsification in this behalf is in keeping with their false statements about everything else. See the statement from the treasurer of the Society that not one penny of the Society's money was drawn out to pay for this house.

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:

This is to testify that no money has been drawn from the funds of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society, or any affiliated association, by R. J. Martin, Brooklyn, New York, or anyone else to be used for the purpose of erecting, purchasing or acquiring the possession of any building or real estate in San Diego, California.

March 3, 1930

Respectfully submitted,  
[Treasurer's seal] W. E. VAN AMBURGH, Treasurer.

I append a copy of the deed, including the notarial acknowledgments and recorder's memoranda on the back, all of which will be of interest to many readers of The Golden Age, I feel sure.

DEED

ROBERT J. MARTIN a single and unmarried person of 117 Adams St. Brooklyn, New York, for and in consideration of the sum of Ten Dollars (\$10.00) does hereby grant bargain and sell unto

JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD

of 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York for and during his life on earth and thereafter to the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY, a corporation created and organized under the laws of the State of Pennsylvania and maintaining its chief operating offices at 124 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York and for the purposes hereinafter set forth.

All that real property situated in Kensington Heights, County of San Diego, State of California bounded and described as follows, to wit:

Lot One Hundred Ten (110) and Lot One Hundred Eleven (111) of Kensington Heights, Unit No. 2, in the County of San Diego, State of California, according to map thereof No. 1912, filed in the office of the County Recorder of said San Diego County, May 24, 1926.

TO HAVE AND TO HOLD THE ABOVE GRANTED AND DESCRIBED PREMISES unto him, the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD for his exclusive possession, use and benefit for and during his life on earth and at the end of said limited estate then to the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY in trust to be used for the purposes herein set forth, to wit:

The grantor at the request of the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD who is President of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY and General Manager thereof makes this provision and condition as set forth in this deed:

Both the grantor and the grantee, the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD are fully persuaded from the Bible testimony, which is the Word of Jehovah God, and from extraneous evidence that God's kingdom is now in course of establishment and that it will result beneficially to the peoples of earth. That the governing power and authority will be invisible to men but that kingdom of God will have visible representatives on the earth who will have charge of the affairs of the nations under the supervision of the invisible ruler Christ. That among those who will thus be the faithful representatives and visible governors of the world will be David, who was once king over Israel; and Gideon, and Barak, and Samson, and Jephthae, and Joseph, formerly the ruler of Egypt, and Samuel the prophet and other faithful men who were named with approval in the Bible at Hebrews the eleventh chapter. The condition herein is that the said WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY shall hold said title perpetually in trust for the use of any or all of the men above named as representatives of God's kingdom on earth and that such men shall have possession and use of said property hereinabove described as they may deem for the best interest for the work in which they are engaged.

This property has been acquired and the improvements built thereon at the instance and under the direction of the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD and dedicated to Jehovah God and to His King Christ who is the rightful ruler of the earth and for the

express purpose of being used by those who are servants of Jehovah God. For this reason the provision is made in this deed that the property shall be for ever used for that purpose subject to any encumbrances that may have been placed thereupon.

IT IS FURTHER PROVIDED that if the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD while alive on the earth shall by lease, deed or contract provide that any other person or persons connected with the said WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY shall have the right to reside on said premises until the appearing of David or some of the other men mentioned in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews as above set forth even such person or persons so designated by the said JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD in such lease or other paper writing shall have the right and privilege of residing on said premises until the same be taken possession of by David or some of the other men herein named and this property and premises being dedicated to Jehovah and the we of his kingdom it shall be used as such for ever. Any persons appearing to take possession of said premises shall first prove and identify themselves to the proper officers of said Society as the person or persons described in Hebrews chapter eleven and in this deed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF I the said ROBERT J. MARTIN and the said JOSEPH. F. RUTHERFORD have hereunto signed our names this 24th day of December A.D. 1929.

ROBERT J. MARTIN.

Witnesses:  
DONALD HASLETT  
BONNIE BOYD

STATE OF NEW YORK, COUNTY OF KINGS

On this 24th day of December A.D. 1929 before me, Donald Haslett a notary public in and for said County and State of New York, having authority to take acknowledgments of legal instruments, personally appeared ROBERT J. MARTIN and JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD known to me to be the persons whose names are subscribed to the foregoing instrument and each acknowledged to me that he executed the same as his free act and deed.

WITNESS MY HAND and official seal the day and year in this certificate first above written.  
DONALD HASLETT, Notary Public. [Notary Seal] State of New York, County of Kings.

I, Fred G. Limmerrmann, Clerk of the County of Kings and also Clerk of the Supreme Court for said county (said court being a court of record) do hereby certify that Donald Haslett the Notary Public before whom the within acknowledgment or deposition was made was at the time of making the same authorized by the laws of the state of New York to take the acknowledgments and proofs of deeds or conveyances for lands, tenements and hereditaments situate, lying and being in said state of New York. And further that I am well acquainted with the hand writing of such Notary Public, and verily believe that the signature to said certificate of proof, acknowledgment or deposition is genuine.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed the seal of said County and Court this 24th day of December, 1929.

Fred G. Limmerrmann, Clerk.  
GRANT DEED

Individual

ROBERT J. MARTIN

to

JOSEPH F. RUTHERFORD

et al  
Dated December 24th, 1929

Recorded at the request of Grantee February 7, 1930, at 15 minutes past 2 o'clock in Book Number 1741, Page 69 of Deeds. Records of San Diego County, California. John H. Ferry County Recorder, By N. C. Parsons Deputy. Compared. Fee \$1.80. [*The Golden Age, March 19, 1930, Page 405-407*]

## **WATCHTOWER, APRIL 1930**

DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD,

During the question meeting held by the Los Angeles ecclesia on Sunday, February 23, 1930, and over which you presided, the friends were so moved by your answers given to questions asked that at a meeting, directly following they voted with one accord to instruct me to write this letter.

Your answers given to some of the false accusations made against you were so straightforward and open that none actuated by the spirit of the Lord could help but rejoice. We regret that the agents of Satan will stoop so low as to deal in personalities and to malign you, but it was done to the Master when he was here, and all who serve the Lord can but except the same. It is it a mark of your faithfulness. We want you, to feel also that these accusations

grieve us as much as they do you; for while made directly against you, yet as all the members form the body of Christ, so also an injury to one member is an injury to all. We want you to feel, in every hour of trial, our love for you and our devotion to the cause for which you are so fiercely and valiantly fighting, and that we are fighting shoulder to shoulder with you. We want you to know that while we rejoice to have the facts concerning tile questions answered there was not one, in the Los Angeles ecclesia who loves tile Lord and his kingdom who held any doubts in his heart concerning you.

Your wonderful provisions in the deed to the San Diego property have impressed the friends with your faith in the Lord's promises. It has filled us with a keener realization of the fact that we are living in the time of the establishment of his kingdom. It has stirred our hearts with a desire to show our faithfulness to the Lord in this short remaining time left to us. With this thought in mind some of the friends have suggested that a short article in *The Watch Tower*, setting forth the provisions of this deed, would be a source of comfort to all the friends as this information has been to us here. Be assured, dear brother, of our continued prayers in your behalf and of a double portion of our love and that he who is for us is greater than till who are against us. Your brother in Christ, CHARLES G. O'HANLON, Secretary, Los Angeles Ecclesia. [*The Watchtower, April 1, 1930, Page 111*]

## **WATCHTOWER, AUGUST 1931**

MY DEAR BROTHER RUTHERFORD: After reading Light, I thought I must let you know how much. I have appreciated same; and I thank Jehovah for the wonderful explanation of Revelation that lie has given to the remnant at this time. It is a clear indication that the great battle of Armageddon is rapidly approaching, as we ace the prophecies which have been fulfilled, particularly since 1914, and others in course of fulfillment.

It is grand to see that many of those prophecies are being fulfilled by the faithful remnant. I count it a glorious privilege to have a share in this stupendous work. Some of the chapters seem to stand out very prominently, especially chapters 8, 9, 11, 13, 20 and 21.

It is thrilling to look forward to the return of the faithful prophets before the last members of the remnant pass beyond. Surely the Lord guided you to having the house built in San Diego in preparation for their return. May he continue to bless you abundantly as you press the battle to the gate.

For your encouragement I would like to tell you that the brethren over here are deeply appreciating Light and the opportunity of placing it in the hands of the people. Many of the classes have already commenced to use it as a class study. With much love, Your brother and co-laborer in Zion, ALFRED G. BORLAND, England. [*The Watchtower, August 1, 1931, Page 239*]

## **WATCHTOWER, MARCH 1937**

Those ancient witnesses, specially mentioned by the apostle in Hebrews the eleventh chapter, have not expected to see the feet members of Christ, the Greater-than-Joseph, while in the flesh, but the evidence strongly points to the fact that they will see at least some of them on the earth. The Lord in his loving kindness makes provision, and we may confidently expect that those faithful men of old will be back on the earth before Armageddon ends and while some of the remnant are still on the earth, and that they will unite together in the praise and service of Jehovah God. There is at least one house on earth the title to which is held in trust for the use and benefit of those faithful men. Whether they occupy it or not, this house has been a means of advertising the kingdom throughout the earth and calling to the attention of the people that those faithful men will be back on the earth, and that the Lord will use them as governors or local rulers. It will not be at all difficult to recognize such men, because they will be upstanding and righteous and do righteousness in every way, and will be a joy to those who come in contact and serve with them. The public press has ridiculed and scoffed at BETH-SARIM, but those who love the Lord rejoice that this has been used as a means to publicly call attention to the faithful men whom God will bring forth. [*The Watchtower, March 15, 1937, Page 86*]

## **SALVATION, 1939**

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim. The Hebrew words Beth-Sarim mean "House of the Princes"; and the purpose of acquiring that property, and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who fully believe God and Christ Jesus and in His kingdom, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY in trust, to be used by the president of the Society and his assistants for the present, and thereafter to be for ever at the disposal of the aforementioned princes on the earth. To be sure, everything then on the earth will belong to the Lord, and neither the Lord nor the princes need others to build houses for them; but it was thought well and pleasing to God that the aforementioned house be built as a testimony to the name of Jehovah and showing faith in his announced purposes. The house has served as a testimony to many persons

throughout the earth, and while the unbelievers have mocked concerning it and spoken contemptuously of it, yet it stands there as a testimony to Jehovah's name; and if and when the princes do return and some of them occupy the property, such will be a confirmation of the faith and hope that induced the building of Beth-Sarim. [*J. F. Rutherford, Salvation (1939), Page 311*]

## **WATCHTOWER, JUNE 1940**

Some unreliable person is responsible for the circulation of a report that Beth-Sarim is being enlarged as a place of security and that this is being built by the Society. There is absolutely not one word of truth in the report. Those who are interested in the Theocracy would better be circulating the kingdom message rather than false imaginations of others. [*The Watchtower, June 1, 1940, Page 162.*]

## **CONSOLATION, APRIL 1941**

Jehovah's people have a right to proper use of the courts. There are times when they would not be using the spirit of a sound mind to do otherwise. At Beth Sarim, San Diego, Judge Rutherford does much work at night. For some time he was annoyed by a young man flashing a spotlight into his study and blowing his automobile horn. He had him arrested, which was right and proper. The young man got a 30-day suspended sentence, and will have sense enough to stay away now or get locked up. [*Consolation, April 30, 1941, Page 14*]

## **CONSOLATION, NOVEMBER 1941**

Return of the "Princes"

THE facts that have recently come to pass showing the fulfillment of sacred prophecy conclusively prove that the time for the battle of "that great day of God Almighty" is very near and that in that battle all of God's enemies shall be destroyed and the earth cleared of wickedness, preparatory to the, complete establishment of righteousness for ever.

The affairs of the earth then will be under the complete control of the Messiah, God's Anointed King over His Theocracy; and the faithful men of old, from Abel to John the Baptist, will be resurrected from the dead as perfect creatures and will act as the representatives, on earth of that Theocratic Government. (Hebrews 11:1-40) The Scriptural evidence also abundantly shows that those faithful men will be back on the Earth at the beginning of the final battle of Armageddon. From the Scriptures it appears absolutely certain that some of the faithful "remnant" of Jehovah's anointed witnesses will yet be on the earth when those faithful men appear, and certainly those persons of good-will toward God and who shall compose the "great multitude" of Armageddon survivors will also be on the earth, and all of these will meet and greet earth's new "princes". Concerning God's anointed King of The Theocracy it is written (Psalm 45:16): "Instead of thy fathers [they] shall be thy children, whom thou may make princes in all the earth."

In this day of judgment upon the nations many persons are, by reason of the warning being published throughout the earth by Jehovah's witnesses, seeing that Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and other faithful men of old will be the earthly of representatives of the invisible, heavenly Theocratic Government of Jehovah God by Christ Jesus the Messiah, and that therefore those faithful men will be in God's kingdom organization. At the same time they see, that the religious Jews, the natural descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and their modern day counterparts, the religionists of the present time, will be cast away. The religious practitioners hear the message of warning as it is proclaimed to those of good-will toward God, and they bear the announcement made by the Lord that Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and all the prophets shall be in the Kingdom organization, and that the religionists are cast out; and that makes them very mad; and, being exceedingly angry, they gnash their teeth against the witnesses of the Lord. In this day of judgment the great Judge, Christ Jesus, says to those hypocrites: "Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you [who claim to be. the spiritual successors of God's covenant people Israel] shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yon yourselves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God." Luke 13: 27-29.

Manifestly that "son of perdition", Judas, who betrayed Jesus Christ, was a type of the "man of sin" company. Just before his death Judas was filled with remorse to such a degree that he went and hanged himself. This may indicate that the "man of sin" class, just before their complete destruction at Armageddon, will realize not only that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are in the realm of the Kingdom but that those composing the religious "man of sin" have no show whatsoever of being of the Kingdom, and then they will be filled with remorse.

When Abraham was offering up his only, son Isaac as a sacrifice, Abraham pictured Jehovah God, the great Theocrat; Isaac was a type of Christ Jesus, the only-begotten and beloved Son of God; and Jacob, the grandson of Abraham by Isaac was a type or picture of The Christ. Christ Jesus being the Head and the true church being "his body". (See Colossians 1:18.) Thus was The Theocracy prophetically pictured. The persons of good-will, the Lord's "other sheep" who shall form the "great multitude" of Armageddon survivors, now see and appreciate The Theocracy, and such are now coming to God's kingdom, and they are coming from all parts of the earth, and they find refuge, protection, rest and comfort under the organization of Jehovah. The faith exhibited



today by these who are not spiritual Israelites often exceeds the faith and zeal for God manifested by those who claim to be Israelites after the spirit and in line for the Kingdom.

Concerning this Jesus said: "Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto You, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness; there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth." Matthew 8:10-12.

Today the information is being brought directly to the clergy and to the "evil servant" class, who claim to be Israelites after the spirit and many of whom were, no doubt, once in line for the Kingdom. These are being told that the Kingdom is at hand and that all who support The Theocracy shall find life, and those oppose it shall be destroyed. The "other sheep" of the Lord, hearing this message are coming from all quarters of the Earth and from all walks of life amongst the common people. These now see and appreciate

The Theocratic Government. They see that Abraham pictured the Greater Abraham, Jehovah God. That Isaac pictured Christ Jesus, the beloved Son of God. That Jacob pictured The Christ, Head and body; and that such constitutes The Theocratic Government. Seeing this by faith, they hasten to put themselves under The Theocracy, and thus they "sit down" with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, composing the heavenly Theocracy. By the words "sit down" it is shown that they have found rest, protection, ease and comfort and know what God has in reservation for them that love and serve Him. At the same time those once in line for the Kingdom come to a realization that they are cast out and are in "outer darkness", and hence they indulge in howling and wicked persecution of God's people. (Matthew 8:12) Other scriptures show that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and all the faithful prophets, resurrected from the dead, will be on earth immediately preceding Armageddon, and the people of good-will who shall form the "great multitude" foretold at Revelation 7:9-17 will be literally associated with those "princes in all the earth". Therefore this scripture (Matthew 8:11 above quoted) is subject to this double meaning.

At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house which is called and known as "Beth-Sarim". The Hebrew words Beth Sarim mean "House of the Princes". The purpose of acquiring that property and building the house was that there might be some tangible proof that there are those on earth today who fully believe God and Christ Jesus and in the Theocratic Government, and who believe that the faithful men of old will soon be resurrected by the Lord, be back on earth, and take charge of the visible affairs of earth. The title to Beth-Sarim is vested in the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY. You may soon meet Abraham, Daniel, and other like faithful men, who shall be here as perfect men acting as governors of the new world. Eagerly seek their instruction and hang on their words of wisdom and grace, because they will lead you ill the way of righteousness. They are God's "princes". [*Consolation, Volume 23, Number 579, November 26, 1941, Page 17.*]

## **CONSOLATION, MAY 1942**

San Diego Officials Line Up Against New Earth's Princes

The amazing story of San Diego officials' disgrace

Petition of thousands of San Diego citizens ignored

Consolation, Volume 23, Number 592, May 27, 1942.

"And in His name shall the nations hope." - Matthew 12:21, ARV.

### **San Diego Officials Line Up Against New Earth's Princes**

BEFORE his death Judge Rutherford made the simple request that his remains be buried somewhere on the hundred-acre estate at San Diego, California, held in trust for the New Earth's Princes. The house built thereon he named "Beth-Sarim". It was deeded to those princes. On March 14, more than two months after he passed to his reward on January 8, the San Diego County Planning Commission handed down the decision that nowhere upon this land could his bones repose.

This was their second denial of a permit for burial, claiming to act under a county ordinance which expressly provides for cemeteries in this area but requires that a conditional permit from the Planning Commission be first obtained. This the commission refused as to two different sites. The action of the Planning Commission was contrary to the county ordinance, allowing cemeteries in this district.

Just how a man's bones, buried without monument or even conspicuous marker, in the center of 100 acres of land, a half mile from the closest outside house, could disturb anyone is left for the commission to explain. The VFW, who petitioned against the granting of the permit, prejudicially explained it this way: "Judge Rutherford, during his lifetime, taught intolerance, and, therefore, as a manifestation of our tolerance, we do not wish him buried."

During the nine weeks from the day of Judge Rutherford's death until the denial of the second petition by the Planning Commission, the WATCHTOWER and its legal agents, who were charged both by the judge's request and by statute to bury his body, made exhaustive efforts to discharge their responsibility, and were blocked at every turn by officials both of the county and of the

state, including the state director of public health, the state attorney-general, and even the office of the governor. The record of this whole affair is so outrageous that it is brought to public attention as disclosing the depth of meanness resorted to by religionists to satisfy their vindictiveness even on lifeless bones. It also furnishes a perfect example of those ensnared by religion. They have foolishly thrown away all Worthiness of life merely for the brief satisfaction of spite.

Several years ago, Judge Rutherford assigned to the WATCHTOWER the right for the burial of his remains. In early 1940, and just before the Detroit convention in July, he was attacked by severe illness and afterward recovered sufficiently to continue through that convention, and to make five surpassing speeches to the marvelous St. Louis convention of August, 1941. By November, 1941, the illness had gained ground, and he was compelled to have an operation, in Elkhart, Indiana. It was then that he expressed the desire to get back to California, and he was subsequently brought to Beth-Sarim by train and ambulance.

For some time it had been apparent to all, even the best medical experts, that he could not recover. The judge had yearned to see the ancient witnesses (mentioned in the 11th chapter of Hebrews) return to earth at Beth-Sarim, which place (held by the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY for these men) by name means, in Hebrew, "House of the Princes." As he thought he might die before that event, he wanted his bones left on the property. These facts are brought out more fully in the statement to the County Planning Commission on January 24, hereinafter set forth.

In order to comply with the law, a cemetery corporation was formed of members of the Beth-Sarim family, and a plot of ground was deeded to this family corporation, about three hundred feet from the residence and so far down the canyon slope as to be invisible from every house on the heights. The corporation was known as Beth-Sarim's Rest, and this small plot bore the same name. This was completed in December, and approximately three weeks later the judge passed on to his higher work. While it had been expected, to those near him and aware of his serious condition, his death was none the less a terrible shock to those who had worked with and loved him for many years.

One, suffering from this great loss on the very day of the death, had the death certificate filled out, and, with the mortician, requested the burial permit. It was then that the county officials delivered their first wallop to an afflicted and bereaved family. No permit would be granted for burial on Beth-Sarim's Rest, even though it was a legal corporation and the death certificate was in order, unless Beth-Sarim's Rest were granted a conditional permit to operate a cemetery in this part of the county.

The district attorney advised that in 1940 an ordinance restricting this area was passed, but allowing cemeteries on conditional permit from the Board of Supervisors. Naturally this information disturbed a family already shaken by death; but due application was made to the Planning Commission, and, after forcing the family to leave the remains in the mortuary for two weeks, the Commission deigned to consider the matter and refused the permit.

Meanwhile the two weeks were an awful nightmare. Judge Rutherford was much hated by the religionists; and when his death was known, the press dug up every lie invented by the clergy for the past twenty years, and smeared their pages with lying malice. As a result a continuous stream of cars thronged the road and sidewalk which dead-ends just beyond the house, and great congestion resulted. The grave had been dug and the cemetery premises were entered by trespassers, and so much damage done that the police and sheriff's office had to be notified, still without abatement of this disturbing nuisance.

Children and their religious parents indulged in jeering epithets as they passed the house, in a manner hitherto unheard of toward a grief-stricken family. It was horrifying indeed to hear shouted to the household from the street: "How long are you going to keep the old boy on ice?" Could anything but the hate of religionists have inspired such conduct! Since this whole affair brought into focus Beth-Sarim, the 'House of the Princes', it would be of interest to here consider its erection and purpose.

### **Beth-Sarim**

The "princes" above referred to are the faithful and true servants of Jehovah, to whom Jehovah gave His promise that they should be the visible governors upon earth, after the King, Christ Jesus, has ousted and destroyed the enemy. "Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment!" (Isaiah 32:1) The book Salvation contains a discussion of these princes (Pages 307-310), and a picture and consideration of the history and purpose of Beth-Sarim (Pages 311-313). The above pages were read to the court in the first hearing on the petition for writ of mandamus. These princes will be the visible representative of the invisible capital organization of Jehovah, which is known as the Kingdom, or THE THEOCRACY. They will no longer be known as the "fathers" but since their life, as well as the life of all others who shall live on earth, proceeds from the King, Christ Jesus, they will henceforth be called "children." "Instead of thy fathers [many were the physical ancestors of Jesus] shall be thy children, whom thou [Christ Jesus] may make princes in all the earth." - Psalm 45:16.

The Watchtower magazine, under the title "Demon Rule Ending", in consideration of the 11th chapter of Daniel, plainly demonstrates that the time for the return of these princes is near. The fact that Daniel's prophecy is now unfolded concerning the identity of "the king of the north" and "the king of the south", which could be understood only at the "time of the end", when Daniel would stand in his lot as one of the earthly governors under The THEOCRATIC GOVERNMENT, indicates that: Daniel and the others will be here "any time now". "I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven." Here is reference to the happy people that will have these ancient witnesses, resurrected in human perfection, as their visible governors, and THE THEOCRACY, or "kingdom of heaven", over all.

Beth-Sarim, therefore, in 1929, was built as a tangible proof of faith in these prophecies. The Scriptures indicate that there will be a present-day modern meeting between the last of the Christian witnesses of Jehovah with these resurrected princes who were the pre-Christian witnesses of Jehovah. Judge Rutherford, for the Society, accepted the house from one who loved the Lord and u ho

awaited the early return of the princes, to be held in trust for them. The house was not built with Society's funds, but by the giver of the property. The deed from this man to Judge Rutherford for the Society was widely publicized by the public press and scoffed at and ridiculed by them.

It is recalled in passing that for many years Noah was scoffed at while he laboriously constructed the ark at the commandment of the Most High. The conditions then pictured the present era of scoffers. The last jeer then was cut off by the icy waters of the Flood, picturing the impending battle of Armageddon, which will sweep away all laughter and life itself from those who have mocked God's purposes.

### **Judge Rutherford's Winter Workshop**

For twelve winters Judge Rutherford and his office force occupied Beth-Sarim. It was not a place of ease or vacationing, but was used as a winter workshop; the books from Vindication, Book One, down to and including Children were written there, as well as many Watchtower articles and booklets. The executive instructions for branches all over the earth also were transmitted from Beth-Sarim during the judge's presence there. It was indeed a "work house", as all can testify who watched him pour on, his faithful devotion to the commission from Jehovah. Revelation 2:10.

At Beth-Sarim, Judge Rutherford completed the 1942 Yearbook material as his last work before his death. He dictated this material from his dying bed. For more than forty years he had left a nation-wide political career with the Democratic Party and devoted his life to the Lord as a Christian.

For just two days over a quarter of a century he had served as president of the WATCHTOWER. During that time he suffered imprisonment, vilification and personal abuse such as has been heaped upon few since the days of the apostles. On the other hand, he had the unspeakable privilege of putting nearly 400,000,000 books and booklets in the hands of the people, feeding them on the Lord's Word, the Bible. Compare,

"He said unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, love thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Love thou me? And he said unto him, Lord thou knows all things; thou knows that I love you. Jesus said unto him, Feed my sheep." - John 21:17.

Certainly Judge Rutherford received the crown of life as a spirit creature; for Jehovah is "the faithful God, which keeps covenant and mercy". (Deuteronomy 7:9. text in the 1942 Yearbook for January 8, the day of his death) "We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye." Corinthians 15:51, 52; Revelation 2:10; 2 Timothy 4:8.

Judge Rutherford was familiar with the fact that those men of old, Jacob and Joseph asked for their burial at the place of the interment of Abraham. (Genesis 50:13) The body of Joseph was embalmed and remained in Egypt for many years and because he had commanded it before his death, the Israelites carried his bones with them when Moses led them from Egypt, and buried them in Shechem more than a hundred years later. (Exodus 13:19; Joshua 24:32). Moses successor, Joshua, was buried the border of his inheritance (Joshua 24:30) "Gideon the son of Joash died in a good old age, and was buried in the tombs of Joash his father." (Judges 8:32) The Scriptures abound with other burial requests which were, respected. Ruth 1:17, 2 Samuel 19:37; 2 Chronicles 16:14.

Judge Rutherford looked for the early triumph of "the King of the East", Christ Jesus, now leading the host of heaven, and he desired to be buried at dawn facing the rising sun, in an isolated part of the ground which would be administered by the princes, who should return from their graves. Even his burial request was a token of faith.

### **First Location Denied by Commission**

Between the time of his death and the first public hearing before the Planning Commission sixteen days later, the enemy had busied themselves to get 259 property Owners, a few of them neighbors to Beth-Sarim, to sign a petition opposing the burial of the judge's body on the site selected! The location first plotted for the small cemetery, which cemetery, it was claimed by the enemy, the law required even for a single burial, was on a knoll about three hundred feet from the house, almost a hundred feet below in the canyon and entirely, invisible from every house in Kensington Heights.

Most of those who signed the petition of protest against the burial were induced to do so by the falsehood that a cemetery for thousands of Jehovah's witnesses was proposed. Many of these regretted signing and admitted being misled and all the immediate neighbors either signed a second petition favoring the burial or refused to further aid the opposition.

Even at this first bearing a petition was presented on which the Board of Supervisors gave the official count of 1,070 names of persons favoring. During this entire affair Jehovah's witnesses got petitions bearing the names of 14,693 people of good-will in the county of San Diego and officials of the County Commission and Board of Supervisors, and other officials, received more than letters favoring the application for burial. During the various hearings (in all there were three appearances before the Planning Commission and three before the Board of Supervisors) the malicious attacks upon the memory of a dead man, and upon the living Jehovah's witnesses, disclosed a religious prejudice which could emanate from only one institution on earth, i.e., the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The assaults fell heavy upon those who felt keenly the ignominy of being unable to bury their dead.

Be it said to their credit that both the San Diego Tribune-Sun of January 24 and the San Diego Union of the 25th gave unbiased reports of this hearing. The report of the Union is quoted in full:

### **COUNTY PLANNERS DENY RUTHERFORD BURIAL PLEA**

"But the Lord counts it done unto himself anything done against His servants or even the bones of His servants." With that admonition ringing in their ears, San Diego county planning commissioners yesterday denied the dying wish of a servant of Jehovah,

and recommended against granting a permit to bury Judge Joseph Franklin Rutherford on a lemon and orange tree studded knoll adjacent to his Kensington Heights residence.

World leader of Jehovah's witnesses, the 72-year old Judge died January 8 in Beth-Sarim, the 4440 Braeburn Road residence he maintained for the men who died faithful to Jehovah in Israel's days and who he believed would return.

Against the admonition, voiced by W. P. Heath Junior, vice president of Beth-Sarim's Rest, a corporation organized to operate a non-profit cemetery association, the commission weighed the written and verbal protests of individuals and organizations who fought the Permit application.

"I move we deny the request," said William L. Baskerville, commission secretary.

"Second the motion," said Commissioner O. B. Wetzell, of El Cajon. The vote was unanimous and will be conveyed to the county supervisors, who must take the final action, in the form of a recommendation.

Heath indicated he will plead his case before that body and will argue, as yesterday, that:

1. He, and his associates want a permit to bury only one person, Judge Rutherford, and that no monument would be placed or erected, and that only a grave marker would be a stone beneath an oak tree surrounded by orange and lemon trees.

2. That the hillside plot, isolated and inaccessible, never would have appearance of a cemetery.

3. That neither individuals nor the values of their property could be affected adversely by granting the permit.

"I believe in religious freedom and I also believe in the laws of my country," said James C. Henderson, of 4373 Middlesex Drive, one of the most outspoken of the protestants.

"But this organization refuses to salute our flag," he shouted. "Its members won't fight against totalitarianism. They won't fight for liberty. When dealing with an organization like that, how can we feel we can trust them when they say they will bury only one person there! They have beliefs which go beyond our Constitution; beyond our flag."

### **Loses Composure**

For 90 minutes the commission listened to the arguments, heard soft-spoken Heath, who lost his composure only once when he was overcome with emotion while reading his argument, faltered, and was forced to stop for several moments.

"The house called Beth-Sarim was built by Judge Rutherford as a monument of his faith in The Theocracy," he explained. "The Theocracy is another name for the Kingdom of God, for which all Christians have been taught to pray."

"After its completion, Beth-Sarim was held in trust for the visible representatives of The Theocracy. These men will shortly be resurrected and made the official governors, or princes of the earth.

"They are specifically mentioned in the 11th Chapter of Hebrews. Among them are included Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joshua and Gideon, all of whom died faithful to Jehovah in the days of ancient Israel.

### **Respected By LORD**

"It is remarked in passing that many of these men requested that their bodies be buried in specific places and the Lord respected their requests."

"Heath explained too that Rutherford's desire to be buried at sunrise was for the reason that Christ Jesus, the Theocratic King is spoken of as the King of the East, and the Chief King of the Sun Rising. Many Scriptures show that the glory of Jehovah is symbolized by the sun and sun rising. One day the sun rose for the last time, on a faithful Servant of Jehovah."

"Judge Rutherford can never be hurt again but the Lord counts as done unto himself anything done against his servants or even their bones.

### **SQUARELY UP TO BOARD**

"The matter is squarely tip to this board. Will they grant a request that can hurt no one, or will they block, at the instance of misinformed individuals, the last wish of the servant of Jehovah? That responsibility is upon you, and an one of the Jehovah's witnesses I have discharged mine before you..

Byron Gilchrist, Kensington-Talmadge Men's Club president, summarized the opposition's arguments in the following letter:

"This club, composed of property owners and residents of the Kensington-Talmadge area, desires to go on record with your honorable body as being strenuously opposed to the granting of a permit to any or all individuals, organizations or associations who seek or may seek to create a Cemetery zone or a burial ground, either private or public, in the Kensington-Talmadge, area.

### **FEAR LOSS IN VALUE**

"It is felt that a cemetery or burial ground so close to that fine residential district of beautiful homes would decrease property values, retard sales and have a depressing effect on present residents of the area.

"It is further thought that the granting of such a permit would establish a precedent which might be of unknown magnitude and that like burial grounds could be created at any point in the county."

Protests also included a petition signed by 259 Kensington Heights property owners, and a letter from a bank which is trustee for the W. W. Whitney estate, whose beneficiaries include the Associated Charities, Helping Hand Home, Salvation Army, San Diego



Children's Home, San Diego Humane Society, San Diego Museum Association, San Diego Society of Natural History, the YMCA and YWCA. Virtually all those organizations filed individual protests.

### **SIGNED BY 1000**

Heath submitted a petition signed by 1000 persons who favored the application, and introduced A. L. Jacobs, who m the next-door neighbor of the judge said, "If he wanted to be buried them, that's the place to put him."

"Are you a member of Jehovah's Witnesses?" asked Gilchrist.

"I am not," was Jacobs' emphatic reply. "I'm not even in sympathy with it."

Councilman Ernest Bond and Harry Foster, both residents of the district, also argued against the application. Rutherford's body is in a San Diego mortuary.

The Board of Supervisors, in total disregard of the urgency of the matter, delayed action until February 2. Meanwhile the representatives of the Society were forced to make an extensive trip to Sacramento and San Francisco to see state officials because of the unreliable information purposely given by the local district attorney's office. The Board of Supervisors, after nine days' deliberation, likewise denied the application.

### **Petition Denied for Second Site**

On the same day a request was again made of the local registrar, Dr. Alexander Lesem, for a permit to bury on a spot a half mile from the closest house in the county. There was no health hazard and no law forbidding, but he refused, because the district attorney's office told him to refuse. It was realized that legal rights had been trampled on, and as the Society's representatives had no other adequate remedy, a petition for writ of mandate (mandamus) was brought in the County Superior Court, to force Dr. Lesem or Recorder Howe to issue the permit,

This hearing brought out some very interesting points concerning burials and cemeteries in the state of California, including an incredible mix-up of conflicting laws and ambiguous definitions. Just what the legislators really meant to allow or prohibit is pretty much of a mystery. However, California Supreme Court decisions throw some light on the subject: (1) burials in the county are legal even when not in cemeteries; (2) the court looks with disfavor on all sorts of zoning restrictions in remote parts of the county; (3) the wishes of the deceased, if such "can be ascertained" are binding upon those charged to carry out his burial.

Legal counsel for the WATCHTOWER, and who was complimented by the presiding judge for his competent handling of the law and argument, ably represented the interests of the Society, and finished an eloquent plea with these words:

Jesus was the most hated man that ever lived on earth, but, after He was killed by hanging on a tree, the authorities permitted that His body be buried on private property. (Matthew 27:60) But Judge Rutherford, whose record as a champion of American liberties and freedom of worship, whose briefs on these subjects, followed in several decisions by the Supreme Court of the United States, Place him in the highest rank of lawyers in this land, and who, above all, was a faithful servant of the Moot High God, cannot even be buried. I respectfully ask that the petition for writ of mandate be granted so that his bones may be properly buried.

The judge decided to continue the case so that the new site could be brought before the Planning Commission, and application for a cemetery made thereon, thus indicating that the second plot was a proper place for burial and if the application was refused the petition for writ of mandate could be amended to correct the matter on order of court. The Planning Commission, who deliberated for more than two weeks, investigating the site, was haled before the court, and denied the second application for a cemetery.

### **Prejudice in Its Ugliest Form**

Certain of the facts regarding this second application and its denial, March 14, disclose how prejudice in its ugliest form was whipped up against the petitioners. New location for interment was in almost the center of the property known as Beth-Shan, which is roughly 75 acres of canyon and mesa land, adjoining Beth-Sarim but separated by a half width of canyon.

This property, also belonging to Watch-Tower, has one small and one large dwelling upon it and a few outhouses, and consists of some fruit trees and other cultivated patches in aggregate about seven acres, and about 65 acres of unreclaimed brush, either too steep, or rocky, or inaccessible for development. It offers retreat for all forms of animal life common to this portion of southern California, such as coyotes bobcats (lynxes), rabbits, Blue Mountain quail, doves, and songsters of many varieties, all of which die and are buried without fuss under the leaves Of the cactus and greasewood. Judge Rutherford, in a discussion before his death, had said that as a second choice he wished to be buried somewhere on these wild acres.

In order that all the objections made in regard to the first site near to Kensington Heights might be removed in regard to this new site, it was requested that only a ten-foot-square cemetery be granted. The spot was also inaccessible except by private road a half mile long and closed by a gate. Dr. Alexander Lesem looked at the site himself and declared that there was no health hazard. (He also stated that there was no health hazard in the first site.) However, Jehovah's witnesses realized all pressure would be exerted by the Hierarchy operating from Rome in an effort to reproach the Lord's name and strike at even the bones they hated; so a petition was circulated among the people of goodwill, and in less than three weeks 13,623 names were signed. (Adding the first 1,070, this makes 14,693 names of persons petitioning the various county officials to grant the request; all ignored by them.)

### **Heart Of Flint**

The preliminary hearing on this second petition was held on February 28, and it was pointed out to the commission that this change of location had been made to satisfy all reasonable objections of anybody; but if the commission denied the petition because



they hated the servant of the Lord, such a course would bring serious and disastrous results on them. It was especially emphasized that the enemies of the Lord should not be lamented nor buried, but should lie as dung upon the ground, and that it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God". - Jeremiah 25:33; 2 Kings 9:37; Hebrews 10:31.

They appeared to listen attentively, heard Several of Jehovah's witnesses and others express themselves in favor, allowed the opposition to let out a few yelps, which were more subdued when it was asked that the chairman put them under oath, then decided to postpone the decision for two weeks while they visited the site. They visited the site, declared the beautification of the grounds to their liking, then denied the petition without further hearing.

This latter denial occurred March 14, as has been stated above. On March 5 there appeared in article in the Tribune-Sun that the San Diego Council of the Veterans of Foreign Wars sent a communication to the Planning Commission which terminated as follows:

"Now therefore San Diego County Council, v. p. w., recommends disapproval of any request to establish a burial plot for Mr. Rutherford other than at a bona fide cemetery."

"Harold Angier post 383, American Legion, also went on record as being opposed to the burial in other than an established and recognized cemetery."

It thus appeared that the American Legion and the V.F.W. are at their old work of serving the Hierarchy, and this time they have the temerity to interfere in the proper burial of the servant of the Most High. It would be a dangerous thing to interfere with anybody's burial, when Jehovah has said, bust thou art, and unto dust shall thou return." (Genesis 3:19) Only agents of the Hierarchy, whose pope Martin V commanded the remains of the Bible translator John Wycliffe be dug up, forty-four years after his death, and burned and the ashes thrown into the river Swift, could stoop to anything so despicable.

### **Earth's Meanest Organization**

About this time evidently the heat and pressure from the Hierarchy got a bit too strong for the Union and the Tribute Sun, which had handled the matter rather fairly theretofore. When a letter was written to the editor of both Papers (the two are combined) stating that the witnesses of Jehovah were in truth and in fact patriotic and concerned in the welfare of the people of the country, whereas the Legion and the VFAV serve the religious power that is allied with America's enemies, namely, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy; the editor replied that the newspaper was "not interested in any way in the religious phase of the controversy". No doubt the part of the letter which called attention to the treachery of the priests in the Philippine Islands which assisted their capture by the Jape, and to the pope's line-up with Catholic Hitler, Mussolini and Franco, was a bit too shocking to his religious susceptibilities. It was also pointed out that Judge Rutherford had disclosed this link between the Axis powers and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and, in doing so, had rendered America and England a patriotic service.

The letter in answer to Edward T. Austin, editor-in-chief of the San Diego Union and Tribune-Sun, contains the following paragraph:

"Be assured that I wrote that answer to the lying charges [of the V.F.W.] in order to discharge my responsibility before God and before men, that you would have opportunity to right a wrong if you wished to. Since you do not, that ill your misfortune. It does not in any way absolve you from responsibility for bearing false witness against the Lord's servants, nor relieve you of any of the blame for the iniquitous acts of them which may be taken as a result. 'A false witness shall perish?' (Proverbs 21:28) 'He that justifies the wicked, and he that condemns the just, even they both are abomination to the Lord.' (Proverbs 17:15) Respectfully, one of Jehovah's witnesses, [signed] W. P. HEATH, Junior.

The Planning Commission convened again, having in the meantime inspected the premises with many flattering comments as to its beauty. Jehovah's Witnesses also were in attendance at the meeting room to the number of about 150. With the utmost lack of courtesy the commission kept this audience waiting for restatement of the facts for two hours and a half while they allied with zoning regulations destined to take the living from poor farmers and residents in many parts of the county. After this unnecessary wait, during which half of the people could not even be seated, the august commission announced that nothing more would be heard about this burial site and in the space of about a minute and a half they called for a vote and denied the application forthwith. Heath then asked for permission to be heard, and this was granted with poor grace. They accepted the additional 4,500 petition signers, but did not turn them over to the Board of Supervisors at all. Asking the further leave to refute the charges made against Jehovah's witnesses in a recommendation by the VFW above described, this was met with refusal. Major McCauley said these words: "Our patience is at a limit; we cannot spend any time with this; we are too busy with defense work; although to the personal knowledge of 150 witnesses had not been mentioned all day. The audience was dismissed without further ado.

### **Second Court Hearing**

The second application, above scribed, before the Planning Commission and the Board of Supervisors had been made at the sole suggestion of Judge Mundo, at the conclusion of the first hearing. After the denial of the second site by the commission and the board, they also were named in an amended petition for Writ of Mandate, and commended to appear before Judge Mundo for final hearing. This petition therefore included the registrar, the recorder, the Planning Commission and the Board, of Supervisors, both individually and officially.

Twelve weeks had now elapsed during which Jehovah's Witnesses had gotten the usual run-around from the buck-passing county officials. The case was set to begin April 1. Court opened with a restatement of the facts here to fore considered and the purpose of the plaintiff corporation, Knorr, and Heath to obtain relief and their just rights. The second hearing was drawn out eight

days, due to the fabrications of the defendants. The facts and motives behind the conduct of the various county, officials opposing the burial were soon to have an airing that will interest all.

None of these dignitaries ever appeared in court, however. Their defense was undertaken by the district attorney's office, with results which will be demonstrated progressively. On the first day of the trial Judge Mundo ruled that the unreasonable action of these boards could not be questioned but only the law itself might be attacked on constitutional grounds. Much evidence regarding the prejudice revealed above was thus kept out of the court record.

### **Deewall The Expert**

Fighting against the Lord, however, may not be kept secret. "For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known." (Luke 12: 2) An insignificant member of the district attorney's office, whose name escapes our memory at present, who had previously engineered the opposition, represented the county officials at the hearing. He chose to use the Planning Commission engineer, one Deewall, as a witness, who unwittingly gave a rather good cross section of the conduct, prejudice and mentality of his superiors, the district attorney and deputy, the Board of Supervisors and the Planning Commission. During two days of cross examination he revealed the following information as an expert!

According to his opinion there were no cemeteries needed in this sparsely settled area, and in the future, when a cemetery did become necessary because of the increased population in the district, if permitted it would be too close to houses and would therefore be objectionable. This statement was made in behalf of the Planning Commission in spite of the fact that the ordinance specifically provided for cemeteries in the district.

### **Should Prominent Men Be Massacred?**

After it was shown that no monuments would be erected, and that indeed the site would be completely invisible to anyone on the outside, Deewall continued to object that the fact of one grave there would disturb the super susceptibilities of himself, the Planning Commission, and others, twenty years hence.

He testified further to the fact that the chief requisite of a cemetery was natural barriers; and this location had exactly such barriers, but the difficulty here was that Judge Rutherford, the one to be buried here, was prominent. Conclusion: Prominent men should not be buried. Along about this point Mr. Deewall considered himself in rather hot water. He sought safer territory.

All other objections being eliminated he maintained that view lots across the canyon from the spot, several hundred feet away, would be seriously reduced in value by this invisible grave. When confronted with the known fact that the most valuable lots in the exclusive Kensington Heights area overlooked the Old Spanish Mission in the San Diego river valley, where many graves are in plain view of everybody, in explaining the difference which made those graves unobjectionable, and even raised the value of the property, Deewall said: "The remains of those buried at the Old Mission were massacred"; thus holding, in behalf of the Planning Commission, that whether a grave was objectionable or not depended on the manner in which the person met his death.

The moral here seems to be that one has to be massacred in order to be buried without objection from the Planning Commission and their stooges. This remarkable conclusion was reached in spite of the fact that the Board of Supervisors and the Planning Commission allow, by ordinance, cemeteries and burials without limitation in the adjoining zone, in the county, and, as far as we have been able to ascertain does not insist that the people be massacred, prominently or otherwise.

Mr. Deewall admitted that the defendant Lesem, county health officer, stated that there was no health hazard from the proposed burial, but, nevertheless, insisted that superstitious persons might be affected.

### **Consecrated Grave versus Open Sewer**

All zoning laws derive their validity from the police power of the officials to protect the health, morals and general welfare of the people. In this regard Mr. Deewall was never able to explain how this concealed grave would be a detriment to the community while the officials maintained an open sewer within full view of the grave, over the long-standing protest of the plaintiffs, Heath and WATCHTOWER. In other words, the statement of Jesus, "[They] strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel" (Matthew 23:24), can be paraphrased to describe properly the Board of Supervisors, the Planning Commission, and Deewall thus: "They strain at a single grave and swallow a sewer creek!"

Limited space prevents quoting all the "wisdom" of Deewall as handed down from the witness stand. He spent several days of agony on the stand trying to explain these ridiculous conclusions. He became so accustomed and in the habit of making evasive explanations that the habit continued with him when asked leading questions by his own counsel. The deputy district attorney would reframe his question several times, and each time he would get a different answer from the witness. The court was treated to one of the most farcical exhibitions in side-stepping and buck passing by the witness that is seen outside of a football field.

The Board of Supervisors and the County Planning Commission called as their chief support an insignificant city councilman, claiming to reside in Kensington Heights, who based his entire testimony on admitted prejudice against Jehovah's witnesses and who became so angered at the truth that the judge had to rebuke him for his uncouth language, used in open court.

The San Diego city planning engineer Mr. Rick, summed up their real position as follows: If it were an ordinary man there could be no objection to this burial.

The undisputed facts showed that plaintiffs Heath, Knorr and WATCHTOWER were entitled to have the permit for the burial of Judge Rutherford issued as requested.

The Board of Supervisors and County Planning Commission questioned the validity of the trust in the deed covering the property where the proposed burial was to take place. The plaintiffs hold the property in trust for the ancient witnesses of Jehovah God described in Hebrews 11, Who died in faith of THE THEOCRACY and whom Jehovah has promised to resurrect and bring back to earth as the visible governors of all people under The THEOCRATIC GOYFRXMENT. The Planning Commission and Board of Supervisors contended that the property could be conveyed and subdivided. Under the law and the deed it cannot. It therefore became necessary to show that the deed contained a reasonable and legal trust.

The plaintiff William P. Heath, Junior, one of the creators of the trust in question, testified as a witness and explained to the court that the trust was for real men and was altogether reasonable and certain of performance. In this connection he told the court, among other things, as follows:

### **Awaiting New Earth's Princes**

Jesus bought all the obedient of mankind, including those who will be the princes. (Romans 5:12; 6:23; 1 Corinthians 15:22) At present these men, who died long ago, are in "hell", which means the grave. Jesus testified to the fact that no one had ascended to heaven before His resurrection and therefore the conclusion is inescapable that these men are resting in death. Explaining their certainty of resurrection Jesus showed that when God told Moses that He was the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob He was not the God of the dead but the God of these men who would receive the promise of life in due time. Psalm 89:48; John 3: 13; Acts 2: 34 Matthew 11:11; 22:31, 32; Exodus 3:4-6.

A "prince" is a sovereign ruler appointed by and acting under the direct command of the supreme or higher powers. Jehovah and Christ Jesus are the Higher Powers. (Romans 13:1) The chief ruler amongst men appointed by Jehovah is a "prince".-Book Children, pages 180-181; Genesis 32:28; 1 Kings 14:7.

The faithful acts of the men who were known as "fathers in Israel" are recounted in the eleventh chapter of Hebrews. Genesis 12:1-3; 28:13, 14; Acts 7:2-5.

As previously pointed out these men will receive their life as all other human creatures through the King Christ Jesus; therefore it is written, "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou may make princes in all the earth." (Psalm 45: 16) "Behold, a king (Christ Jesus) shall reign in righteousness, and princes [Abraham and the others] shall rule in judgment." (Isaiah 32: 1) The Lord further declares. "I have purposed it, I will also do it," (Isaiah 46:11); and, 'My word shall not return unto me void.' (Isaiah 55:11) Therefore we have it upon the highest authority, the Word of God, that these men shall be resurrected as princes. We know that they will be.

These men will be the visible representatives of The THEOCRACY, which is the government created and built up by the Almighty God as His capital organization and which shall rule the world. Further proof that these princes will shortly take office upon earth as perfect men is found in the prophecy of Daniel. "But go thou thy way till the end be; for thou shall rest, and stand in thy lot at the end of the days." (Daniel 12:13) Daniel's "lot" is that of these princes. Proof is now submitted that we are now living at "the end of the days", and we may expect to see Daniel and the other mentioned princes any day now!

### **"The End of the World" Is Now**

"The end of the days" is also spoken of in the Bible as "the end of the world". When Jesus was asked by His disciples He answered that such would come or be evidenced by nation rising against nation, famines and pestilence, such as are now prevalent in Europe and elsewhere. He counseled as follows: "When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place... then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains." - Matthew 24:15, 16.

Jesus therefore said in cryptic phrase that the end of Satan's uninterrupted rule of the nations of the earth today would be marked by wars and calamities and the rising of a "desolating abomination". This abomination refers to the totalitarian combine bent on destroying the earth and all that dwell therein. Those who saw these conditions were admonished to flee to THE THEOCRACY, pictured by "the mountains".

It was of this same Theocracy that Daniel wrote, at the Lord's dictation, 'And in the days of these totalitarian kings shall the Lord God of heaven set up His kingdom, THE THEOCRACY, which shall consume all these wicked ruling powers, and it shall stand for ever.' (Daniel 2:44) This proves beyond any doubt that the Axis powers are doomed to everlasting destruction-Psalm 92:7.

To those who do not agree with or understand the provision in this deed for the returning princes such may seem ridiculous, but the court is reminded that Noah also was ridiculed for building the ark as a testimony to his faith in the Lord's promise to destroy wickedness by the Flood. During the years the ark was undergoing construction faithful Noah was constantly jeered at by the religionists. He was not deterred thereby, and he received the Lord's protection while his tormentors perished.

An exactly parallel condition exists today. Armageddon will sweep away all those who laugh now at the Lord's purposes and particularly at the provisions contained in these deeds. These events will not occur in the distant future as some claim but very shortly. Jesus said, 'When the totalitarians are destroying the earth, and conditions like that in Noah's day exist, it is evidence that the full setting up of THE THEOCRACY is at hand. This event will take place during the lifetime of the generation which now witnesses this fulfillment of prophecy.' (Luke 21:31, 32) 'The Lord owns the earth and the fullness thereof,' and He provided for the remains of those who died to return to the dust of the ground. (Psalm 104:29; Genesis 3: 19) It is therefore dangerous to prevent the bodies of the Lord's servant from coming to their proper rest

### **Princes Promised Earthly Resurrection**

As early as 1920 Judge Rutherford pointed out that the ancient witnesses or princes were promised an earthly resurrection by the Lord. In that year he delivered a public address at Los Angeles, California, entitled "Millions Now Living Will Never Die", in which he called attention to the expectation of the return of the men above mentioned. All the publications since emphasize the same fact.

It therefore appears that the return of the princes is a fundamental teaching of the Scriptures. It is as certain as the truth of God's Word. Judge Rutherford gave much of his life in endeavoring to bring this vital matter to the people's attention. What, then, could be more fitting and appropriate before God and before men than that his bones should rest on the land held in trust for the men whose coming he was privileged to announce. For this reason a strenuous effort has been made to comply with unreasonable human laws, that the demands of the state be met and the Lord's servant be granted his last wish.

Reasonable regulations regarding the burial of the dead are necessary in a civilized land and with such Jehovah's witnesses have no argument; but where unreasonable, contradictory and absurd regulations are set up for the sole purpose of fighting the Most High, such is a dangerous course for officials to pursue, and public attention is called to the fact for the benefit of all.

In this connection it is worth noting that Joseph died and was embalmed and his remains left in a coffin on top of the ground in Egypt. Because he had commanded before his death the Israelites carried bodies with them on their long trek to the Promised Land. More than a hundred years elapsed between Joseph's death and his burial in Shechem. Genesis 50:26; Exodus 13:19; Joshua 24:32; Hebrews 11:22.

### **Objections Were All Eliminated**

While on the witness stand Mr. Heath also testified that he desired to eliminate any possible objection to a burial in the district; he said no markers and no monuments would be erected, and there would be no pilgrimages; he desired only to bury the bones as his friend wished done.

During the delivery of Heath's testimony, Judge Mundo interrupted to ask two questions. The first was: The WATCHTOWER maintains several homes. HOW will these governors know how to go to San Diego, instead of to Brooklyn, or somewhere else?

To this the judge was answered: The Almighty God, who made the heavens and the earth, who has power of life and death, and who can resurrect by "creating at any spot on earth, taking note of the faith of His servants in dedicating these places to their return, we are assured He would send them to the place prepared for them. Furthermore, if He desired to resurrect them at some other place he would have the power to direct them or transport them there. He has almighty power and His hand is not shortened.

Then the judge asked: Suppose the Japanese were to level that property off during an air raid, what would happen then?

The answer: We submit, your honor, that we trust in the Lord for protection.

There are many instances in the Bible where His servants, the Israelites, were powerless to meet the foe and the Lord fought their battles in their behalf; such as the cases of Barak and Deborah against Sisera (Judges 4: 15) at the destruction of the Egyptians in the Red sea Exodus 14, 15); Jehosophat (2 Chronicles 20); Gideon (Judges 7); and Joshua (Joshua 6:27): and time would fail me to mention them all.

It appears that the enemy to cast reproach upon the Lord and His servant by preventing his proper burial. Let the commission and the supervisors consider and compare their action with what God's Word foretells concerning the treatment of Jehovah's witnesses by His enemies, to wit: "And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. And they of the people and kingdoms and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall NOT SUFFER THEIR DEAD BODIES TO BE PUT IN GRAVES. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another: because, these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the Earth." - Revelation 11:8-10.

### **The Devil's Poor Care of His Own**

The Devil is therefore using these various officials and commissioners and boards, whether they realize it or not and in this they have been entrapped! This burial, therefore, gives for further separating or the "sheep" from the "goats". Many were the good people who saw and continue to see the viciousness of officials who would not permit the proper burial of the dead, and the hand of the Hierarchy behind the whole matter was freely discussed on the streets. On the other hand, others made their decision on the side of the entrenched religionist, and their portion is with the Devil. So, in reality, while these agencies were desperately striving to thwart a burial, it was not the fate of the bones which they decided, but their own destiny.

Nor is their blood on anyone's head, because they were told times that to fight against God or tamper with His servant's bones even, would bring upon them the condemnation of the Lord. They ignored such warnings and acted wickedly when a proper course would not have affected them in the least, "because it is in the power of their hand." - Micah 2:1.

So their responsibility is fixed, and they followed the course of Satan, who strove for the body, of Moses and tried to stop the resurrection of Jesus. (Jude 1:9; Matthew 27:62-64) How great is that burden may be gathered from the words which on one occasion were called to their attention: "See now that I, even I, am He, and there is no god with me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand." - Deuteronomy 32:39.

Among other things counsel for plaintiffs, Knorr, Heath and WATCHTOWER SOCIETY, fitly described the un-American and Fascist action of the defendants, officials, thus:

The officials have admitted that they would permit an ordinary man to be buried on this site or plot and that the burial would not disturb anyone, but they contend that because Judge Rutherford was not an ordinary man he cannot be buried as requested in California. The only thing that distinguished Judge Rutherford from the ordinary man was that he was a faithful servant and witness of



Almighty God. If the time has come when a man cannot be buried in this state because he was a servant of the Lord, then it is high time for the courts, to take some action to protect those who dare to worship Jehovah God. The action of the defendants outrages the community and is a disgrace to the entire state. This court should protect the Planning Board and Board of Supervisors from the snare in which they find themselves, to wit fighting against Jehovah God in this matter, which brings everlasting death. We are entitled to the writ of mandate.

### **Judge Rutherford's Final Witness**

At the conclusion of the hearing Judge Mundo did not decide the matter promptly, but stated that he would take two weeks to render his decision. He denied the writ of mandamus and refused to make the county officials do their duty under the law. The ruling of the judge approving the illegal conduct of the aforesaid county officials was contrary to a score or more Supreme Court of California decisions providing that burials were allowable in the county. He also ruled contrary to the Supreme Court of the United States and overruled the rights of those charged with the burial, contrary to the U. S. Constitution.

Very few persons give heed to the Word of the Lord, but rather, most persons follow their own counsel.

“Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: he instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little’. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.” - Psalm 2:10-12.

After the judge's decision those handling the matter of burial decided that there was no use to appeal to higher courts of California, which would delay the burial one year. They decided to proceed with the burial immediately. The remains of J. F. Rutherford, accompanied by the mortician, Mr. Lewis, were then sent east, for interment at Watchtower, radio station WBBR, Staten Island, New York. Adjoining the Society's property there is a burial plot, and the remains of Judge Rutherford were interred alongside others of his brethren with whom he had fought a good fight against the Devil's organization for many years. Burial was made in the Society's plot at sunrise, Saturday, April 25, 1942.

This faithful servant of the Lord gave a grand witness to the honor of Jehovah's name and poured out his life in the interests of God's THEOCRATIC GOVERNMENT. All who knew him rejoiced in his zeal and their privilege of associating with a faithful servant of the Most High God, Jehovah. With his burial ends his last earthly witness to the praise of the Almighty God, Jehovah. *[Consolation, Volume 23, Number 592, May 27, 1942, Pages 1-16]*

## **THE NEW WORLD, 1942**

The Lord Jesus has now come to the temple for judgment, and the remnant of the members of “his body” yet on earth he has gathered into the temple condition of perfect unity with himself (Malachi 3:1-3), and hence those faithful men of old may be expected back from the dead any day now. The Scriptures give good reason to believe that it shall be shortly before Armageddon breaks.

In this expectation the house at San Diego, California, which house has been much publicized with malicious intent by the religious enemy, was built, in 1930, and named “Beth-Sarim”, meaning “House of the Princes”. It is now held in trust for the occupancy of those princes on their return. The most recent facts show that the religionists of this doomed world are gnashing their teeth because of the testimony which that “House of the Princes” bears to the new world. To those religionists and their allies the return of those faithful men of old to ride with judgment over the people shall not bring any pleasure. But to the people whom the angels sang about, “men of good-will,” it shall be an occasion for unbounded jubilation, and they shall rally to the side of those princely representatives of the kingdom of heaven. Concerning the contrast between those goatish opposers and these sheep-like ones Jesus foretold, saying to the religionists: “There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.” - Luke 13:28, 29; Matthew 8:11, 12. *[The New World, 1942, Page 104, 105]*

## **JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES 1943 YEARBOOK**

Built in 1929, at San Diego, California, the house named Beth-Sarim. has been the focal point of much enemy ridicule because it was deeded to Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David, Jephthah, and other righteous men of old whom God has promised to make "princes" in His New World. Much publicity has been given to Beth-Sarim, Society property, due to naming it Beth-Sarim, which means "house of the princes", in expectation of the resurrection of these faithful men of old to be "princes in all the earth".

It was at this home that Brother Rutherford, the former president of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY, finished his earthly course of life, on January 8, 1942. Immediately thereafter considerable publicity was again given the home. It was the wish of the former president to be buried on this property, but the "city fathers", along with the religionists, put up a great howl. The details of the controversy will be found in Consolation No. 592.



The people of good-will in San Diego showed their desire to have Judge Rutherford's wishes complied with, by 14,693 of them signing a petition, but their desires were ignored. By the circulation of this petition a real witness was given in this territory for a period of months.

The brethren living at Beth-Sarim and on property adjoining thereto look after the interests of the Kingdom at that place. A course of study is conducted there similar to that at the Bethel home, under the direction of a competent instructor. Seven brethren that live there and take care of the property spend a great portion of their time in the field service, organizing study groups and caring for the people of good-will. [*Jehovah's Witnesses 1943 Yearbook (1942), Page 33, 34*]

## **WATCHTOWER, DECEMBER 1947**

Tonight, however, came the one report that was especially awaited by all the convention, that of the Society's president, Brother Knorr, who took as his theme "All Nations Expansion". On his world-tour of 47,795 miles he had had his most blessed experience in Australia, where the Lord had used him to help the brethren to recover from the damaging course taken by many of them during World War II. The contrary but right course taken by their brethren to the north in the Philippine Islands resulted there in great numerical growth and showed the good effects of following God's Word rather than fallible men in the organization. Brother Knorr then discussed farms and refuge places which served no good purpose in the expansion work and which were accordingly being disposed of. This led logically to his referring to the Society's property at San Diego, California to wit, the house Beth-Sarim meaning "House of Princes". The audience, now grown to 32,107, applauded when informed that the Society's board of directors had voted unanimously to dispose of Beth-Sarim, either by outright sale or by rent, because it had fully served its purpose and was now only serving as a monument quite expensive to keep; our faith in the return of the men of old time whom the King Christ Jesus will make princes in ALL the earth (not merely in California) is based, not upon that house Beth-Sarim, but upon God's Word of promise. [*The Watchtower, December 15, 1947, Page 382*]

## **JW'S IN THE DIVINE PURPOSE, 1959**

Thursday was an exciting day, the morning, afternoon and evening sessions being devoted to reports from Gilead missionaries. On this day, too, 3,381 persons were immersed. "Branch Day," which came Friday, was also a thrilling day of news of world-wide theocratic expansion.

### **THE TIME FOR THE PRINCES TO APPEAR**

Then on Saturday, August 5, came stimulating and enlightening "Knowledge of God Day." The Society's president released simultaneously in English and Spanish the new book "This Means Everlasting Life." Also on this day the Society's vice-president delivered an epoch-making speech. It was called "New Systems of Things," and the conventioners present will never forget its effect on the audience. For many years it had been the view of The Watchtower that the faithful men of old who served God faithfully before Jesus' time would be raised from the dead even before Armageddon to join in organizing Jehovah's modern-day people and to share in shouldering the remnant's responsibility of representing the Lord Jesus Christ in the capacity of overseers of the flock of God on earth. These men were variously referred to as "ancient worthies," "faithful men of old," and "the princes" In the light of Psalm 45:16. Perhaps you'd like to read that, Lois.

"In place of your forefathers there will come to be your sons, whom you will appoint as princes in all the earth."

Thank you. Because of the understanding of this text that had prevailed for so long, many of Jehovah's witnesses expected at every convention to greet Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David and the others, welcoming them back from the dead. You can imagine, then, the electrifying effect on the audience this statement of the speaker made:

Would this International assembly be happy to know that HERE, TONIGHT, in our midst, there are a number of prospective PRINCES OF THE NEW EARTH?

The convention Report describes the audience's reaction and answer to this question:

A tremendous and sustained clapping of hands and shouting for joy assured the speaker that nothing at the moment interested them more. A hushed and profound silence then settled over Yankee Stadium. Every ear strained in order not to lose a syllable as Brother Franz began a discussion of some very important facts concerning Psalm 45:16.

In this year, 1950, the speaker observed, there are hundreds of thousands of "other sheep" who are fully dedicated to Jehovah. These have gone farther in belief than Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham and Sarah, for those ancient people merely looked forward by faith to the coming Seed. Christ, but these "other sheep" of today have actually accepted Jesus as the Savior and King. Instead of pointing into the indefinite future toward the Kingdom, these sheep now declare the Kingdom actually established.

Moreover, these modern witnesses have suffered just as much for their faith as Jehovah's witnesses of old. They have been killed, have gone about in animal skins, have been ill treated and have been forced to seek shelter in desert and mountain retreats. When Brother Franz noted that there was nothing that scripturally argues against Christ's making many of these "other sheep" "princes in all the earth" as required, thunderous applause again interrupted his momentous speech.

The speaker then explained that the word “prince” is translated from the Hebrew word sar and does not always designate a person of royal birth. In fact, he pointed out, “It means the first, foremost or chief in any class, the head of any company or group.” The term “prince” would not be applied as a title therefore, but would merely designate an office of a “servant.”

This interesting Point was also brought out: Back in 1904 the first president of the Watch Tower Society wrote the sixth volume of Scripture Studies, entitled “The New Creation”. In chapter 3, entitled “The Call of the New Creation”, he had this to say, at the top of page 157: “And we may be sure that any consecrating and performing a full sacrifice of themselves in the interest of the Lord’s cause after the heavenly class is complete, will find that the Lord has plenty of blessings of some other kind still to give; and that all of his blessings are for such consecrators, self sacrificing. Possibly they may be counted In with the ancient worthies who had the sacrificing disposition that is pleasing to God, prior to the beginning of the ‘high calling’.

Another reference years after that one was also quoted. It was in The Watch Tower in its issue of September 1, 1915. In an article on the “harvest work,” paragraphs 5 and 6 (pages 268, 269) suggested that those dedicating themselves to God after the door to the heavenly class was closed, yet before the “inauguration of the restitution work,” would be accepted “not to the spirit plane of being, but to the earthly plane. Such would come in under the same conditions as the ancient worthies who were accepted of God.”

It was in this same talk at the Saturday evening session that the Society’s vice president explained the relationship of the “new heavens” and “new earth” and pointed to them as a part of the “new systems of things.” Then, in the conclusion of this memorable discourse, the speaker summarized this new and fuller appreciation of Jehovah’s witnesses in the divine purpose:

With these transporting prospects so close before us, let us keep theocratic organization and let God continue improving It as a new world society. Never may we look back to this modern Sodom which is reserved for destruction; but we will keep faces forward in full faith. Onward, then, steadily, all of us together, as a new world society! [*Jehovah’s Witnesses in the Divine Purpose, 1959, Pages 252, 253*]

## **LET YOUR NAME BE SANCTIFIED, 1961**

Rutherford was abed on the Pacific Coast when the United States of America was plunged into World War II Sunday, December 7, 1941. Two men of the anointed remnant (one since 1913 and one since 1922) and one of the “other sheep” (since 1934) were summoned from Brooklyn headquarters out to Rutherford’s bedside at the home called “Beth-Sarim,” San Diego, California. On December 24, 1941, he gave these three his final instructions. For years he had been hoping to see the faithful prophets, including Elijah and Elisha, resurrected from the dead and installed as Kingdom “princes in all the earth” in God’s new world. (Psalm 45:16) But on Thursday, January 8, 1942, Rutherford died at seventy-two years of age, as a faithful witness of Jehovah God, completely devoted to the interests of God’s kingdom. He had proved himself fearless in support of Jehovah’s side of the paramount issue of Universal Domination. [*“Let Your Name Be Sanctified” (1961), Page 335*]

## **JEHOVAH’S WITNESSESS 1975 YEARBOOK**

By November Brother Rutherford’s critical illness had gained ground and he was compelled to have an operation at Elkhart, Indiana. Thereafter he expressed a desire to go to California. So he was taken to a San Diego residence known as “Beth-Sarim.” For some time it was apparent to his associates and the best medical experts that he could not recover.

Briefly it may be said that Brother Rutherford had a severe case of pneumonia after his release from unjust imprisonment during 1918-1919 because of his faithfulness to Jehovah. Thereafter he had only one good lung. It was virtually impossible for him to remain in Brooklyn, New York, during the winter and still carry out his duties as the Society’s president. In the 1920’s he went to San Diego under a doctor’s treatment. The climate there was exceptionally good and the doctor urged him to spend as much time as possible in San Diego. That is what Rutherford did ultimately.

In time, a direct contribution was made for the purpose of constructing a house in San Diego for Brother Rutherford’s use. It was not built at the expense of the Watch Tower Society. Concerning this property, the 1939 book Salvation stated: “At San Diego, California, there is a small piece of land, on which, in the year 1929, there was built a house, which is called and known as Beth-Sarim.”

Sister Hazel Burford was one of the nurses who cared for Brother Rutherford during his final illness at Beth-Sarim, where he was taken In November 1941. She tells us: “We had the interesting times, for he got to where he would sleep all day and then all night long he was busy with the Society’s business and kept us on the move!”

One morning about the middle of December three brothers, including Brother Knorr, arrived from Brooklyn. Sister Burford recalls: “They spent several days with him going over the annual report for the Yearbook and other organizational matters. After their departure, Brother Rutherford continued to weaken and, about three weeks later, on Thursday, January 8, 1942, he faithfully finished his earthly course and graduated into fuller service privileges in the courts of his heavenly Father! Later that day the news was sent to the Brooklyn headquarters by long-distance telephone at 5:15 PM.

How was news of J. F. Rutherford's death received at Brooklyn Bethel? "I will never forget the day we learned of Brother Rutherford's passing," comments William A. Elrod. "The announcement was brief. There were no speeches." [*Jehovah's Witnesses, 1975 Yearbook (1974), Page 193, 194*]

## **BRIEF MENTIONS OF BETH-SARIM**

The Golden Age, September 2, 1931, 800

Presents an offer for five issues of The Messenger Columbus convention report and Rutherford's booklet, The Kingdom, the Hope of the World. "In addition it carries an account of the much-talked-of house Beth-Sarim, and many splendid views of the place."

The Watchtower, February 1, 1933, 34

"Readers of The Watchtower will please note that Brother Rutherford is at Beth-Sarim, San Diego, during the winter. Mail sent to him for the next three or four months should be addressed as follows: J. F. Rutherford, 4440 Braeburn Road, Kensington Heights, San Diego, California."

The Watchtower, December 15, 1937, 370

"For the next five or six months the president's address will be 4440 Braeburn Road, Kensington Heights, San Diego, California."

The Watchtower, October 15, 1943, 317

"In February, 1942 'there was established at 'Bethell (Society's headquarters) in Brooklyn, at 'Watchtower' on Staten Island, New York, at the 'Kingdom Farm,' South Lansing, New York, and at 'Beth-Sarim,' San Diego, California, what was then called the 'Advanced Course in Theocratic Ministry.'"

The Watchtower, November 1, 1955, 655.

"Hazel O. Burford, nurse: "A week later I was privileged to accompany Brother Rutherford and his party to California, where we lived in Beth-Sarim, the 'House of the Princes,' for the next eight weeks until his death January 8, 1942."

The Watchtower, June 1, 1985, 27

Daniel Sydlík: "The passing years have been enriched by human relationships with dedicated and devout men who loved Jehovah more than life itself - men such as Judge Rutherford, whom I had the privilege to meet in his home in San Diego."

The Watchtower, March 1, 1992, 27

Sandra Cowan: "Often we preached near Beth-Sarim, which was where the ailing president of the Watch Tower Society, Brother Rutherford, had spent the winters before his death in 1942. We visited regularly and had dinner with the fulltime servants there."

## **NEWSPAPER ARTICLES MENTIONING BETH-SARIM**

San Diego Union & San Diego Sun (Tribune-Sun)

March 15, 1930: 1, 3 San Diego Sun

"San Diego Mansion With All Modern Improvements—Awaits Earthly Return of Prophets"

January 9, 1931: 15 San Diego Sun

"David's House Waits For Owner-Bearded Tramp Only Claimant to Home for King"

January 10, 1942: B-7 San Diego Union "Deaths Funeral Announcements"

January, 11, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union

"Judge Rutherford Succumbs; Led Jehovah's Witnesses"

January 12, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union

"Death of 'Witnesses' Leader Brings Burial Complications"

"Plea For Private Cemetery Delays Rutherford Funeral"

January 12, 1942: A-6 & A-21 Tribune-Sun  
"Rutherford Burial Held Up; Cemetery Near Home Sought" (A-6)  
"Residents Protest Rutherford Burial" (A-21)

January 13, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union  
"Vault Permit Delays Burial Of Rutherford"

January 21, 1942: A-3 San Diego Union  
"Many Protests On Rutherford Burial Received"

January 21, 1942: 12 Tribune-Sun  
"Protests Filed By Rutherford Neighbors"

January 24, 1942: A-1, A-4 Tribune-sun  
"Private Cemetery Arguments Futile"  
"Hillside Grave Plea Rejected: Rutherford Problem Left to Supervisors"

January 25, 1942: A-2 San Diego Union  
"County Planners Deny Rutherford Burial Plea"

January 27, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union  
"Supervisors Delay Action On Rutherford Burial Plea"

February 3, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union  
"Special Burial Permit Refused For Rutherford"

February 17, 1942: A-4 San Diego Union  
"Court Decision on Rutherford Burial Awaited"

February 18, 1942: B-7 San Diego Union  
"No Will Left By Rutherford, Says Secretary"

February 19, 1942: A-6 San Diego Union  
"Rutherford Followers Plan New Partition"

March 5, 1942: A-15 Tribune-Sun  
"Letters on Rutherford Burial Request Deluge Supervisors"

March 16, 1942: A-2 Tribune-Sun  
"Grave Permit Up to Courts"

March 16, 1942: A-9 San Diego Union  
"Planners Again Oppose Burial of Rutherford"

March 17, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union  
"Court Action Indicated as Burial Denied"

March 20, 1942: A-17 San Diego Union  
"Political, Religious Prejudice Charged in Burial Request"

April 4, 1942: B-10 San Diego Union  
  
"Deewall Quizzed In Burial Case"

April 7, 1942: B-1 San Diego Union  
"Boud Quizzed On Rutherford Burial Site"

April 9, 1942: B-3 San Diego Union  
"Rutherford Case Decision Duel"

## **THE MESSENGER, SATURDAY, JULY 25, 1931**

### **Beth - Sarim Much Talked About House in San Diego**

The House of the Princes. Somebody Paid a Hundred Thousand Dollars for Advertising the Resurrection of the Old Testament Saints. But Not Us. Come Again, Reporters

"All men have not faith," and there is no use in expecting, men to exercise faith when they do not have it. At the present time there is only a handful of people in the world who really know that the Bible is the Word of God. Since the Bible is the Word of God, then we may depend upon it that it was especially written for us who are living, just now, when Satan's organization is slipping down into the abyss from which it will never arise.

God has a people in the earth at this time. These people are his people, and not the Devil's people. They look like other men but they are not the same. They are governed in what they do by the Word of God. Their desire to do God's will as they find it recorded in His Word is the all-consuming passion of their lives; it means more to them than all else ill the world put together.

We know who the people of God are. They are, collectively God's "faithful and wise servant" in the earth at this time. Collectively this "servant" goes to make up the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society. There is no other "servant." God does not have fifty-seven or even two different ways of doing his work in such an hour as this.

### **What the Back and the West Side Look Like. Do You Think David Will Like It?**

It is the positive conviction of the "servant" that the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society is being used and will be used by the Lord to proclaim God's name and Word and judgments in the earth and to help God's people, both those who are free and those who are in the Devil's cages, to grasp the blessings and to see the duties and privileges of the hour.

Judge Rutherford, president of the Watch Tower Society, is one of the hardest-worked men in the world. Anybody can be a Christian in peace-time, but Judge Rutherford was one of the wartime Christians; and, for daring so to be, went to Atlanta Penitentiary under four sentences of twenty years each.

When he emerged he was in poor physical condition, and even now has the use of but one lung. Since his return from Atlanta, prudence and good common sense dictated that, working as hard as he constantly works, he should have the benefit of the most equable winter climate to be found. It is a matter of common knowledge among meteorologists (weather experts) that San Diego, California, is as near perfection for a winter climate as it is possible to get. About a quarter of a million people besides meteorologists, have made the same discovery and make the city their winter home.

For years after he emerged from prison, Judge Rutherford went to San Diego to work during the winter months, renting such quarter as could be secured. His physician, Dr. A. G. Eckols, of San Diego, urged him to make the city his permanent winter home; and in the latter part of the year 1929 some brethren, out of their own personal funds, arranged for the erection of Beth-Sarim, "the house of the princes," of which several illustrations appear in this issue.

Before Judge Rutherford would accept and use the home, he insisted upon writing, the (iced that it shall forever be held in trust by the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society for the use of the Lord's work in the Earth, with the expectation that in due time Abraham, Melchisedec Joseph, Moses, Joshua, David, Isaiah or some others of the patriarchs or prophets of olden times will appear and will be glad to use this home which has been prepared for one or more of them in the western edge of the new world.

The climate is the same as that of Palestine. The place is planted with date and palm trees, such as would be familiar and pleasing sights to these men. On the part of Judge Rutherford the dedication of this house to God's work and for the use of these men was, a simple act of faith. To a few newspaper men this exhibition of true faith in God and in his Word has seemed to give occasion for a little display of semi-mirthful incredulity; but for the most part the newspapers have treated the item with dignity, and the story of Beth-Sarim has gone around the world, conveying to millions of people the thought that shortly David and others will no doubt be awakened from the sleep of death.

Whatever the motive of the newspaper men, their action resulted in giving free world-wide publicity to a Bible truth, the resurrection on earth of the faithful Old Testament saints, publicity such as would have cost the Society thousands and thousands of dollars.

Another feature, an ominous one for those caught in Satan's toils, is that the "evil servant" class, instead of being glad to see the preparation for and the use of adequate equipment for doing the Lord's work, seem to have the spirit of Judas when he said, "Why was not this ointment sold and the proceeds given to the poor?"

The record shows that Judas cared nothing about the poor. What he really wanted was to get his hands on that money for himself. And the reason he wanted it for himself was not so that he could use it to the glory of God. His thought in the matter was wholly selfish, wholly indefensible. And the Judas' class are like Judas himself. They are all, of the same stripe. [The Messenger, July 25, 1931, Page 6]

## **THE MESSENGER, THURSDAY, JULY 30, 1931**

Princess Bonnie



So many people have called up The Messenger office and wanted to know the identity of the little girl who had the privilege of interviewing Brother Rutherford and how she came to have such a privilege, that we give just a little explanation:

How could we know, when we published a picture of Judge Rutherford talking to a little girl that it was going to start a small sized revolution in the Nursery? And how could we know that a whole battalion of mothers would lie in wait for the Judge and try to ambush him into talking to their kiddies, too? It is something he likes to do, but he doesn't get much time for it.

There is a particular reason why Brother Rutherford was talking to that particular little girl. Here are the facts:

Brother and Sister Balko are in charge of Beth-Sarim. They spend all their spare time in the service work in and about San Diego, both being fully devoted to the Lord, and therefore are Jehovah's witnesses. They have two children, a little girl now nearly two years old, and a little boy about six months. Beth-Sarim being "the house of the princes," and, as we confidently expect to be occupied and used by some of the princes in the earth, it seemed quite appropriate that these children who are growing up there should be named in harmony with these scriptures. Hence the little girl is named Princess Bonnie Balko, and the little boy Prince Joseph Barak Balko. We know from the scriptures that both Joseph and Barak will be among the princes, and since there are some women also mentioned amongst these faithful ones it is hoped that these two little ones may grow up at Beth-Sarim to be with the rulers of the earth and live forever to the glory of Jehovah's name.

They have been told, in so far as they can understand, that they may expect these noble men and, when they do appear, to meet them and put themselves completely under their direction. It might be that this little prince and princess would be stenographers or office children or clerks about the place or performing some other duty that will be necessary in the Kingdom. Everything will then be done in order and there will be plenty for every one to do. Little Princess Bonnie was listening to some kind words of good cheer when the front-page picture of our issue of July 29 was taken. [The Messenger, July 30, 1931, Page 2]

## **10. The 1975 Date**

by Alan Feuerbacher

It's interesting to note how Jehovah's Witnesses today often minimize what the Watchtower Society said about 1975 in the years before that date. The Society published a number of cautionary notes warning JW's about being too specific about the date, but they also published a good deal of material encouraging people to look forward to the date.

Here are set forth some published statements that show how strongly some of the Society's writers promoted the 1975 date. Some statements were definite that 1975 would bring Armageddon.

It all started with the release of the book *Life Everlasting--In Freedom of the Sons of God* in the summer of 1966. The chronological table it contained, which showed the end of 6,000 years of human history in 1975, along with explanatory comments that the date might very well see the beginning of Christ's millennial rule, created a sense of urgency among Jehovah's Witnesses that was reflected in subsequent Society publications, including and especially in *Kingdom Ministry* articles. For example, the October 1966 KM (for the U.S.) stated in the "Dear Publishers" letter (p. 1):

quote:

All of us who attended one of the "God's Sons of Liberty" District Assemblies this past summer were given much to think about, weren't we? The talks and the dramas made us feel the urgency of the times and the need of walking circumspectly before Jehovah.

This KM encouraged the placing of the special October 8, 1966 issue of *Awake!*, which considered the topic "Why Does God Permit Wickedness?" This issue contained the article "How Much Longer Will It Be?" in answer to the question "when will God bring an end to wickedness?" Under the subheading "6,000 Years Completed in 1975," it reasoned that the millennium would be the last 1000 years of a 7000-year rest day of God. On pages 19-20 it said:

quote:

The Bible shows that when God began to shape the earth for human habitation, he worked for six "days," or time periods. From the indications in God's Word, **each was apparently 7,000 years in length.** Then Genesis 2:22 states, Jehovah "proceeded to rest on the seventh day from all his work that he had made." **This seventh day, God's rest day, has**

**progressed nearly 6,000 years, and there is still the 1,000-year reign of Christ to go** before its end. (Rev. 20:3, 7) This seventh 1,000-year period of human existence could well be likened to a great sabbath day, pictured by the sabbath day God commanded ancient Israel to keep after working for six days. (Ex. 20:8-10; 2 Pet. 3:8) After six thousand years of toil and bondage to sin, sickness, death and Satan, mankind is due to enjoy a rest and is in dire need of a rest. (Heb. 4:1-11) Hence, the fact that we are nearing the end of the first 6,000 years of man's existence is of great significance.

**Does God's rest day parallel the time man has been on earth since his creation? Apparently so.** From the most reliable investigations of Bible chronology, harmonizing with many accepted dates of secular history, we find that **Adam was created in the autumn of the year 4026 B.C.E. Sometime in that year Eve could well have been created, directly after which God's rest day commenced.** In what year, then, would the first 6,000 years of man's existence and also the first 6,000 years of God's rest day come to an end? The year 1975. This is worthy of notice, particularly in view of the fact that the "last days" began in 1914, and that the physical facts of our day in fulfillment of prophecy mark this as the last generation of this wicked world. So we can expect the immediate future to be filled with thrilling events for those who rest their faith in God and his promises. It means that within relatively few years we will witness the fulfillment of the remaining prophecies that have to do with the "time of the end."

Continuing the theme of urgency, the December 1966 KM said (p. 4): "Never have we felt the nearness of Armageddon and the urgency of our work as we do now."

The February 1967 KM contained an insert with the sub-article "Serving Jehovah in the Time Remaining" (pp. 4-5). It commented on the number of "vacation pioneers" and asked, "what motivated them to vacation pioneer?" The answer included these comments:

quote:

Many of them had in mind Jesus' electrifying words: "This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur." Our very generation is seeing the sign marking Jesus' second presence. Truly, "the time left is reduced." (Matt. 24:34; 1 Cor. 7:29) For this reason many of your brothers, young and old, appreciated the importance of serving God **in the time remaining.** Having Scriptural responsibilities that prevented them from sharing in the ministry as regular pioneers, missionaries or members of Bethel families, they demonstrated their appreciation of **the shortness of the time remaining** by vacation pioneering.

The lead article "All the More So" in the July 1967 KM (p. 1) said:

quote:

Are you glad that you have remained faithful until now? Certainly! ... This being true, what should be our attitude toward meeting together **in the days ahead as the end of the old system draws near** and the outside pressures increase? The apostle Paul provides the answer in the verses that support our theme for the month of July. Read carefully Hebrews 10:23-25 and note Paul's encouragement to meet together and build one another up and to do this *all the more so* as we "behold the day drawing near." Obviously, then, we will need to give even more attention to supporting God's house in the time ahead.

The lead article "The Finest Work on Earth" in the October 1967 KM (p. 1) continued the theme of preaching with a sense of urgency: quote:

It is a real pleasure to have a part in the finest work done on earth today, the work Jehovah is asking us to do in these "last days," isn't it? All of us appreciate that **there is little time left** for this present system of things. **In the remaining time** it is our desire to share in the preaching work as fully as possible so as to help many more honest-hearted persons to escape from Babylon the Great.

The lead article "Help Wanted" in the December 1967 KM (p. 1) said:

quote:

"For what?" you may ask. To do the Kingdom preaching work. The remaining time is short, and, as Jesus put it, "the good news has to be preached first," before the old system comes to its end. (Mark 13:10) True, there are more than 300,000 helpers in the field in this country, but we know you will agree that more are needed to get the job done thoroughly.

The March 1968 KM contained an insert titled "An Opportunity to Increase Your Happiness" (pp. 3-6) that encouraged "vacation pioneering" in April. It contained some statements that were electrifying to many of the friends:

quote:

Since we have dedicated ourselves to Jehovah, we want to do his will to the fullest extent possible. Making some special effort to do more than the usual helps us live up to our dedication. **In view of the short period of time left**, we want to do this as often as circumstances permit. **Just think, brothers, there are only about ninety months left before 6,000 years of man's existence on earth is completed.** Do you remember what we learned at the assemblies last summer? The majority of people living today will probably be alive when Armageddon breaks out, and there are no resurrection hopes for those who are destroyed then. So, now more than ever, it is vital not to ignore that spirit of wanting to do more.

It is obvious that the Society was now strongly encouraging the friends to believe that Christ would begin his millennial rule very soon, likely by about the beginning of October 1975. The "Dear Publishers" letter in the June 1968 KM continued this theme:

quote:

Yes, Jehovah has surely filled our mouths with song, and as we move on into June's activities, expressing gratitude in a practical manner, we shall, in effect, be sharing in a victory procession--the joyful march toward mankind's grand millennium of deliverance!

Among the strongest of encouragements about the urgency of 1975 was the article "Why Are You Looking Forward to 1975?" in the August 15, 1968 *Watchtower*. Note that the question was not, "**Are** You Looking Forward..." but "**Why** Are You Looking Forward to 1975?" This is a clear indication that the Society told JW's that they **ought** to have been looking forward to 1975. Many JW's fully took this signal to heart.

The Society published many other statements about what 1975 was likely to bring. Some cautioned JW's not to be dogmatic about the date, but some were themselves dogmatic. Following are some statements that more or less threw caution to the wind.

The October 8, 1968 *Awake!* was a special issue on the topic "Is It Later Than You Think?" It contained the article "What Will the 1970's Bring?", which on page 14, under the subtitle "When Do 6,000 Years End?", said: "According to reliable Bible chronology **Adam and Eve were created in 4026 B.C.E.**" Note how this bolded statement is definite, in contrast to a similar bolded statement in the above-quoted paragraph from the October 8, 1966 *Awake!*. Nevertheless, the article went on to say some cautionary words: "Does this mean that the above evidence positively points to 1975 as the time for the complete end of this system of things? Since the Bible does not specifically state this, no man can say. However, of this we can be sure: The 1970's will certainly see the most critical times mankind has yet known." What message is the reader expected to get from these contradictory statements? Let the reader use discernment.

The May 1, 1968 *Watchtower* was quite definite about when Adam and Eve were created. Under the subtitle "The Seventh Day" (p. 271) the study question for paragraph 4 asked, "**When were Adam and Eve created?**" Paragraphs 4 through 6 answered and said:

quote:

... Thus, Adam's naming of the animals and his realizing that he needed a counterpart would have occupied only a brief time after his creation. Since it was also Jehovah's purpose for man to multiply and fill the earth, **it is logical that he would create Eve soon after Adam, perhaps just a few weeks or months later in the same year, 4026 B.C.E. After her creation, God's rest day, the seventh period, immediately followed.**

Therefore, **God's seventh day and the time man has been on earth apparently run parallel.** To calculate where man is in the stream of time relative to God's seventh day of 7,000 years, we need to determine how long a time has elapsed from **the year of Adam and Eve's creation in 4026 B.C.E.**

The seventh day of the Jewish week, the sabbath, would well picture the final 1,000-year reign of God's kingdom under Christ when mankind would be uplifted from 6,000 years of sin and death. (Rev. 20:6) Hence, when Christians note from God's timetable the approaching end of 6,000 years of human history, it fills them with anticipation. Particularly is this true because the great sign of the "last days" has been in the course of fulfillment since the beginning of the "time of the end" in 1914.

The 1969 edition of *Aid to Bible Understanding* (the equivalent of the *Insight* volumes) indicated that Adam and Eve were created in the same year. On page 333, under the subject "Chronology," it said that the time from Adam's creation to the birth of Seth was 130 years, and on page 538, under the subject "Eve," it said that at the age of 130 Eve gave birth to Seth.

The 1969 booklet *The Approaching Peace of a Thousand Years* was also definite about 1975. On pages 25-26 it said:

quote:

More recently earnest researchers of the Holy Bible have made a recheck of its chronology. According to their calculations the six millenniums of mankind's life on earth would end in the mid-seventies. Thus the seventh millennium from man's creation by Jehovah God would begin within less than ten years...

In order for the Lord Jesus Christ to be "Lord even of the sabbath day," **his thousand-year reign would have to be the seventh in a series** of thousand-year periods or millenniums.

Note the language: for Jesus to be Lord of the sabbath, his Millennial reign **would have to be** (not "it might be") the seventh in a series. This is a definite statement.

At the summer district conventions in 1968 the Society instituted a new six-month bible study program that was to be based on the new "Truth" book -- *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life* -- a.k.a., "the blue bombshell". This program was a direct result of acting on the belief that the times were particularly urgent. The September 1968 *Kingdom Ministry* (p. 8) gave details of the new program in the article "A New Outlook on Bible Studies" in the "Presenting the Good News" section:

quote:

Free home Bible studies are a hallmark of Jehovah's witnesses the world around. How helpful this work has been in aiding hundreds of thousands of persons to come to an accurate knowledge of the truth and to take their stand on Jehovah's side! **But now time is running short for this old system of things** and we want to help as many sheep like ones as we can to learn the truth and act on it **while there is still time**.

So we have a new approach to use in the Bible-study work. Yes, it is still free of charge. But, as suggested at the "Good News for All Nations" district assemblies this summer, we will seek to help as many people as possible through a six-month Bible-study program.

To accomplish this, endeavor to hold your studies each week. If an unavoidable situation arises and you personally have to miss a study, perhaps another publisher with whom the householder is acquainted can conduct the study that week. Progress is directly related to the regularity of the study. Have in mind helping them learn enough of the truth so that they can act on it within six months...

At all times keep before interested ones the importance of beginning to associate with Jehovah's people at the meetings. If, at the end of six months of intensive study and conscientious efforts to get them to meetings, they are not yet associating with the congregation, then it may be best to use your time to study with someone else who really wants to learn the truth and make progress. **Make it your goal to present the good news on Bible studies in such a way that interested ones will act within six months!**

Many JWs were not happy about this new arrangement, because it was very hard to get Bible students under the best of circumstances. For those wanting to qualify to pioneer, it was especially difficult because one of the qualifications was holding several regular Bible studies, so pioneer-wannabes needed to hold on to every student they had. Prior to this time it was not unusual for a Bible student to continue for two to five years before making a decision.

During these years the Society constantly stressed the urgency of the times. The lead article "Making Known an Urgent Message" in the October 1968 KM plugged the above-quoted October 8 special *Awake!* on "Is It Later Than You Think?":

quote:

A few weeks ago you heard a letter read to your congregation about the October 8 special issue of *Awake!* But by now you no doubt have your own copy, and you have seen for yourself what it contains. Isn't it fine? How appropriate this material is for our magazine that bears the title "Awake!" With a powerful array of facts, persuasive argument and visual aids it drives home

the point that we really are living in the "last days." Kindly but firmly **it emphasizes the fact that the time left is very short** and that, if a person wants to serve God and survive into his righteous new system, he must take the necessary steps now.

The November 1968 KM again emphasized the urgency of the new bible study program, and made it clear that publishers were to discontinue studies that were unproductive after six months. This was a two-pronged method that got publishers to be more enthusiastic door-to-door preachers, and forced bible students to really think about what they were learning. The article "In the Short Time Remaining" in the "Presenting the Good News" section (p. 8) gave suggestions on presenting the *Truth* book:  
quote:

How often does your congregation cover its territory? Do you reach every home at least three times a year? Is it a thorough coverage each time, getting each not-at-home and speaking to different occupants in the house? In view of **the shortness of the remaining time**, it makes one stop and think, doesn't it?

Also, after you have found interested persons and started home Bible studies with them, think how long it takes to teach them the truth, bring them along to dedication and baptism, train them in the field ministry and assist them to progress to maturity! Yes, we all do well to think seriously about having a good share *now* in the door-to-door work, not postponing it until some later time.--Mark 13:10.

There are other reasons for sharing fully in the door-to-door work. With the improved method of conducting home Bible studies, many students will be making a decision much sooner than has been done in the past. Some will show the necessary initiative and will act. They will progress toward maturity much faster and the study can be stopped sooner. Others will not act on the knowledge they take in and we will discontinue the study. Thus it will not be a matter of conducting a study for years as some have done in the past but there will be a concluding of studies and a need to start new studies. It will require regular and effective door-to-door work in order for these new studies to be started. It will be good to be conducting more than one study at a time so that we will be regular in this feature of the work and thus will always be teaching someone the truth if one of our studies is discontinued.

The Society published the pointed article "Have You Been Studying for Six Months?" in the May 15, 1969 *Watchtower* (pp. 309-12). It was aimed at new bible students and gave publishers information helpful to get their students to make a decision. Again the idea was that a decision was necessary because of the urgency of the times. The article said:  
quote:

ARE you among the over one million persons who are at present being helped by Jehovah's witnesses to learn what the Holy Bible teaches? If you are, likely you are using the Bible-study aid *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life*. Undoubtedly it has helped you to learn many wonderful things about God and his will for mankind.

Those of you who have been studying the Bible for about six months should by now be in position to decide whether you are going to follow through on what you have learned. Do you really want to become a dedicated and baptized worshiper of Jehovah God and do you want to share with others the life-giving truths from God's Word? ...

#### DECISION NOW IS VITAL

**The urgency of the times** in which we are living requires that we do all we can to bring our lives into harmony with God's will. From what you have learned you know why this system of things is rapidly deteriorating before our eyes. You know the meaning of the unrest and increased violence in all the earth. All this shows that **we have approached the very brink of the earth-cleansing destruction** of which Jesus and the Bible writers prophesied!

This is the most serious time in human history, and **you are living in this time of change. "The world is passing away," the Bible says**, but those who do 'the will of God will remain forever.' (1 John 2:17) Your studying the Bible is to equip you to learn that will of God so you can do it. Yes, there is a purpose behind this study; there is a future attached to it...

**In view of the short time left in which to do their work**, Jehovah's witnesses do not continue to study the Bible with any who fail to respond to its urgent message within six months. **The nearness of this system's end** compels them to use their time in the most effective way possible. So they feel obligated to spend their time calling on someone else who might respond by attending meetings at the Kingdom Hall and by speaking to others about the Bible truths learned. Thus it may be that if you have not as yet responded by even becoming a regular attendee at some of the congregation meetings, the one who



is studying the Bible with you may cancel that study arrangement in order to give his time to someone else. This arrangement is not meant to be harsh, but **the urgency of the times in which we live demands it**. There are millions of persons who need spiritual help and God's servants want to reach all they possibly can.

We, therefore, urge you to consider very carefully your position. You have embarked on a course of study that has opened up to you the magnificent opportunity of life forever in eternal happiness. (John 17:3) If you love God and appreciate his provision for eternal life, do not turn your back on it. Realize that God has shown great consideration for you by making it possible for someone to come to your home to help you learn His will and purposes. Respond to his divine love by deciding now to do his will, along with the entire association of those who are serving God "with spirit and truth."-John 4:23, 24.

The May 1969 KM followed this up with the article "Have You Studied with Them for Six Months?" (p. 3). It instructed publishers who had been studying the *Truth* book with new ones for more than six months to evaluate how the student was doing. After considering a few negative specifics, it asked whether the student fit them and said:

quote:

If so, the fact that the book has not been completed is not a sound reason for spending more than six months with such a person who lacks appreciation. It might be better to go to chapter fourteen, if this has not yet been studied; study it together and then terminate the study if the householder is not taking any positive action to associate regularly with the congregation... Has the student begun to associate with the local congregation in a meaningful way? ... Has the householder demonstrated that he is taking the truth to heart and has set his mind on serving Jehovah? How? If he formerly had images around the house, have these been removed? ...If positive action is not being taken by the householder, it is likely that the study should not be continued... If you are planning to discontinue a particular study, it might be well to spend one or two study periods with the student having a heart-to-heart discussion about the things that have been learned and their significance and **the urgency of the times**, rather than going ahead with a regular study of additional material... **there is an urgency about our work** and we have a responsibility before God to use our time to aid persons who truly want to serve him... **We appreciate the urgency of the work we are doing**. When individuals show by their actions that they want to do Jehovah's will, we will continue to aid them. Where substantial progress is not seen, then, rather than continuing the study, we do well to spend that time each week trying to find and help someone who is sincerely interested in doing something about the truth.

In the March 1969 KM insert (p. 6) the Society urged new ones to begin sharing in field service: quote:

Remember that Jehovah's organization in heaven and on earth backs up those who serve Jehovah by proclaiming the "good news." (Rev. 14:6, 7) We recognize, as you do, that we are deep into the "time of the end." **There is little time left for this old system of things**.

The sense of urgency was effective in getting some students to make a decision. The June 1, 1969 *Watchtower* (p. 347) said:

quote:

Even folks who studied the Bible with the Witnesses for years without acting on what they learned are now taking a decisive stand to serve Jehovah. One family in the southern United States who had studied with the Witnesses for three years had done very little about what they had learned. But when they were told about the new six-month Bible-study arrangement, they were visibly touched. Now for the first time a real sense of urgency struck them. They could not bear the thought of having all connections with Jehovah's people severed. So they sent a letter of withdrawal to the Baptist church because they knew that they were not being taught the Bible's truth there. They began attending all the Bible meetings of Jehovah's witnesses and sharing with others the things they learned.

The lead article "Time Left Is Reduced" in the October 1969 KM again continued the sense of urgency (p. 1): quote:

Time is passing by quickly, isn't it? Just think, each passing day draws us one day closer to the end of this wicked system of things and one day closer to the time when the peace of a thousand years will begin.

The letter from the Brooklyn Branch Office, "Dear Kingdom Publishers", in the December 1969 KM said (p. 1): quote:

We are very thankful to Jehovah that he is giving such increases and gathering so many sheep like persons in these "last days." ... We hope there will be a large number of new publishers joining with us in the service during December and on into 1970. Indeed, we have good reasons to hold our heads up high as we see our deliverance drawing near.

Ironically, the lead article "Faith Builders at Work" in the December 1969 KM said:

quote:

If ever there was a need for faith building it is now. It makes one sorry to see so many people, young and old, with no faith in God and no hope for the future. **Expectations built up by the false promises of secular and religious leaders have been postponed so many times that the hearts of the people in general are sick.** But as the apostle Paul explained, "faith is not a possession of all people." It is, though, of Jehovah's Christian witnesses. We have confidence in the sure promises of the Word of God.--2 Thessalonians 3:2.

The *1970 Yearbook* (p. 34) stressed the urgency of the times:

quote:

Jehovah's witnesses **feel the urgency** of getting this work done under Jehovah God's guidance. They feel **the time is near at hand** for the end of this wicked system of things.

The "Question Box" in the February 1970 KM (p. 4) asked the question, "How should we go about terminating unfruitful Bible studies?" and answered:

quote:

This is a question that we ought to consider if any of our present studies have been in progress for approximately six months. Are they coming to the congregation meetings as yet, and are they beginning to make their lives over in harmony with what they have learned from God's Word? If so, we want to continue to help them. But, if not, it may be that we could accomplish more good with our time by using it to witness to others.

If you realize that you should terminate a particular study, discuss it with the householder in a kindly way. Let him know that you have counted it a privilege to share with him what the Bible says, but remind him that it is a six-month free study course that we offer. Now it is up to him to decide what he will do about what he has learned and to take the initiative to follow through.-Josh. 24:14, 15.

**Emphasize the urgency of the times** and explain that we want to give others the same opportunity to learn the truth and take their stand on Jehovah's side.-Zeph. 2:3.

Explain to the householder that you will be available and that if he wants to get in touch with you you will be glad to help him spiritually. Encourage him to think seriously about the course he should take in order to please Jehovah and to pray about it. Urge him to come to the meetings, and let him know that if he really decides to serve Jehovah and regularly associates with the congregation, you will be glad to resume the study, using more advanced material to help him progress to maturity.

The March 1970 KM reported on how well publishers were doing in dropping unproductive bible students. The article "Become 'Intensely Occupied with the Word'" in the "Presenting the Good News" section said (p. 4):

quote:

A little over a year ago we were introduced to the six-month home Bible-study program. We immediately grasped that this would be an additional effective method **to help get the work done in the short time remaining.**

Now reports from the field show that Bible studies are being discontinued as publishers realize that the student is not making progress. This is entirely proper. There is no reason to spend our time with those who obviously are not really interested in doing something about the truths they are learning. Some publishers still ask, "How can I know whether to discontinue the study when they appear to be interested and still are glad to have me come?" The answer is that we discontinue studies when it is apparent that there is not the appreciation for the truth that there should be. There might be interest in continuing to take in knowledge. But is there appreciation for the knowledge already taken in? Appreciation for Jehovah and the truth is demonstrated by deeds...

Apparently the matter is being taken seriously by the brothers, because circuit servant reports show that many publishers unhesitatingly discontinue studies when the time comes to do so.

In view of the above information from various Society publications -- from *The Watchtower*, *Awake!*, *Kingdom Ministry*, *Yearbooks* and from various books and booklets that have not been quoted here -- it does no good for any of Jehovah's Witnesses to try to say that the Society never encouraged belief that 1975 would bring Armageddon. It is a documented fact that they did.

The Society itself candidly acknowledged some responsibility for the hopes raised by the 1975 expectation. The *1980 Yearbook*, on pages 30-31, mentioned a talk given at the 1979 District Conventions, by the title of "Choosing the Best Way of Life." The talk "**acknowledged the Society's responsibility for some of the disappointment a number felt regarding 1975.**" What did this talk say?

The March 15, 1980 *Watchtower* article "Choosing the Best Way of Life" contains, on pages 17-18, a partial text of the talk. It said:

quote:

In modern times such eagerness, commendable in itself, has led to **attempts at setting dates** for the desired liberation from the suffering and troubles that are the lot of persons throughout the earth. With the appearance of the book *Life Everlasting-in Freedom of the Sons of God*, and its comments as to how appropriate it would be for the millennial reign of Christ to parallel the seventh millennium of man's existence, **considerable expectation was aroused regarding the year 1975.** There were statements made then, and thereafter, stressing that this was only a possibility. Unfortunately, however, along with such cautionary information, **there were other statements published that implied that such realization of hopes by that year was more of a probability than a mere possibility.** It is to be regretted that these latter statements apparently overshadowed the cautionary ones and contributed to a buildup of the expectation already initiated.

In its issue of July 15, 1976, *The Watchtower*, commenting on the inadvisability of setting our sights on a certain date, stated: "If anyone has been disappointed through not following this line of thought, he should now concentrate on adjusting his viewpoint, seeing that it was not the word of God that failed or deceived him and brought disappointment, but that his own understanding was based on wrong premises." In saying "anyone," *The Watchtower* included all disappointed ones of Jehovah's Witnesses, hence including *persons having to do with the publication of the information* that contributed to the buildup of hopes centered on that date.

In this case the "wrong premises" were entirely given to the community of Jehovah's Witnesses by the Society itself, in particular by "**persons having to do with the publication of the information** that contributed to the buildup of hopes centered on that date."

Jehovah's Witnesses are encouraged by the Watchtower Society not to be bothered by the various false predictions it has made. Over the years a number of excuses and minimizations have been published. Note what the above-mentioned 1980 *Watchtower* went on to say:

quote:

Nevertheless, there is no reason for us to be shaken in faith in God's promises. Rather, as a consequence, we are all moved to make a closer examination of the Scriptures regarding this matter of a day of judgment. In doing so, we find that the important thing is not the date. What is important is our keeping ever in mind that *there is such a day* -- and it is getting closer and it will require an accounting on the part of all of us. Peter said that Christians should rightly be "awaiting and keeping close in mind the presence of the day of Jehovah." (2 Pet. 3:12) It is not a certain date ahead; it is *day-to-day living* on the part of the Christian that is important. He must not live a single day without having in mind that he is under Jehovah's loving care and direction and must submit himself thereto, keeping also in mind that he must account for his acts.

In conclusion I will again point out the irony in what the above-quoted December 1969 KM said: quote:

**Expectations built up by the false promises of secular and religious leaders have been postponed so many times that the hearts of the people in general are sick.**

The October 8, 1968 *Awake!* (p. 23) also ironically spoke about the Society's contention that the Bible indicates we are living in the last days. It emphasized that those who falsely predicted the end of the world were false prophets:

quote:

Still some persons may say: "How can you be sure? Maybe it is later than many people think. But maybe it is not as late as some persons claim. People have been mistaken about these prophecies before.".... True, there have been those in times past **who predicted an "end to the world," even announcing a specific date....** Yet, nothing happened. The "end" did not come. **They were guilty of false prophesying.** Why? What was missing? Missing was the full measure of evidence required in fulfillment of Bible prophecy. **Missing from such people were God's truths and the evidence that he was guiding and using them.**

With regard to misrepresentations, and particularly those of the Bible, the 1974 book *Is This Life All There Is?* said (p. 46), without regard for the motives of the misrepresenter:

quote:

Knowing these things, what will you do? It is obvious that the true God, who is himself "the God of truth" and who hates lies, will not look with favor on persons who cling to organizations that teach falsehood. (Psalm 31:5; Proverbs 6:16-19; Revelation 21:8) And, really, would you want to be even associated with a religion that had not been honest with you?

So, all you JW defenders, what will you do?

## **11. Chronology**

Chronology is the frame-work of Watchtower Society; it is the reason for its existence. When Watchtower chronology is shown to be in error, the whole organization collapses.

Originally the Watchtower was raised up as a result of chronology, centered around 1874 AD but after fifty years of teaching this date, the Watchtower admitted it was in error by moving the major date to 1914. However, this 1914 date is also seriously in error and should have been discarded by the Watchtower along with its many other dates which have proved false, such as 1918, 1920, 1925, 1975 etc.

### ***THE WATCHTOWER BEGAN AS A RESULT OF CHRONOLOGY***

"Russell was interested in learning from any quarter, whatever God had to teach. He became Interested in the chronology set forth in the magazine and immediately got in touch with Barbour to arrange a meeting." "Jehovah's Witnesses in the Divine Purpose-page 18 (emphasis mine) "So I paid Mr. Barbour's expenses to come to see me during the summer of 1876 to show me fully and scripturally, if he could, that the prophecies indicated 1874 as the date at which the Lord's presence and the Harvest began. He came, and the evidence satisfied me." – The Watchtower, 1916, page 171.

When Russell became convinced that Christ had come invisibly in 1874, as a result of Barbour's chronology, he immediately began to preach this 'truth', which resulted in the raising up of the Watchtower organization. The Divine Purpose on page 18 tells of one of the first steps he took with his important message:

"In 1877 Pastor Russell called a meeting of all the ministers of Allegheny and Pittsburgh, showed them the Scriptures which indicated our Lord's presence and urged them to investigate and proclaim the message. All of the ministers of the two cities were present: all of the ministers of the two cities refused to believe."

"The fact that Russell was teaching a lie from the outset is obvious since even the Watchtower itself fifty years later admitted Christ was not present then or from 1874 at all, and changed the date to 1914. Never-the-less, Russell threw himself into teaching this error, and traveled widely with his message for the next two years until. "Acting upon this leading of the Lord, I gave up traveling, and in July, 1879, the first number of The Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence made its appearance." - Divine Purpose, page 21.

Thus the "Watchtower" magazine began with a message heralding Christ's presence, who was not present. For fifty years the Organization taught this error!

### ***DATES RELATED TO 1874***

Further erroneous dates were built around 1874:

- a. The Resurrection in 1878. This date was calculated from the 1874 date in the following manner:

"Our Lord's resurrection occurred three and a half years after his advent as the Messiah, in A. D. 29: and the resurrection of his body, the Church, we have seen, was due in the year 1878, three and a half years after his second advent, In October 1874." (M.D. Volume 3 "Thy Kingdom Come" page 305). This resurrection was expected to be a bodily one, but when 1878 passed and nothing happened, it was 'found' to have taken place invisibly in the spirit, from this was further developed the erroneous 144,000 doctrine.

a. The 6,000 years ended in 1872. (See Chapter on the 1975 date).

b. In 1914 the end would come. There was to be a forty year Harvest period from 1874, and then all the Church or Body of Christ was to be caught up and taken to heaven, with the End coming at Armageddon in October 1914:

"Pastor Russell and those associated with him believed Christ's invisible presence in spirit form had already begun in 1874. They believed Christ's purpose in returning was to gather them together, restore the true worship and then, in 1914 at the end of 'Gentile Times', take them into God's kingdom, just as a bridegroom would claim his bride." (Divine Purpose page 23).

"The 'battle of the great day of God Almighty' (Revelation 16:14) which will end in AD 1914 with the complete overthrow of earth's present ruler ship. (M. D. Volume 2, The Time is at Hand, see also page 77 of this volume in this Kit).

Establishment of the 1914 date is outlined in Millennial Dawn, Volume 2. The Time is at Hand, chapter 4 entitled "The Times of the Gentiles", by a time period of 2,520 years being added on to 606 BC (later to be changed to 607 BC) the date when the Watchtower contended the crown was taken from Zedekiah and Jerusalem was besieged by Nebuchadnezzar and laid in ruins.

## **ALL CHRONOLOGICAL DATES PROVED TO BE IN ERROR**

1. 1874 Second Advent of Christ. As already shown the time of Christ's presence was discovered fifty years later not to have taken place in 1874 and this date is never taught now by the Watchtower.

2. 1878 Resurrection. This date was also discarded in 1927, and the 1918 date substituted.

3. 1872 Ending the 6,000 years. Although much was made for fifty years that the Millennium had dawned at that time, recently it was suggested it was to begin in 1975.

4. 1914 Armageddon etc. This date was in error, firstly because it was calculated on an error. The crown was taken from Zedekiah and Jerusalem was laid in ruins by Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BC not 606 BC or 607 BC. Furthermore, when 1914 did come, Armageddon did not arrive, and the Church was not taken to heaven etc., there was a tremendous disappointment (See Light, Volume 2 page 194 and Vindication, page 146, shown in this kit under title, "Some False Watchtower Prophecies and Teachings").

In connection with the 1914 date was 1915 for the setting up of the kingdom under Abraham, Isaac etc. (see M.D. Volume 4, The Day of Vengeance, page 625, in this kit). This date was also discarded, and moved to 1925, which in turn proved also a false prophecy, along with the interim prophecies for 1918, and 1920.

## **WHY DID THE WATCHTOWER RETAIN THE 1914 DATE?**

The failure of the 1914 date almost resulted in the collapse of the Organization after Russell's death, until Rutherford in rebuilding the Society decided to capitalize on the fact that the World War had broken out in 1914, and they had foretold this date! The expression, "Times of the Gentiles" had previously meant the time in which the Gentile nations could be saved before their final destruction. This was re-interpreted. Over the intervening years as 'new light' arrived, the Watchtower has discovered many new facets of what this expression has come to mean, including Christ's presence now in 1914, Satan being cast out of heaven etc. Today this 1914 date is of paramount importance to Watchtower teaching.

Following 1914 the Watchtower was loathe to admit they had made a mistake concerning being taken to heaven by 1914. They maintained that they still would be taken to heaven 'soon after' 1914 and in their new editions of Volume 2, Thy Kingdom Come, page 228, was changed from "That the deliverance of the saints must take place sometime before 1914 is manifest" to "That the deliverance of the saints must take place soon after 1914 is manifest. (See Volume 2 in Kit). Many such changes were made. As for admitting the end had not come in 1914, they doggedly maintained the world had ended, 'chronologically' or 'legally'! As late as 1930 the Watchtower organization stated in Light, Volume 1 page 108, "1914 marked the legal ending of the old world and there Christ the rightful King took unto himself his power as king."

## **SOURCES FOR WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY**

(from Watchtower Society publications.)

The Kings of (Neo-) Babylon and their Reigns:



Amel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach) as the oldest son succeeded to Babylon's throne in 581 B.C. [Babylon the Great Has Fallen page 183]

After reigning but two years king Evil-Merodach was murdered by his brother in law Neriglissar. According to the Inscriptions that have been found, this usurper of the throne spent most of his time in building operations and reigned four years. When he died, his son Labashi-Marduk, though not yet of age, succeeded him. He was a vicious boy, and within nine months he had his throat cut by an assassin. Nabonidus, who had served as Governor of Babylon and who had been Nebuchadnezzar's favorite son-in-law, now took the throne and had a fairly glorious reign till Babylon fell in 539 BC. [Babylon the Great Has Fallen, page 184]

NOTE: BC means BEFORE CHRIST. BCE means BEFORE COMMON ERA. While these two abbreviations cover the same period of time, the latter is becoming more popular in secular societies especially in non-Christian countries.

NEBUCHADNEZZAR, NEBUCHADREZZAR (Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadrezzar) [Nebo, defend the boundary]. Second ruler of the Neo-Babylonian Empire; son of Nabopolassar and father of Evil-Merodach (Amel-Marduk), who succeeded him to the throne. Nebuchadnezzar ruled as king for 43 years (624-581 BCE). [Aid to Bible Understanding, page 1212]

NABONIDUS (Nabonidus) [Akkadian, Nabunaid; the god Nabu (Nebo) is exalted]. Last supreme monarch of the Babylonian Empire and father of Belshazzar. On the basis of cuneiform texts he is believed to have ruled some seventeen Years (556-539 BCE.). [Aid to Bible Understanding, page 1195]

Visions of the beasts (Daniel 7:1-8:27). We return to the "first year of Belshazzar," whose reign began in 553 BCE. Daniel receives a private dream, which he records In Aramaic. [All Scripture Is Inspired Of God and Beneficial, page 140]

According to The Westminster Dictionary of the Bible, 1944, page 64, and Babylonian Chronology, 1956, Parker and Dubberstein. pages 13,29, Belshazzar began to reign as the coregent in the third reigning year of Nabonidus (Nabunaid), which was 553 BCE. Daniel 7:1. [All Scripture Is Inspired Of God and Beneficial, page 139 (footnote)]

## **1914 - PROPHECIES RE-INTERPRETED ACCORDINGLY**

Throughout Watchtower writings a big re-alignment had to be made to fit into the new teaching for 1914. The Signs of Christ's presence from the period since 1874 to 1914 had to be forgotten and applied since 1914. It took quite some time before the whole 'truth' became clear to the Society, as in 1917 (three years after Christ 'had come' in 1914). The Finished Mystery outlined on pages 68-71 eighty-eight signs which proved 'that the Lord's Second Advent occurred in the fall of 1874. Page 60 stated the 'Time of the End' had begun in 1799 AD. Today the Signs are said to show the 'time of the end' began in 1914, and the signs are applied since that time, ignoring the evidence of what they had taught happened before 1914, and what actually did happen! For instance May 1, 1970, The Watchtower stated on page 270 "...the severity and deadliness of earthquakes have increased markedly since the 'time of the end' commenced for this old system in 1914. In fact, over 900,000 persons have died from earthquakes in this century...- However, the facts according to the article on 'Disasters' in Collier's Encyclopedia are that just two earthquakes before 1914 killed 520,000 or more than half the 900,000. (An earthquake on April 4, 1905 in Central India killed 370,000 and one on December 28, 1908 killed 150,000 in Sicily and Southern Italy.)

Apart from the fact that World War 1 broke out in 1914, neither the facts nor chronology related to Scripture support this date. If a world war alone is sufficient proof, then why is not the Second World War an equally important event, as it plunged the world into the Atomic Age with an unprecedented fear, and tragedy greater than 1914?

The date 1914 is therefore largely dependent upon chronology for its support, and this is very clearly shown to be in error.

## **HOW DOES THE WATCHTOWER ARRIVE AT 1914?**

A period of 2,520 years called the "Times of the Gentiles" is said to have commenced with the end of the monarchy of Judah, when Zedekiah was removed from the throne and Jerusalem destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar, in 607 BC.

607 BC [2,520 Years] 1914 AD.

a. The 2520 Years. This is arrived at by applying the 'seven times' Nebuchadnezzar was insane to this period. A 'time' or year, if symbolic signifies three hundred and sixty (360) days. Seven times represents ( $7 \times 360 = 2,520$ ) symbolic 'days', or literal years. However, in Daniel 4:28, 33 this prophecy is shown to have been fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar, and had no connection with the "Times of the Gentiles". Bible interpretation does not allow for a prophecy to be made from a fulfilled prophecy, so this calculation is wrong from the outset.

b. The 607 BC Date. Jerusalem is said to have been destroyed at that date. The Watchtower calculates the date by working seventy years backwards from the date 537 BC when Cyrus allowed the Jews in Babylon to return to their land. However, Jerusalem was destroyed in 586 BC not 607 BC and Jeremiah speaks of the seventy years as a period of captivity which had already begun before the city was destroyed, Jeremiah 29:10, 16. The facts are that the captivity was in progress for almost twenty years before the city was finally destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar. Josephus says the temple then laid desolate for the fifty years (which remained) until its foundation was laid in the second year of Cyrus on their return home in approximately 536 BC. (see photo stat of Flavius Josephus against Apion, page 614 in this kit.) Chronologically and Biblically the Watchtower is in serious error over the 607 BC date which is the all-important starting date for 1914. Furthermore the chronological data given in Watchtower publications reveal this error very forcefully as they do not add up. When worked backwards, in a similar manner to which the Watchtower establishes 607 BC, the Society's chronology to 1914 AD is quickly shown to be 19 years in error!

## **WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY 19 YEARS IN ERROR**

This is very clearly shown by using the books, "Babylon the Great is Fallen!" (B.G.F.) and "All Scripture is Inspired of God and Beneficial" (S. I.) An immediate contradiction and error is seen of 19 years! On pages 183-184 of (B.G.F.) Amel-Marduk or Evil-Merodach is said to have succeeded Nebuchadnezzar to Babylon's throne in 581 BC. He ruled for 2 years followed by Neriglissar 4 years, Labashi-Marduk nine months, and Nabonidus (B.G.F. page 230, and S.I. page 139-140) ruled 17 years until the 'absolute date' of 539 B.C. when Babylon fell. Adding these dates allowed by the Watchtower:-

Amel-Marduk	2 years	
Neriglissar	4 years	
Labashi-Marduk	9 months	
Nabonidus	17 years	
Total	23 years	9 months

(from October 539 BC = 562 BC)

Not 581 BC!

Working back from the absolute date of October 539 B.C. this time period brings one to 562 B.C. not 581 B.C. as the Watchtower teaches for the end of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, a 19 year error!

### a. Nebuchadnezzar's Reign

The Watchtower agrees that Nebuchadnezzar reigned for 43 years, although as shown they date his reign 19 years too soon. In "Aid to Bible Understanding- it states on page 1212, "Nebuchadnezzar ruled as king for forty-three years (624-581 B.C.E.)"

#### a. When Did Nebuchadnezzar Destroy Jerusalem?

The Bible says in his 19th year, (see 2 Kings 25:13-10). Since Nebuchadnezzar reigned for 43 years until 562 B.C., his 19th year would be 587/586 B.C. This year has been established by reliable archaeological as well as astronomical evidence, and is in complete harmony with the rest of Bible chronology. (See the data supplied in this kit on Chronology).

## **BABYLONIAN CHRONOLGY**

### HARMONISING TWO HISTORICAL AUTHORITIES ANCIENT & MODERN

#### FLAVIUS JOSEPHUS AGAINST APION.

"Nabuchodonosor, after he had begun to build the fore mentioned wall, fell sick, and departed this life, when he had reigned forty-three years; whereupon his son Evilmerodach obtained the kingdom. He governed public affairs after an illegal and impure manner, and had a plot laid against him by Neriglissoor, his sister's husband, and was slain by him when he had reigned but two years. After he was slain, Neriglissoor, the person who plotted against him, succeeded him in the kingdom, and reigned four

years; his son Laborosoarchod obtained the kingdom, though he was but a child, and kept it nine mouths; but by reason of the very ill temper and ill practices he exhibited to the world, a plot was laid against him also by his friends, and he was tormented to death.

After his death, the conspirators got together, and by common consent put the crown upon the head of Nabonnedus, a man of Babylon, and one who belonged to that insurrection. In his reign it was that the walls of the city of Babylon were curiously built with burnt brick and bitumen; but when he was come to the seventeenth year of his reign, Cyrus came out of Persia with a great army; and having already conquered all the rest of Asia, he came hastily to Babylonia. When Nabonnedus perceived he was coming to attack him, he met him with his forces, and joining battle with him was beaten, and fled away with a few of his troops with him, and was shut up within the city Borsippus.

Hereupon Cyrus took Babylon, and gave order that the outer walls of the city should be demolished, because the city had proved very troublesome to him, and cost him a great deal of pains to take it. He then marched away to Borsippus, to besiege Nabonnedus; but as Nabonnedus did not sustain the siege, but delivered himself into his hands, he was at first kindly used by Cyrus, who gave him Carmania, as a place for him to inhabit in, but sent him out of Babylonia. Accordingly Nabonnedus spent the rest of his time in that country, and there died."

21. These accounts agree with the true histories in our books; for in them it is written that Nebuchadnezzar, in the eighteenth year of his reign, laid our temple desolate, and so it lay in that state of obscurity for fifty years; but that in the second year of the reign of Cyrus its foundations were laid, and it was finished again in the second year of Darius.

Babylonian Chronology [628 BC TO AD 75], by Parker and Dubberstein

(An authority often quoted by the Watchtower Society) gives the following dates from archaeological tablets:

Nebuchadnezzar ascended the throne in Babylon, September 7, 605 B.C. He died during the first days of October, 562 B.C. Amel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach) began to reign October 8, 562 B.C. and his death may be fixed between August 7 and August 13, 560 B.C.

Nergal-Shar-Usur (Neriglissar) began to a reign by August 13, 560 B.C. and his death occurred irk late April or early May, 556 B.C.

Labashi-Marduk began to reign May 3, 556 B.C. and the last record was on June 17,556 B.C. He seems to have been recognized as king only in May and June, 556 B.C. and even then possibly not throughout Babylonia.

Josephus Against Apion 1, 20 states he ruled nine months. This could have been because of the, confusion between the Greek numerals, 0 (9) and (2) months.

Nabunaid began to rule May 25,556 B.C. (he was contender for the throne in May and by the end of June was sole ruler in Babylonia). His reign ended with the Fall of Babylon, October 12, 539 B. C.

TEMPLE DESOLATE FOR 50 YEARS (586-536 B.C.)

The 19th year of Nebuchadnezzar was 587/586 B.C. It had been desolate only 50 years when they returned and laid the foundation.

## **NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S 19TH YEAR – 587-586 B.C.**

Nebuchadnezzar's 43-Year Reign

Watchtower Chronology

Despite all the evidence against the Watchtower Chronology it still clings to its untenable position, and upholds the mistake it made back in 1889 (when its chronology taught Adam was created in 4129 B.C. and Christ returned in 1874 A.D. etc. see chapter on 1975.) This was a mistake of insisting on a Seventy-year Desolation rather than a Seventy-year Captivity of Desolations!

Seventy-Year Captivity Versus Seventy-Year Desolation

The Bible emphasizes the seventy years servitude and captivity, Jeremiah 25:11; 29:10. This was Jeremiah's message in mentioning the 70 years. However, the Watchtower uses 2 Chronicles 36:21 for a 70-year desolation 'she kept Sabbath' in a desperate attempt to uphold the 607 BC date. They conclude that 537 B.C. was when the Jews were allowed to return to Jerusalem, and 70 years 'without an inhabitant' before this would make 607 B.C. the time when Jerusalem was destroyed. What the Watchtower fails to understand is that in Bible Chronology, a desolated or devastated place, does not necessarily mean one without an inhabitant i.e. Jeremiah 12:10.11 (NW) They have turned my desirable share into a wilderness of a desolate waste. One has made it a desolate waste; it was withered away; it is desolated to me. The whole land has been made desolate, because there is no

man that has taken it to heart. This was a description of the land before the destruction of Jerusalem when people were still dwelling in it.

Ezekiel 33:27 (NW) “Surely the ones who are in the devastated places.” Verse 24 (NW) “The inhabitants of these devastated places.”

Thus the seventy years the land was desolated or devastated included the time from when the desolations had begun, although initially people were still living in the land, as they were before Jerusalem was finally destroyed, on through to, and during the time when the land was finally without an inhabitant.

## **THE DESOLATIONS OF JERUSALEM**

Daniel speaks of desolations or devastations of Jerusalem. It was not one event, but a progression of devastations beginning in the third year of Jehoiakim king of Judah, which was the beginning of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar (see Jeremiah 25:1). Daniel was taken in this captivity. Daniel 1:1, 2 “In the third year of the reign of Jehoiakim king of Judah came Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon unto Jerusalem, and besieged it And the Lord gave Jehoiakim king of Judah into his hand with part of the vessels of the house of God.” This date is absolutely fixed as 605 BC. (See Professor Thiele’s letter).

(Note: The N.W. Bible has added in Verse 2 – “In time Jehovah gave into his hand Jehoiakim the king of Judah. This is to suit the Watchtower Chronology, see the chapter in the New World Bible for similar additions).

Further desolations or devastations were carried out by Nebuchadnezzar for the next twenty years, as he progressively devastated more and more of Judah and took away further captives. 2 Kings 24:1-20, 25:11-10, 2 Chronicles 36:5-21.

Finally Jerusalem was destroyed in the nineteenth year of his reign. However, the Bible says that- “In the three and twentieth year of Nebuchadnezzar Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard carried away captive of the Jew seven hundred forty and five persons. “ Jeremiah 52:30.

## **THE SEVENTY-YEAR CAPTIVITY**

Bible chronology emphasizes that the seventy years was a time of captivity and serving the king of Babylon, at Babylon. Jeremiah 25:11 “And these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years.” Jeremiah 29:10 “For thus said the LORD, that after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you-

It was after Daniel had been captive for seventy years at Babylon that he wrote Daniel 9:2 about what Jeremiah had written concerning the accomplishment of the seventy years. Watchtower chronology would have Daniel captive at Babylon for ninety years! The time of serving the king of Babylon must start from the time the first captives were taken to Babylon. After the destruction of Jerusalem many were taken to Egypt, Jeremiah among them.

### **Time Of Commencement Of The Seventy-Years (Captivity)**

The Bible teaches that the seventy years, was a time of servitude and captivity, which began in the year Nebuchadnezzar became king of Babylon, and not as the Watchtower teaches, at the Fall of Jerusalem in Nebuchadnezzar’s nineteenth year of his reign. Jeremiah 25:11; 29: 10.

#### **a. It commenced BEFORE the Fall of Jerusalem.**

Jeremiah wrote, before the city was destroyed, to the captives and urged them to continue to serve the king of Babylon because when ‘seventy years be accomplished at Babylon’ the Lord promised to visit them and to return them to their own land. Jeremiah 29:10. In verse 16, he went on to address the people ‘that dwells in this city, and of your brethren that are not gone forth with, you into captivity’.

#### **b. The Seventy Years was not dependent upon the Fall of Jerusalem.**

It did not have to be destroyed if they would not rebel. False prophets were urging the Jews to rebel against Babylonian rule, and Jeremiah wrote urging them, “Hearken not unto them: serve the king of Babylon, and live: wherefore should this city be laid waste?” Jeremiah 27:17.

If they had not rebelled then seventy years of captivity, subjection and devastations/desolation by the Babylonians would have sufficed.

1. In the first captivity in 605 B.C., Nebuchadnezzar had already removed the ‘blue bloods’ Daniel 1:3 ‘the king’s seed, and of the princes’ when Daniel was taken captive and the Temple pillaged.

2. In the second captivity Nebuchadnezzar in the eighth year of his reign (598/597 B.C.) removed ‘all Jerusalem, and all the princes, and all the mighty men of valor and all the craftsmen and smiths: none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land.’ 2 Kings 24:12-14.

3. At Destruction of Jerusalem. In Jeremiah 27:17 he was advising those at Babylon and those remaining in Jerusalem not to rebel but to continue serving the king of Babylon until the seventy years would be accomplished. **Jeremiah** 29:10. However, they

would not hearken unto him and Zedekiah later rebelled, so Nebuchadnezzar came down and in the nineteenth year of his reign he destroyed the city. (586 BC) and eventually these 'poorest sort of people' were also removed.

From this time until the Jews returned fifty years later, the temple lay in ruins. (See the photo stat of Josephus statement of the fifty years. This is not to be taken as Josephus final word, as he is not a reliable historian and often contradicts himself, nevertheless since the Watchtower also quotes him for support, this statement is an interesting one).

c. Before Jerusalem was destroyed, the desolations were said to have already taken place.

Jeremiah 25:18. "To wit, Jerusalem, and the cities of Judah, and the kings thereof, and the princes thereof, to make them a desolation, an astonishment, an hissing, and a curse; as it is this day."

(Some maintain that these words were added at a later date, that being so, **Jeremiah** 36:32 tells us it was done when Jehoiakim was still reigning, see Verses 28-32. This was at least eleven years before Jerusalem fell.)

## **WATCHTOWER CHRONOLOGY & SCHOLARSHIP**

IS IT RELIABLE OR HONEST?  
AN EXAMINATION OF THE DATE GIVEN IN THE BOOK, "BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN" ON  
PAGE 134 CONCERNING JEHOIAKIM.

### **HARPER'S BIBLE DICTIONARY**

PAUL J. ACHTEMEIER

1985

Harper And Row Publishers, San Francisco

### **JEHOIACHIN**

Jehoiachin (ie-hoy'ah-kin; also called joiachin, jeconiah, jechoniah, and Coniah), one of the last two kings of Judah. He came to the throne in **597 BC** at the age of eighteen after the death of his father, Jehoiakim (2 Kings 24:8). At that time, Babylon besieged Jerusalem, and, after he had reigned only three months, he, his mother, wives, servants, princes, and officers surrendered themselves captive to Nebuchadnezzar (2 Kings 24:12; reflected in the prophecy of Jeremiah 22:24-30). The Babylonians also exiled ten thousand soldiers, officers, craftsmen, and smiths, leaving the land impoverished of skilled labor and administrators (2 Kings 24:14, 16; Jeremiah 24:1; 29:2). The Temple and palace treasures were also looted. According to Daniel, this exile included Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah (Daniel 1:1-7), and, according to Esther 2:6, it included Mordecai. Ezekiel was also among the captives (Ezek. 1:1-21; cf. Jeremiah 29:1).

Jeremiah prophesied the divine redemption of these captives of the first Babylonian exile (Jeremiah 24:47), but this would only come after a hiatus of seventy years (29:10-14; cf. vv. 1-7). Thus, he was at odds with Hananiah the son of Azzur, who predicted the immediate return of Jehoiachin and the exiles (28:1-4).

Several Babylonian food-rationing lists mention Jehoiachin's name or call him "King of Judah." Since he apparently surrendered quickly (2 Kings 24:12), he may have been treated fairly well. The Bible tells us (2 Kings 25: 27-30; Jeremiah 52:31-34) that in the thirty-seventh year of Jehoiachin's captivity (561 B.C.), Nebuchadnezzar's successor, Evil-merodach, raised his status to that of a valued court retainer. For a people then wholly exiled, this fact served to provide hope that the tide had turned, and that the promised redemption would not long be delayed. See also Jeremiah, The Book of. [Page 451]

### **NEBUCHADNEZZAR**

Nebuchadnezzar II ruled Babylonia from **605 to 562 BC**. He was the son of Nabopolassar, founder of the Chaldean dynasty. Nebuchadnezzar II was the most powerful and longest reigning king of the Neo-Babylonian (625-539 B.C.) period. He brought the city of Babylon and the southern Mesopotamian state of Babylonia to the pinnacle of their power and prosperity.

The name Nabo-kudurri-usur means Nabu, preserve the offspring [lit., 'boundary stone']." From this Babylonian form, the alternate biblical spelling Nebuchadrezzar is taken.

The major competitors for power in the days of Nebuchadnezzar II were Media (northwest Iran) and Egypt, always with great-power ambitions for ports and trade in the Levant (Syria, Lebanon, Israel]. Nebuchadnezzar's marriage to a daughter of the king of the Medes held the alliance with that power secure until after Nebuchadnezzar's death. As for Egypt, Pharaoh Neco suffered a defeat at the hands of Nebuchadnezzar at the city of Carchemish in 605 B.C., from which he did not recover (2 Kings 24:7)

Much information about the early rule of Nebuchadnezzar II comes from the Chronicles of Chaldean Kings (D. J. Wiseman., London: British Museum, 1956). However, of the forty-three years of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar II, only those up to 594 B.C. are preserved. Other records tell of the conquest of Tyre (571 BC; cf. Ezek. 27 12) and the invasion of Egypt in Nebuchadnezzar's thirty-seventh year (reported by a fragmentary British Museum tablet; see Ezek. 29:19-21). Accounts indicate that Nebuchadnezzar was an able but cruel ruler (cf. 2 Kings 25:7) who stopped at nothing to subdue peoples who stood in his path of conquest.



Ame1-Marduk (Evil-Merodach), Nebuchadnezzar's son, ruled from 562 to 560 B.C. According to accounts in 2 Kings 25:27-30 and Jeremiah 52:31-34 he recognized King Jehoiachin and allocated an allowance for him "all the days of his life." Babylonian clay tablets mentioning the disbursement of oil to Jehoiachin, five sons of the king of Judea and other Judeans confirm in a dramatic manner this Scriptural statement. [Page 691]

**ZEDEKIAH**

Zedekiah (zed-uh-kiah; Heb., "Yahweh is righteousness"). The last king of Judah, who was placed on the throne as a puppet ruler by Nebuchadnezzar after his first conquest of Jerusalem in 597 B.C. (2 Kings 24:17). In spite of the repeated warnings and criticisms of the prophet Jeremiah, reported in the narratives of Jeremiah 37-39 and 52, Zedekiah rebelled against his Babylonian overlords (2 Kings 24: 20). As the result, Jerusalem was recaptured and destroyed (**586 BC**) and a bereaved and maimed Zedekiah was taken in fetters to Babylon (2 Kings 25:6-7). [Page 1160]

**BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN, Page 134**

In the third year after that, the third year of Jehoiakim’s vassalage, he rebelled and stopped paying tribute Babylon. For this reason Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time, to punish the rebel king. That was in **618 BC** [See Harper’s Bible Dictionary.]

**WHEN WAS THE SEVENTY YEAR CAPTIVITY?**

From 605 BC - 536 BC. (Bible chronology reckons inclusively. 2 Kings 18:9, 10 states three years was from the fourth year until the sixth year of Hezekiah. Similarly the three days Christ was dead, was from Friday afternoon until Sunday morning, i.e. any part of a year or day is counted as the whole.)

The decree of Cyrus releasing the Jews went out in the latter part of 537 B.C. Since the journey back to Jerusalem was about a four month journey, and they had to pack up etc... Bible students usually believe they would have planned to arrive after the winter, about the Spring of 536 BC.

**ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE DOES NOT SUPPORT 607 BC**

During the reign of the Babylonian kings, clay tablets were dated with the date in the reign of the various kings. Thousands of these tablets have been found. Of particular importance are the first and last of those dating the reign of a particular king. -Babylonian Chronology, 626 B.C. A.D. 75” by Parker and Dubberstein has carefully listed the reigns of the kings from these tablets, and there are no gaps longer than a few days between their reigns. However, as one works back from the absolute date of 539 B.C. it soon becomes very apparent that the Watchtower chronology is 19 years in error.

**"Archeological History Of The Middle East"**

By Jack Finegan, 1979.

**Page 124 :**

Name	Years Of Reign	Dates
Nabopolassar	21	625 - 605
Nebuchadnezzar	43	604 - 562
Evil-Merodach	2	561 - 560
Neriglissar	4	559 - 556
Labashi-Marduk	0.25	556 - 556
Nabonidus	17	555 - 539

"On the twenty-sixth day of Arahsammu [November 23, 626],Nabopolassar sat upon the throne in Babylon. This was the beginning of the reign of Nabopolassar."

**Page 125 :**

"Later in the fourteenth year of Nabopolassar (612/611 BC)."

"In the 21st year of Nabopolassar (604/605 BC)."

"Nebuchadnezzar ascended the throne on the first day of the month Ululu (September 7, 605)."

**Page 126 :**

"But the Biblical record dates the fall of the city on the ninth day of the fourth month in the nineteenth year of Nebuchednezzar (July 18, 586)"

**"Encyclopedia Of Ancient Civilizations"**

**Page 94 :**

"Nebuchednezzar II (604 - 562 B.C.)"

"Nebuchednezzar II captured the city (Jerusalem). The second conquest, 587 B.C. brought to an end the dynasty at Jerusalem."

**Page 95 :**

"Nabonidus (555 - 539 BC) the last of the dynasty."

**"Ancient Iraq"**, By P.R.S. Moorey, Oxford Press, 1979.

Brisbane State Library

**Page 33:**

"Nabopolassar (625 - 605 B.C.)."

"Nebuchednezzar (604 - 562 B.C.)."

"Nabonidus (555 - 539 B.C.)."

**"Babylon"**, 1975

**Page 126 :**

"Nabopolassar (625 - 605)."

"Nabopolassar finally seized the throne in November 626."

**Page 128:**

"Nebuchednezzar (604 - 562 B.C.)."

**Page 129:**

"In his (Nebuchednezzar) tenth year (595 B.C.)."

**Page 130 :**

"After 18 months, with severe famine rampant in the city, the Babylonians breached the walls (586 B.C.). Zedekiah escaped but was captured near Jericho and brought to Nebuchednezzar."

**Page 131 :**

"Nebuchednezzar died in 562 and was succeeded by his son Amel-Marduk (Evil-Meradach)."

"His (Amel-Marduk) successor was Neriglissar (559 - 556 B.C.)."

"Nabonidus (555 - 539 B.C.)."

**"Ancient Times"**, By James Henry Breasted

**Page 208 :**

"At Babylon, Nebuchednezzar, the greatest of the Chaldean emperors, now (604 B.C.) began to reign."

"He finally carried away many Hebrews as captives to Babylonia and destroyed Jerusalem, their capital (586 B.C.)."

**Page 215 :**

"After the death of Nebuchednezzar (561 B.C.)."

**"The Greatness That Was Babylon"**, By H.W.F. Saggs

Sidwick And Jackson, 1988, Brisbane Main State Library

**CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE IV**

Jehoiachin	597 - 596
Zedekiah	596 - 586
Nabopolassar	626 - 605
Nebuchednezzar	605 - 562
Amel-Marduk	561 - 560
Neriglissar	559 - 556

Labashi - Marduk 556 - 555  
Nabonidus 555 - 539

"**Babylonian Life And History**", 1975

**Page 49 :**

"Nabopolassar (625 - 604 B.C.)."

"Nebuchednezzar (604 - 561 B.C.)."

**Page 50 :**

"Nebuchednezzar carried of Zedekiah to Babylon, 587 B.C."

**Page 52 :**

"Awel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach), (561-559 B.C.)"

"Neriglissar (559 - 556 B.C.)."

"Nabonidus (555 - 538 B.C.)."

"**Babylonian Life And History**", By E.A. Wallis Budge  
Religious Tract Society, London, 1975, Brisbane Main State Library

**Page 271:**

Nabopolassar 625

Nebuchednezzar 604

Evil-Merodach 561

Neriglissar 559

Labashi-Marduk 556

Nabonidus 555

"**Encyclopedia Britannica**", 1986 Edition, Volume 1

**Page 770 :**

"After Ashurbanipals death, a Chaldean leader, Nabopolassar, in 626 made Babylon the capital of his kingdom."

**Page 771 :**

"His son Nebuchednezzar (605 - 562) is best remembered for the destruction of Judah and Jerusalem in 587 B.C."

"**Encyclopedia Britannica**", 1986 Edition, Volume 8

**Page 575 :**

"Nebuchednezzar II Born 630 B.C. and died 562 B.C.

King of the Chaldean empire (Reigned 605 - 562 B.C.)"

"He attacked Judea a year later and captured Jerusalem on March 16th, 597, deporting King Jehoiakin to Babylon."

"The siege of Jerusalem ended in its capture in August 586."

"He died in August or September 562 and was succeeded by his son Amel-Marduk (Evil-Merodach of 2 Kings)."

## **ASTRONOMICAL EVIDENCE DOES NOT SUPPORT 607 BC**

The clay tablet V.A.T. 4956 in the Berlin Museum outlines the positions of the heavenly bodies for twelve months and includes an eclipse. It states it was in the 37th regnal year of Nebuchadnezzar. The positions of the heavenly bodies for that period of time, can be identified accurately as the year April 568/April 567 B.C. The details given reoccur only every 40,000 years. The Watchtower has tried to discredit this tablet, but leading authorities state it gives ample information to make it completely reliable.

In 1983 I saw and handled this tablet in the Pergamon Museum in East Berlin while the curator translated part of it including the name of Nebuchadnezzar.

## **PTOLEMY'S CANON**

Professor E.R. Thiele, a world authority who is often quoted by the Watchtower Society stated in his book, "The Mysterious Numbers of the Hebrew Kings" page 44, 45 (1965 ed.) the canon of Ptolemy may be used as an historical guide with the fullest confidence. Since Ptolemy's canon gives precise and absolutely dependable data concerning the chronology of a period beginning with 747 B.C.

However, this very reliable historical guide is at variance with Watchtower chronology, so the Watchtower endeavors to discredit it, - but in doing so it takes a statement out of context from Professor Thiele's book and quotes him, ignoring all he has previously said in favor of Ptolemy's Canon. When they first did this in "The Watchtower" February 1, 1969 issue, Professor Thiele was very unhappy, as shown in the letter enclosed. Nevertheless, the Watchtower again quoted him the "Awake" magazine May 8, 1972, and the statement appears in the large standard work put out by the Watchtower in 1971 "Aid to Bible Understanding" on page 327.

One can examine the evidence, and draw their own conclusions, which leads one to ask...

## **IS THE WATCHTOWER HONEST?**

This question is best left to the reader to answer after having examined the evidence. Apart from the above evidence, and much more like it that could be given, look at page 134 "Babylon the Great is Fallen!" It makes the statement that Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time to punish the rebel king. That was in 618 BC. See Harper's Bible Dictionary, by M.S. & J.L. Miller, edition 1952, page 306, under "Jehoiakim".

### **BABYLON THE GREAT HAS FALLEN, Page 134**

In the third year after that, the third year of Jehoiakim's vassalage, he rebelled and stopped paying tribute Babylon. For this reason Nebuchadnezzar came against Jerusalem the second time, to punish the rebel king. That was in **618 BC** [See Harper's Bible Dictionary.]

However, when one checks this book, they find that the date does not appear in the article at all, but a date many years later, which the Watchtower does not accept! (see photo stat copies of the pages of the above quoted books. I sent specially to America to get the 1952 edition of Harper's Bible Dictionary. A reduced photograph of the front page of the book is also included.)

When the Watchtower is asked concerning what they have done, they reply that they are only referring to the incident and not the date! This explanation of course, is only accepted by the most loyal of Jehovah's Witnesses. Many are very disgusted with this type of thing.

In his book, "Crisis of Conscience" (1983) page 25-26, Raymond Franz, a former member of the Governing Body and an author of the "Aid" book described how the problem of chronology was dealt with:

"When the subject of "Chronology" was assigned to me this similarly led to serious questions. Months of research were spent on this one subject of "Chronology" and it resulted in the longest article in the "Aid" publication. Much of the time was spent endeavoring, to find some proof, some backing in history, for the 607 BC date so crucial to our calculations for 1914. Charles Ploeger, a member of the headquarters staff, was at that time serving as a secretary for me and he searched through the libraries of the New York city area for anything that might substantiate that date historically.

We found absolutely nothing in support of 607 BC. All historians pointed to a date twenty years later. Though I found this disquieting, I wanted to believe that our chronology was right in spite of all the contrary evidence. Thus, in preparing the material for the 'Aid' book, much of the time and space was spent in trying to weaken the credibility of the archeological and historical evidence that would make erroneous our 607 BC date and give a different starting point for our calculations and therefore an ending date different from 1914."

Franz went on to describe further fruitless efforts to find any flaws or weakness in the astronomical data and many texts that proved the Society's 607 B.C.E. date was incorrect. He then continues:

"Like an attorney faced with evidence he cannot overcome, my effort was to discredit or weaken confidence in the witnesses from ancient times who presented such evidence, the evidence of historical texts relating to the Neo-Babylonian Empire. The arguments I presented were honest ones, but I know that their intent was to uphold a date for which there was no historical support."

(Readers are urged to get a copy of this book, "Crisis of Conscience", for it is virtually the conflict of a man who wants to be honest with God, but also loyal to the teachings of the Watchtower Society.)

Does such loyalty to the Society produce dishonesty in the final outcome? Is this the major problem one has in trying to help a Witness see the errors of the Watchtower Society?

## **JEHOIACHIN'S RELEASE**

**Jeremiah** 52:31 states that in the 37th year of Jehoiachin's captivity, that Evil-Merodach in his first year of his reign, released him out of prison.

If you refer to the enclosed chart "Babylonian Chronology." and "Babylon the Great has Fallen" page 184, you will notice Evil-Merodach (or Amel-Marduk) reigned for TWO years, Neriglissar for FOUR years, then LabashiMarduk only a few months, was followed by Nabonidus (Belshazzar his son ruled coregently) until the Fall of Babylon on the absolute date of 539 BC. (Nabonidus ruled for SEVENTEEN years - footnote BGF page 230).

However, working back from this absolute date 539 BC we find Evil Merodach began to reign late in 562 BC. Then working back further from his first year, 37 years of Jehoiachin's captivity would bring one to the date 598/597 BC as to the time he was taken captive. The Watchtower will not accept this date, and sets 618/617 BC for this date in "Babylon the Great" page 685, and 134,135. (On page 134 Harper's Bible Dictionary is used to support this Watchtower date, see above for further details!)

#### THE SEVENTY YEAR DESOLATION OF THE TEMPLE

This is a different time period from the seventy years of captivity. It began approximately twenty years later and continued approximately twenty years after the people returned home from the captivity and were involved in the final completion of the temple. 605 BC Captivity begins, 586 BC **Jeremiah** and Temple destroyed, 536 BC Jews return, lay temple foundations, 517 BC Temple is still "waste".

##### a. Urged to Complete the Temple.

When the Jews returned from their captivity in Babylon, they laid the foundation of the Temple (c 536 BC) but then concerned themselves more with building their own homes than the house of God. When almost twenty years had expired there was still no Temple for the worship of God. Through the prophets Haggai and Zechariah in the early reign of Darius 1, God urged His people to complete the Temple which had been laying 'waste' and had called down His displeasure "these seventy years":

Haggai 1:4, 9, 10 (NW) "Is it time for YOU yourselves to dwell in YOUR paneled houses, while this house is waste? By reason of my house that is waste. Therefore over YOU the heavens kept back their dew, and the earth itself kept its yield.

Zechariah 1:12,16 (NW) "O Jehovah of armies, how long will you yourself not show mercy to Jerusalem and to the cities of Judah, whom you have denounced these seventy years? Therefore this is what Jehovah has said, 'I shall certainly return to Jerusalem with mercies, My own house will be built in her.'"

Zechariah 7:5(NW) "When You fasted and there was a walling In the fifth month and in the seventh month, and this for seventy years."

##### b. Watchtower Chronology for Completion of Temple.

In the seventh month (Ethanin or Tishri) of the year 537 B.C.E. the altar was set up, and in the following year the foundation of the new temple was laid. As Solomon had done, the builders hired Sidonians and Tyrians to bring cedar timbers from Lebanon. (Ezra 3:7) The building work progressed for about fifteen years until It came under official ban of the king of Persia due to accusations written to the king by opposers, particularly the Samaritans. -Ezra chap. 4.

The temple builders weakened, but Jehovah sent his prophets Haggai and Zechariah to stir them to renew their efforts, and in the second year of Darius 1 (520/519 B.C.E.) a decree was made upholding Cyrus' original order and commanding that monies be provided from the royal treasury, to supply what the builders and priests needed. (Ezra 5:1, 2; 6:1-12) The building work resumed promptly and the house of Jehovah was completed on the third day of Adar in the sixth year of Darius (probably about March 5/6 of 515 B.C.E.), after which the Jews Inaugurated the rebuilt temple and held the Passover, Ezra 6:13-22.

##### a. A Seventy or Ninety year Desolation of the Temple?

If according to the Watchtower chronology, the Temple was destroyed in 607 BC and rebuilt in 515 BC, it would have been desolate for over ninety years. However, working back with 'these seventy years' spoken of in Zechariah 1:12, before the Temple was completed this Bible chronology supports the date 586 BC for the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem!

#### SUMMARY:

The structure of Watchtower chronology has been in error since its beginning. The 1914 date Is no exception, with Its basic date of 607 BC, which should be 586 BC to harmonize with the Bible chronology on:

- a. SEVENTY YEAR CAPTIVITY. Beginning before **Jeremiah** destroyed)
- b. JEHORACHINIS CAPTIVITY. (37 yrs. before Evil-Merodach)
- c. THE TEMPLE DESOLATE FOR 70 YRS. (Not Ninety!)

The errors of Watchtower chronology have led many to find the Truth. (See Max Hatton's letter In this Kit).

## **THE ASTRONOMICAL DIARY VAT 4956**

The archaeological tablet VAT 4956 is an astronomical diary. It records the observations of the moon and planets during the entire 37th reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar. There are about thirty observations which are so exactly described that modern astronomers can easily fix the exact dates when they were made. All the observations



of the moon and five planets could only have occurred in the year 568-567 BC, and will not occur again in the same sequence for another 40,000 years!

It clearly establishes that the 37<sup>th</sup> reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar was 568-567 BC and that the time when he destroyed Jerusalem was 586-587 BC, and not 607 BC as taught by the Watchtower Society.

The author, E. B. Price, holding the VAT 4956 tablet in the East Berlin Museum. He is pointing to the name of Nebuchadnezzar, on the top of the tablet, which can be very clearly read by those able to read the cuneiform writing.

The Babylonian kings had the observations of the moon and planets recorded on clay tablets, for each year of their reigns. These are called Astronomical Diaries, and over 1,200 fragments have been found of such diaries. However, the most important find was that recording the observations of the moon and the five planets during the 37<sup>th</sup> reigning year of Nebuchadnezzar. It was a copy of an original, which was very faithfully copied to the extent the copyist even added the comment of where the original had been "broken off" or "erased". There is no reason whatsoever to doubt its authenticity, and the information it records fits perfectly with the location of the moon and planets during the year 568/567 B.C.E. It also harmonizes with the information given in regard to the chronology of the period by historians such as Berossus, and the many documents contemporary with the Neo-Babylonian era such as chronicles, royal inscriptions, business documents and even contemporary Egyptian documents. The evidence is completely overwhelming that the chronology of the Watchtower Society is deeply in error.

## **THE GENTILE TIMES RECONSIDERED**

By CARL OLOF JONSSON

Hart Publishers Ltd. of Lethbridge, Alta. Canada and Good News Defenders of La Jolla, CALIFORNIA, U.S.A. for Christian Koinonia International. Distributed by Good News Defenders, PO Box 8007, La Jolla, CALIFORNIA. 92038 USA.

Carl Olof Jonsson was an elder of a Jehovah's Witness congregation in Sweden. As he intelligently began to research the chronology of the Watchtower Society he found many facts that the Society's publications had either ignored or glossed over. As he found more and more problems with the Society's chronology, he presented the Governing Body in Brooklyn, New York, with the data. Unable to answer the problems the Society brought him before a Swedish Jehovah's Witness "judicial committee" and he was then disfellowshipped or excommunicated for having questioned the Society's "Bible Chronology". That was in July 1982. The next year he had the above book printed, which is virtually a compilation of the material that he assembled and was found unanswerable!

The above book is the best that I have ever read dealing with the problems of the Watchtower Society's chronology. For every serious student of this subject, this book is a must!

It deals with the history of the interpretation of the term "Gentile Times". Seventh-day Adventists would find this section very interesting, as it appeared in the Millerite Movement, but did not come part of this church's teachings in the years after the church was organized in 1863.

In the second chapter the author deals with the chronology of the Neo-Babylonian period. He has excellent material on the ancient historians. He then deals with the Chronicles and other historical records, such as the Uruk King List and the Royal Inscriptions. One of these royal inscriptions known as the Adda Guppi stele, is quoted in the Aid book on pages 236-237 to show how fragmentary and unreliable such broken tablets or steles were. However there were other duplicate steles which were unbroken, but the writer of the Aid book either did not know of this or chose to ignore it. (See opposite page concerning this.) Jonsson has some excellent material on the business and administrative documents of that era, particularly dealing with the family of Egibi. The cost of the book alone is worth the information he gives in this section.

When he deals with the Astronomical Diaries, he deals very fully with the VAT 4956 tablet, and gives excellent proof of its authenticity. He also answers the questions raised by the Watchtower Society to discredit it. The above is just part of the information of this 226 page book. The facts presented are overwhelming and conclusive. This book is difficult to obtain in Australia now. It could be worthwhile writing to the distributors whose address is given above to be able to get a copy of this excellent book.

## **AN ACTIVE WITNESS DISCOVERS THE ERRORS OF 607 BC**

Max Hatton was a Shire Clerk in Denmark, Western Australia, when he and his wife became Jehovah's Witnesses. When a call was made for Witnesses to move to Melbourne, where the need was great, he resigned his position, sold up his home and moved to this large city, where he became the Ministry School Servant of the Broadmeadows congregation. After a Seventh-day Adventist pointed out to him the error of the Watchtower chronology and teaching of 1914, he spent three years studying and fighting the Scriptural and secular evidence. Writing to another Jehovah's Witness of his experience he says:

Dear M ....

“I set out to support the Society and to prove the others wrong. What shocks I was in for! After three years of study I finally hid to admit that what the Society teaches on chronology and the signs of Christ’s PA ROUSIA Is entirely unscriptural and It contradicts all the positive evidence that is available for the period of the New Babylonian Empire. Believe me, I did not want to arrive at this decision and I fought it solidly for about three years. However, the Scriptural evidence is so clear that no other decision is possible when all the Scriptures which relate to the period are considered. The secular evidence is just as positive.

‘I had written to the Society on several occasions begging help with the problems involved but they were not able to provide any. A Circuit Servant who had read copies of my correspondence to and from the Society admitted that the Society had not been able to help me and that he was not able to either. He said, ‘If the Society cannot answer your questions, how can you expect me to?’ A letter from the Brooklyn office of the Society dated August 23, 1964, counseled me:

“give less attention to this matter of chronology, although it has its proper place in God’s word, and concern yourself more with the facts of the day which are in fulfillment and in corroboration of Bible prophecy.”

“Like so many others beside J.W.’S I could see that the signs of Matthew 24 etc., are being fulfilled but the question is, “Do they prove Christ to be PRESENT OR COMING?” The question revolves around the word PA ROUSIA found in Matthew 243. Should it be translated PRESENCE or should it be translated COMING? Authorities on the Greek of the New Testament prove that the word can be translated either way. Can we discover from the Bible itself how it should be translated? I am quite positive that in its context PA ROUSIA must be translated COMING in Matthew 243. Consider the following.

“The followers of Christ expected that He would set up the Kingdom at His first Advent. (Luke 19: 11) Jesus made it clear to them that He must first go away but that He would return as King. (Luke 19:12) After His resurrection and just prior to His ascension to heaven, they asked if He was going to restore the kingdom then. (Acts 1: 6) The Watchtower dated September 15, 1964, page 576, says, ‘they had no idea that He would rule as a glorious spirit from the heavens and therefore did not know that His second presence would be invisible.’

“The last paragraph is of vital importance in this study because it was the disciples who asked Jesus, (Matthew 243) what would be the signs of the destruction of the Temple and thus Jerusalem, (which occurred in AD 70) His PA ROUSIA and the end of the World or Age. It is clear that the disciples associated the destruction of Jerusalem, Christ’s second coming and the end of the World, together. A little thought will make It clear that they wanted to know how they could tell when these things were about to take place. The signs were to precede the events. This is obvious for they did not want signs to tell them that Jerusalem had already been destroyed. They asked for the signs that would precede the event and as they associated the three events together it is obvious that the signs would precede the PA ROUSIA and the end of the world. It is also obvious that the Society is wrong and Christ never did commence an invisible PRESENCE as king in 1914.

“This question of the correctness of the Watchtower teachings related to 1914 is not just an Interesting matter. The very existence of the Society Itself depends upon 1914. For example:

“Evidences are now conclusive that Jesus Christ was enthroned in heaven in 1914 C.E., and that he accompanied Jehovah to his temple in 1918 C.E., when judgment began with the house of God. (1 Peter 4:17) After cleansing those belonging to this house who were alive on earth, Jehovah poured out his spirit upon them and assigned them the responsibility of serving as his sole visible channel, through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come. Those who recognize Jehovah’s visible theocratic organization therefore, must recognize and accept this appointment of the ‘faithful and discrete slave’ and be submissive to it.” (emphasis supplied The Watchtower, October 1, 1967, page 590.)

“Now you will know without my telling you how submissive the JW are to the Watchtower Society. You will also know how much they are dependent upon the Watchtower publications for knowledge. Whatever the Watchtower says is correct. But what if Christ did not begin an invisible PRESENCE in 1914? Obviously He did not appoint any visible channel, through whom alone spiritual instruction was to come’ in 1918. If 1914 is wrong, and it Is, then the Society has no excuse for its existence! It is just another false religion. It is a false religion and for this reason we left it.

(Signed) Max Hatton

The writer of this letter later became a Seventh-day Adventist. Today he is an ordained pastor of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, having given over thirty years of faithful service in ministry in Australia and New Zealand.

## **12. The Second Coming of Christ**

### ***THE BACKGROUND OF THE WATCHTOWER TEACHING***

After the 1844 Disappointment, a group of date-setting Adventists (not Seventh-day Adventists who have always opposed date-setting!) set the date of October 22, 1874 for the Return of Christ. They reasoned that when He came the first time, it was thirty years before He took up His effective ministry, so similarly His effective coming would take place thirty years after October 22, 1844. It was to one of these meetings that Pastor C. T. Russell went and accepted this teaching. When the time came and went and Christ had not returned visibly as expected, they too were disappointed. Eighteen months later in 1876, Russell contacted the leader of the New York date-setting

Adventists, a Mr. N. H. Barbour, and he explained to Pastor Russell, that Christ's Coming did take place in 1874, but it was an invisible Coming. He took his cue from the "Emphatic Diaglott" - a Christadelphian publication, which translated coming in Matthew 24:27, 37, 39 etc. as presence, from the Greek word parousia.

Pastor Russell then began to teach that Christ had come, and was invisibly present. He soon began to publish a magazine, Zion's Watchtower and Herald of Christ's Presence.

Despite all the Biblical evidence against such a teaching, and even warnings by Christ himself, from that time forward one of the cardinal teachings of the Watchtower Society has been that Christ's return or Second Coming is past and invisible!

## **CHRIST'S WARNING AGAINST THIS TEACHING**

Jesus warned against such teachings in the last days, when He said in Matthew 24:23-

"Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not."

Despite such warnings the Watchtower Society for over a century has been teaching that Christ is here.

## **CHRIST'S RETURN IN 1874**

For over fifty years the Watchtower Society taught that Christ's Return or Second Coming took place in 1874. Pastor Russell taught no other date for this event. Rutherford was teaching it in the Society's publications as late as 1929:

"The Scriptural proof is that the second presence of the Lord Jesus Christ began in 1874 AD. This proof is specifically set out in the booklet entitled Our Lord's Return." Prophecy, (1929) pages 65-66.

The fact that the Watchtower Society was teaching this date fifteen years after 1914, is an embarrassment, since they believe they have spiritual eyes of understanding to discern His presence, which they now teach took place in 1914 not 1874, despite all the "Scriptural proof" claimed in such statements as the one above to prove the event took place in 1874. Having taught such errors for such a long time (over fifty years) one wonders how the Society can claim to be that faithful and discreet slave to give them their food at the proper time, of Matthew 24:45?

## **CHRIST'S RETURN IN 1914**

It was during the 1920's the date 1914 began to be presented as the time of Christ's presence or coming. Publications such as The Finished Mystery (1917), The Harp of God (1921) only taught the 1874 date for this event. Let God Be True (1946) pg 188-188 states: "The meaning of parousia is more exact than that commonly contained in the English word coming. It does not mean that he is on the way, or has promised to come, but that he has already arrived and is present."

In 1958, From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained, p.200 stated: "The King arrived in His glory A.D. 1914."

Finding this teaching difficult to uphold, the Society found it necessary to alter its emphasis to Christ turning His attention towards the earth. Thus having lost many members over this teaching, the interesting interpretation and explanation of Christ's return is given in You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth (1982) Page 147.

"Christ's return does not mean that he literally comes back to this earth. Rather it means that he takes Kingdom power towards this earth and turns his attention to it. Bible evidence shows that In the year 1914 C.E. God's time arrived for Christ to return and begin ruling. Since Christ's return is invisible, is there a way to confirm that it has really occurred. Yes, there is. Christ Himself gave a visible "sign" by which we may know that He is invisibly present and the end of the world is near."

## **IS NEAR OR THAT HE IS HERE?**

The signs of Christ's coming show He is near not here! In Matthew 24, the chapter tells of the signs of Christ's coming, but:

1. Verse 23 warns of people stating Christ is here or present, when the signs are being fulfilled.

2. Verses 32-33 tells of the parable of the fig tree, where Jesus emphasized its putting forth of leaves showed that summer is nigh, and applied it that he is near even at the doors. He never said the signs were to show He is here, or in the doors!

3. Verses 42 and 44 warn that one needs to be ready, because they do not know when He will arrive. If the Lord has already come and is present then there is no need to watch.

## ***DID CHRIST COME IN EITHER 1874 OR 1914?***

The answer is an emphatic No! This is a teaching unique to the Watchtower Society and is ludicrous the more one studies the teachings of the Bible, which show that Christ's Return as King of Kings and Lord of Lords in power and great glory will be a visible return. When He came the first time, a multitude of angels in great glory sang to the shepherds on the hills of Bethlehem. At His second return all the angels of heaven will accompany Him and He will be seen by "every eye". His arrival will be announced with the voice of the archangel and the trump of God.

Christ has not invisibly returned because:

1. Every eye did not see Him. Revelation 1:7. This is not restricted to those with eyes of spiritual understanding, because Matthew 24:30 shows that "all the tribes of the earth" also see Him and they have no such spiritual understanding.
2. 1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17 says that at Christ's parousia both the 'dead in Christ' who are resurrected and the living will be caught up together in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. If the Society's teachings are correct and the "remnant class" were resurrected in 1918, then the living members of the "remnant class" should have been caught up with them to be with the Lord. The Society has never ever claimed this to have happened.
3. The wicked were not destroyed by the brightness of His coming, (Parousia) 2 Thessalonians 2:8, and this destruction is to be literal as the destruction of the flood and the---day Lot went out of Sodom", Luke 17:26-30, Matthew 24:37-40.
4. The Memorial Service is only to be celebrated "until He comes". 1 Corinthians 11:26. However, it is still celebrated.
5. If Christ has come, then we no longer have an advocate or mediator, and no one could be saved.

## **13. The Parousia of Christ**

The Greek word Parousia, is only one of at least ten leading Greek words used to describe the second return of Christ. This word is used by the Watchtower Society to teach that Christ's return/arrival/presence was invisible and took place in 1914. Contrary to the this teaching is the fact that the ancient Greeks used the word parousia to describe the arrival or visit of a royal person or King. It was always understood to be a literal visible personal visit, usually accompanied with pomp and much splendor. This is the way the Bible describes Christ's future return, and the other Greek words in the Bible also support this.

## ***AS UNDERSTOOD BY THE ANCIENT GREEKS***

In his book, LIGHT FROM THE ANCIENT EAST -The New Testament Illustrated by Recently Discovered Texts of the Graeco-Roman World, the author Adolf Deissmann has this to say about parousia on pages 368-369:

"From the Ptolemaic period down into the 2nd cent. A.D. we are able to trace the word in the East as a technical expression for the arrival or the visit of the king or the emperor. The parousia of the sovereign must have been something well known even to the people, as shown by the facts that special payments in kind and taxes to defray the cost of the parousia were exacted, that in Greece a new era was reckoned from the parousia of the Emperor Hadrian, that all over the world advent-coins were struck after a parousia of the emperor, and that we are even able to quote examples of advent-sacrifices.

The subject of parousia dues and taxes in Egypt has been treated in detail by Wilken. The oldest passage he mentions is in the Flinders Petrie Papyrus 11. 39 e, of the 3rd cent. BC, where, according to his ingenious interpretation, contributions are noted for a crown of gold to be presented to the king at his parousia."

## ***THE PAROUSIA OF QUEEN CLEOPATRA***

An interesting illustration of the use of the word parousia, is given in the book, THE VOCABULARY of the GREEK TESTAMENT, Illustrated from the Papyri and Other Non-Literary Sources, by J.H.Moulton and Geo. Milligan. Under "Parousia-on page 497:

"What, however, more especially concerns us in connection with the NT usage of parousia is the quasi-technical force of the word from Ptolemaic times onwards to denote the "visit" of a King, Emperor, or other person in authority."

The article then goes on to give illustrations of such visits in Greek literature. On one such papyri, was a description of the royal visit of Queen Cleopatra and King Ptolemy Philometor, to Memphis in their kingdom of Egypt. This was called a parousia.

## ***PAROUSIA = A VISIBLE LITERAL PRESENCE***

In the above illustrations of the use of this word parousia in the Greek, before and during the writing of the Greek Scriptures, it is obvious that it was used in the context of the royal person being literally and visibly present. The arrival of such a

person was only anticipated because it was expected they would be visibly present. To use this word to describe an invisible presence of Jesus Christ since 1914 completely takes it out of the context in which the word was known and used.

## **PAROUSIA AS USED IN THE BIBLE**

Paul uses the word in connection with his being literally and visibly present with his people from the time of his arrival among them, 2 Corinthians 10:10. (See also these texts, 1 Corinthians 16:17, 2 Corinthians 7:6, 7; and, Philippians 1:26; 2:12) These verses leave no doubt that it was understood as a personal literal visitor presence.

Now note how the Bible writers use the word when they are describing Christ's return: Matthew 24:27 (NW) "For just as the lightning comes out of eastern parts and shines over to western parts, so the presence of the Son of man will be. "

1 Thessalonians 4:15-17 (NW) "That we the living who survive to the presence of the Lord shall in no way precede those who have fallen asleep [in death]; because the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first. Afterward we the living who are surviving will, together with them, be caught away in clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and thus shall always be with [the] Lord, 2 Thessalonians 2:8 (KJV) "And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming (presence)."

These texts certainly do not give any room for an invisible secret return of Christ in 1914. No wonder this teaching of the Watchtower is causing more and more of its thinking members to question it, and has lead thousands out of the Watchtower Society.

## **MANY OTHER GREEK WORDS ARE USED**

Parousia is only one of many Greek words used to describe Christ's second coming. Note some of the others:

### **APOKALUPTO:**

2 Thessalonians 1:7 (NW). "at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels.,,

1 Peter 1:7 (NW). "at the revelation of Jesus Christ."

Luke 17:29-30(NW) "But on the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulfur from heaven and destroyed them all. The Same way it will be on that day when the son of man is to be revealed."

### **EPIPHANEIA:**

1 Timothy 6:14 (NW) "until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ."

2 Timothy 4:8 (NW) "...there is reserved for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord ... will give me as a reward in that day, yet not only to me, but also to all those who have loved his manifestation."

Titus 2:13 (NW) "... while we wait for the happy hope and glorious manifestation of the great God and of [the] Savior of us Christ Jesus."

### **ERCHOMAR:**

Matthew 24:30 (NW). "... all the tribes of the earth ... will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Matthew 26:64 (NW). "...YOU will see the Son of man ... coming on the clouds of heaven."

John 14:3 (NW). "...I am coming again and will receive YOU home to myself, that where I am YOU also may be."

1 Corinthians 11:26 (NW). "YOU keep proclaiming the death of the Lord, until he arrives."

Revelation 1:7 (NW). "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him..."

### **OPTOMAI:**

Hebrews 9:28 (NW). "and the second time he appears."

(The Kingdom Interlinear says "... he will be made visible...")

### **PHANIEROO:**

1 Peter 5:4 (NW). "And when the chief shepherd has been made manifest, YOU will receive the unfadable crown of glory."

### **HUPOSTREPHO:**

Luke 19:12 (NW). "...to secure kingly power...and to return..."

### **ANALUO:**

Luke 12:36 (NW). "waiting for their master when he returns".



HIEKO:

Revelation 2:25 (NW). "hold fast what YOU have until I come."

## **PAROUSIA, AS UNDERSTOOD BY MODERN GREEKS**

Attendance at school each day is called by modern Greeks a parousia. This demands them to go to school and be literally, Personally and visibly present. For a student to say they attended school, but their parousia was invisible, or they were there in spirit, or had turned their attention to the school, would be ludicrous. What the Watchtower Society tries to teach about Christ's return or parousia being invisible, or a turning of his attention to the earth is just as ludicrous!

In this presentation pictures, illustrations or charts are invaluable in portraying the events from the Second Coming of Christ at Armageddon, through the period of the thousand years when all the saved from the earth are in heaven and the earth is desolate. At the close of this period the Holy City descends with all the saved back to this earth, the final judgment takes place and the earth is restored to its Paradise condition, for all eternity. Everything is perfect. Christ has restored all that was lost]

### **Powerful And Glorious**

Matthew 13:40-43	Furnace of fire
Matthew 16:27	Glory of His Father and the angels
Matthew 24:27-30	Lightning, every one will see it
Matthew 25:31	Glory of God and the angels
Matthew 26:64	See Him in the clouds of heaven
Mark 8:38	Comes with the glory of God the Father
Mark 13:26	Coming with power and great glory
Mark 14:62	Coming in the clouds of heaven
Luke 9:26	Glory of the Father and the angels
Luke 17:24	As lightning in heaven
Luke 17:26-30	Like the flood that destroyed them all
Luke 21:25-28	See Jesus in the clouds of heaven
Colossians 3:4	He shall appear
1 Thessalonians 4:16	Shout, trumpet, resurrection
2 Thessalonians 1:7,8	Revealed in heaven, flaming fire
2 Timothy 4:7,8	Love his appearing
Titus 2:13	Glorious appearing
Hebrews 9:28	He shall appear
1 Peter 1:7	Appearing of Jesus Christ
2 Peter 1:16	Power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ
1 John 3:2	We shall see Him
Jude 1:14,15	Comes to judge the earth
Revelation 1:7	All eyes shall see Him
Revelation 6:15-17	Face of Him who sits on the Throne
Revelation 14:14	Coming in the clouds of heaven
Revelation 19:11-16	Comes to destroy the wicked

### **He Comes Visibly**

Job 19:25,26	I shall see God
Psalms 50:3	Devouring fire
Isaiah 40:5	All flesh shall see His glory
Nahum 1:5	The earth will burn at His presence
Matthew 24:30	They shall see Him coming in the clouds of heaven
Mark 13:26	Coming with power and glory
Mark 14:62	See Him coming in the clouds of heaven
Luke 17:26-30	Fire and brimstone coming down out of heaven
Luke 21:27	See Him coming in a cloud
Acts 1:9-11	See Him in the clouds of heaven
1 Corinthians 15:52	Resurrection from the dead
Philippians 3:20	Looking for Christ to come in the heavens
1 Thessalonians 4:17	Meet the Lord in the clouds

Titus 2:13	Glorious appearing of Christ
2 Peter 3:10	The heavens shall pass away and earth shall melt
1 John 3:2	We shall see Him as He is
Revelation 1:7	All eyes shall see Him
Revelation 14:14	Coming in the clouds of heaven
Revelation 19:11-16	Destroy the armies of the earth

## ***Audibly***

Psalms 50:3	God shall not keep silent
Isaiah 27:3	The great trumpet shall blow
Zephaniah 1:14-16	Trumpet and voice of God
Luke 17:26-30	Noah's flood, Sodom and Gomorrah
1 Corinthians 15:52	The trumpet shall sound
1 Thessalonians 4:16	Voice of the archangel, trumpet of God
2 Peter 3:10	Heavens will pass away with a great noise

## ***Angels Come With Christ***

Zechariah 14:5	Come with all his saints
Matthew 16:27	Come with His angels
Matthew 25:31	All the holy angels with Him
Mark 13:27	He shall send His angels
Luke 9:26	The glory of the holy angels

## ***Reward Righteous***

Psalms 50:3,5	Gather My saints together
Psalms 58:11	A reward for the righteous
Isaiah 40:10	His reward is with Him
Isaiah 62:11	His reward is with Him
Matthew 13:37-50	The harvest at the end of the world
Matthew 16:27	He shall reward every man according to His works
Matthew 24:30,31	Gather together His elect
Matthew 25:31-34	Inherit the kingdom of God
Mark 13:27	Gather together His elect
John 5:25-29	Resurrection of life
John 6:39,40,44,54	Raised from the grave
John 13:36	Shall follow Jesus to heaven
John 14:1-3,28	Many mansions in heaven
1 Corinthians 15:51-53	Put on immortality
1 Thessalonians 4:16,17	Raised to eternal immortality
1 Peter 1:4,5,7	Crown of eternal life
1 Peter 4:13	Share in His eternal glory
1 Peter 5:4	Receive a crown of glory
2 Peter 3:10-13	A New Heavens and a New Earth
1 John 3:2	We shall be like Him
Revelation 14:14	Harvest the earth
Revelation 22:12	Reward every man according to his work

## ***Destroy Wicked***

Psalms 37:38	Transgressors shall be destroyed together
Psalms 68:2	The wicked perish
Psalms 91:8	Reward of the wicked
Isaiah 13:9-11	Punish the wicked

Isaiah 26:21	Punish the inhabitants of the earth
Isaiah 66:15-17	Shall be slain
Matthew 3:7	The wrath to come
Luke 3:7	The wrath to come
Luke 17:26-30	As in the days of Noah and Sodom & Gomorrah
Luke 20:16	Destroy the evil doers
1 Thessalonians 5:3	Sudden destruction
2 Thessalonians 2:8	Destroy with the brightness of His coming

## ***Is The Second Coming Invisible?***

### **Chariots**

Psalm 104:3	Clouds of heaven
Psalm 68:17	Angels - Sinai
2 Kings 2:11	Flaming Chariots
Isaiah 66:15-17	Flaming Sword (Rev.19:11-16)

### **Clouds**

Exodus 16:10	Visible to human eye
Exodus 19:9-16	Thunder, lightning, fire, smoke, earthquake
Exodus 20:18	Exceedingly loud
Exodus 24:15,16	Devouring fire

### **Lightning**

Psalm 144:6	Destroys the wicked
Zechariah 9:14	Destroys the wicked
Matthew 24:27	From the east to the west
Matthew 28:3	Blinding light
Luke 17:24	Lights up the whole sky
Exodus 19:16-25	Exceedingly loud and bright
Psalm 77:18	Light up the whole planet and shake it
Psalm 97:4	Burns His enemies to death
Rev 16:18	Devastates the Earth

### **Thunder**

Exodus 9:23,29	Plague of death
Revelation 16:18	Seventh plague
Job 40:9	The voice of God
Exodus 20:18	Exceedingly loud
Psalm 78:48	Kills and destroys wicked

### **Trumpets**

Zechariah 9:14	Powerful like lightning
Exodus 19:13-19	Exceedingly loud
Isaiah 27:1,13	Heard in all the countries
Zephaniah 1:14-16	Heard in all the cities

## **14. The Millennium**

### ***A. At the Beginning***

#### **1.ARMAGEDDON.**

The seven last plagues of Revelation 16 are poured out. (They all come in ‘one day’ Revelation 18:13, which in Bible prophecy can mean “a year”.) Armageddon is the 6th of those plagues. Christ comes as a thief at Armageddon, Revelation 16:14-16. The 7th plague and His return finishes the battle of Armageddon.

## 2. CHRIST'S RETURN.

He comes as King of Kings and Lord of Lords (Revelation 19:16, with all the holy angels (Matthew 25:31) where He will appear in the clouds of heaven in power and great glory, announced by the voice of the Archangel and God's trumpet, 1 Thessalonians 4:16. (See also previous chapters.)

### 1. WICKED DESTROYED.

Luke 17:26-30. As the wicked were all destroyed in the Flood and at Sodom, so they are at Christ's return. Revelation 6:16-17. They cry for the mountains and rocks to fall on them, but their destruction comes as a result of the intense brightness (Greek Ephiareia - literally, out-shining) of Christ's parousia.

### 1. FIRST RESURRECTION.

1 Thessalonians 4:16. The dead in Christ are raised. These are all those who believed in Him. John 6:40 (NW) "...everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life and I will resurrect him at the last day." Men of old like Abraham and Isaac etc. are included. See Hebrews 11:10, 16, 35, 40.

### 5. SAVED TAKEN TO HEAVEN

1 Thessalonians 4:16-17. The saved who are resurrected and those living are together caught away in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. Revelation 7:9; 14:13. Both the great crowd and the 144,000 are in heaven "in sight of the throne" see the Kingdom Interlinear. Revelation 19:1. The great crowd is "in heaven" New World Bible.

## ***B. During Thousand Years***

### 1. THE EARTH IS DESOLATE.

Isaiah 24:1 (KJV) "Behold, the Lord makes the earth empty."

**Jeremiah** 4:23-27 (KJV) "I beheld the earth, and to, it was without form and void (empty) ... and, lo, there was no man, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger. For thus hath the Lord said, 'The whole land shall be desolate:'"

The above is a picture of what the earth becomes as the result of Armageddon and the presence of Christ at His Coming.

### 2. WICKED ARE DEAD ON THE EARTH.

When Christ returned:

a. Wicked Living Wore Destroyed. They were destroyed at Christ's Coming or presence. (See No.3 in the previous column.)

b. Wicked Dead Were Not Raised. Only the Dead in Christ were resurrected. The wicked dead remained in their graves in the sleep of death.

So all the wicked are dead on the earth and remain that way after Christ returns. **Jeremiah** 25:31, 33 (NW) "He must personally put himself in judgment with all flesh. And those slain by Jehovah will certainly come to be in that day from one end of the earth clear to the other end of the earth. They will not be bewailed, neither will they be gathered up or be buried. As manure on the surface of the ground they will become. (Note they are not bewailed, gathered, or buried because there was no man alive on the earth during this period to do this.)

### 3. THE SAVED IN HEAVEN. (See previous Column No.5.)

### 4. SATAN IS BOUND.

Revelation 20:1-3, gives a picture of Satan bound on the earth. He has no one to tempt and is in a solitary prison on the earth for the 1000 years.

## ***D. At its Close***

### 1. HOLY CITY DESCENDS.

Revelation 21:2-3 (NW) "I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them."

Revelation 3:12 and 21:10 also mention this city descending from heaven. (It has already descended before the events of Revelation 20:9, because the wicked on earth surround it.)

### 1. SECOND RESURRECTION.

John 5:28-29 (NW) "All those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good to a resurrection of life, and those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment."

This is now the resurrection of the wicked to judgment.

Revelation 20:5 (NW) "The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended." Since all the saved were in the first resurrection of life "the rest of the dead- are the wicked who are resurrected at the end of the 1000 years.

(Note: The Bible never teaches that anyone will be resurrected during the 1000 years as the Watchtower Society does!)

### 3. SATAN LOOSED.

Since he now has someone to tempt, the wicked who have been resurrected. He leads them up against the city.

Revelation 20:7.

### 1. CITY SURROUNDED

Revelation 20:9 "And they advanced over the breadth of the earth and encircled the beloved city."

### 1. FINAL JUDGMENT.

Revelation 20:11-15 gives a picture of the scene of the final judgment. At its close the wicked are burnt.

### 1. WICKED DESTROYED.

Revelation 20:9 "...fire came down out of heaven and devoured them."

The Bible gives a picture of eternal punishment, not eternal punishing. (See Malachi 4:1-3)

## ***D. After and for All Eternity!***

### 1. PARADISE RESTORED.

God will do this not man!

Revelation 21:5. The one seated on the throne said: (NW) "Look, I am making all things new."

### 1. A LITERAL, REAL CITY!

Revelation 21:11-21. The city has walls, streets, foundations, gates etc...

Verse 24, 25 (NW)"...and the kings of the earth will bring their glory into it. And its large gates will not be closed."

(How could this happen unless it was a literal city? It is certainly not the 144,000 as the WTS says.)

### 1. THE THRONE OF GOD IN IT.

Revelation 22:3 (NW) "But the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it [the city]."

### 1. GOD WILL DWELL WITH THE SAVED ON EARTH.

Revelation 21:1 "And God himself will be with them."

The Bible is very clear it is not a representative but God Himself!

### 1. THEY WILL SEE HIS FACE.

Revelation 22:4 (NW) "and they will see his face..."

### 1. HOMES WILL BE BUILT.

Isaiah 65:21-25. The saved will build homes etc. on the earth.

### 1. THE SABBATH WILL BE KEPT.

Isaiah 66:23 (NW) "And it will certainly occur that from Sabbath to Sabbath all flesh will come in to bow down before me, Jehovah has said."

### 1. SIN ETERNALLY FINISHED.

Nahum 1:9 "Affliction shall not rise up the second time."

The plan of Salvation has now been completed. All that was lost in Eden, now, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ has restored! Through Christ the world has now been reconciled to God. In love that can only be measured in terms of Calvary both Father and Son choose to have their throne and city on the earth to dwell with those that were redeemed at such tremendous cost!



The Watchtower Society teaches that Jesus Christ was raised as an invisible spirit being or creature, and will return in this manner. By contrast the Bible teaches the bodily resurrection of Jesus Christ and that He will visibly return in a glorious body which every eye will see.

## **15. Christ's Bodily Resurrection**

### **CHRIST'S BODILY RESURRECTION**

1. Christ's Prophecy. John 2:19-22 (NW) "Break down this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. But he was talking about the temple of his body."

2. Christ's Testimony that He had not been raised a Spirit. Luke 24:37-43 (NW) "They were terrified imagining they beheld a spirit So he said to them: See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself, feel me and see, because a spirit does not have flesh and bones just as YOU behold that I have." Jesus emphasized that he had been bodily resurrected by saying "it is I myself". He had not assumed another body!

3. Thomas's Testimony a Week Later. John 20:25-29(NW) Thomas believed in Christ's resurrection only after Jesus said to him (verse 27) "Put your finger here, and see my hands and take your hand and stick it into my side, and stop being unbelieving but become believing." If Jesus had not been bodily resurrected but was a spirit, then His prophecy of John 2:19-22 had failed, and He would be a false prophet. Furthermore, if He really was a spirit when he told His disciples He was not a spirit then He was a liar.

The teaching of the Watchtower Society that Christ was raised a spirit would make Christ guilty of both these accusations!

### **CHRIST RESURRECTED BY THE SPIRIT**

Romans 8:1 (NW) "...the spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead..."

1 Peter 3:18. The Emphatic Diaglott and the KJV render this text that Jesus was resurrected "by the Spirit", which is consistent with the above.

### **CHRIST'S BODILY RETURN IS VISIBLE**

Philippians 3:20-21(NW) "the heavens, from which place also we are eagerly waiting for a savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will refashion our humiliated body to be conformed to his glorious body..."

1 John 3:2 (NW) "We do know that whenever he is made manifest we shall be like him, because we shall see him just as he is."

Hebrews 9:28 (NW) "and the second time that he (Christ) appears..."

Revelation 1:7 (NW) "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him."

Matthew 26:64 (NW) "You will see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power and coming on the clouds of heaven."

Matthew 24:30(NW)"and then all the tribes of the earth ... will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

N.B. The last two passages refer to evil men who have no eye of spiritual understanding or discernment.

Acts 1:11 (NW) "This Jesus will come thus in the same manner as YOU have beheld him going into the sky." The same Jesus whose body they had felt and touched after His resurrection is the one who is now our Mediator in heaven, (the "Man Christ Jesus" 1 Timothy 2:5). This is the Jesus who will be seen coming from heaven as he was seen going bodily into heaven.

## **16. Man's Condition In Death**

The Watchtower Society teaches that man does not go at death immediately to heaven or hell, as is believed by most of the churches in Christendom, but rather that death is an unconscious sleep. Adventists agree with their Witness friends on this point, but also believe that no one has immortality until they are resurrected at the last day and translated with the living then.

### **SCRIPTURAL TEACHING**

The Bible teaches that death is a sleep: Psalms 6:5; 30:9; 89:10; 115:17; 146:5; Ecclesiastes 9:5, 6; Isaiah 38:18, 19; John 11:11-14, 1 Corinthians 15:17,18,51-54; 1 Thessalonians 4:13,16 etc

## **RESURRECTION THE HOPE OF THE CHRISTIAN**

Not Death! The Resurrection is called the hope of the Christian. This wonderful event takes place at the last day; John 6:40 (NW) “For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in Him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day.”

(See Also John 6:39, 44, 54; 11:24 for the resurrection at the last day.)

## **THIS IS WHEN CHRIST RETURNS**

1 Thessalonians 4:15-18, 1 Corinthians 15:51-54. (See previous chapters.)

## **WHY THE DEAD ARE NOT IN HEAVEN OR HELL**

1. There would be no reason to have a resurrection.
2. Christ would not need to return to receive the saved to Himself. John 14:1-3.
3. At death the dead would have had to be judged in order to direct them to either heaven or hell. However, the judgment is future.
4. The dead are rewarded when Christ returns, and not at death, Revelation 22:12.

## **IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL**

The Watchtower Society is very forthright in denouncing Christendom for teaching the immortality of the soul. They believe this teaching is a hall-mark of all false religion, because it is neither scriptural or logical!

## **BUT THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY TEACHES IT!**

It comes as a shock to Witnesses when they realize that looking at their own organization it is guilty of the same teaching! For this is what the Society has always taught concerning the 144,000/class, that these people since 1878 (later 1918) have gone to heaven as immortal spirits!

This teaching is no different than that of the churches of Christendom, which they have so strongly condemned. The only difference is that it did not happen for 19 centuries! However the Bible teaches that are all still asleep until the last day. Then they come up in the First Resurrection otherwise they will sleep on as the rest of the wicked dead until the end of the thousand years. Revelation 20:5.

## **BIBLE TRUTH**

The Bible teaches clearly that after man sinned, Jesus Christ came to seek and save that which was lost. Perfect humanity on earth is to be restored to perfect humanity in Paradise on earth. This is the plan of salvation in Jesus Christ. Mankind was created to be perfect men - never to be spirits or spirit creatures, either in life or death.

## **17. The Trinity**

The Trinity doctrine is one which has caused more controversy in the Christian church down through the ages, than possibly any other teaching in the Bible. Most Christians are only superficial Bible students, and have never fully studied the subject. For this reason, they are usually unable to give answers to their Jehovah's Witness friends who oppose it so vehemently. It is usually one of the main reasons why our Witness friends have become Jehovah Witnesses, and it is usually the last Bible truth that they accept when they leave the organization. It is then very essential that every Christian makes a thorough study of what the Bible teaches concerning the Godhead, and then learn how to present this teaching in an attractive, logical, and above all, scriptural way. This chapter is an introduction to the following chapters, to help you do just that!

### **“THE TRINITY”**

The word “Trinity” does not appear in the Bible. It is like “Millennium” (a term used to describe the Thousand Years of Revelation 20) or “Tetragrammaton” (used for the four Hebrew letters of the Divine Name throughout the Old Testament). What then is the real meaning of the word “Trinity”? It strictly means:

TRINITY = TRI-IN-UNITY, (THREE working in UNITY) On this understanding, one can say without hesitation that they believe in the Trinity, three separate Divine Persons working together in Unity, because this is exactly what the Bible teaches!

However, to our Jehovah's Witness friends, the word "Trinity" means not three persons working together in unity, but one person with three heads as shown in the illustration featured on the front of the "Watchtower" magazine (See chapter 19).

## **GODHEAD**

Many persons prefer to use the word Godhead, instead of Trinity since a number of translations of the Bible use in Colossians 2:9, Acts 17:29 and Romans 1:20. However, the translators of the New World translation did not use the word so it is not helpful in working with Witnesses who will not use any translation other than that of the Watchtower Society.

## **ONE TRUE GOD OR TWO?**

The Bible teaches that there is only One True God. Every Jehovah's Witness will agree with you on this point. (They understand that He is only one person, Jehovah God the Father.) The Bible states:

Isaiah 45:5, 6, 14, (NW) "I am Jehovah and there is no one else, With the exception of me there is no God. There is none besides me. I am Jehovah, and there is no one else there is no [other] God." The Bible is emphatic that there is only one God! K this was all the Bible said on this subject things would be simple, but the Bible clearly shows that Jesus is also a fully Divine Person. How now do we deal with this problem?

## **ONE GOD OR TWO?**

In the following chapters will be clearly shown that the Bible teaches that Jesus is also God, but one text of special interest to Witnesses is:

Isaiah 9:6 (NW) "For there has been a child born to us, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace." Whilst other texts state that Jesus is God, this text calls Him here, Mighty God. The Father they say is called the Almighty God. This explanation sounds fine at first, but quickly one realizes, that now the Watchtower Society has not the Biblical ONE True God, but TWO Gods - an Almighty God and a Mighty God. If there is no God besides Him, then this second inferior God must be false. What is the truth on this subject?

## **A TRIUNE GOD**

In the following chapters it will be presented that besides the person of the Father being God or fully Divine, so also are the persons of Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. These three persons are the eternal Godhead or Heavenly Government, working in such close harmony, unity and love, that they are as one.

The first verse in the Bible says: Genesis 1:1, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Is it Biblical to say a triune God is introduced to us in the first verse of the Bible? Yes, definitely! Firstly the Hebrew word for God here, is Elohim which is plural. Secondly, the Bible tells us that Jesus Christ was involved in creation, "All things came into existence through him" John 1:3, (see also, Colossians 1:15-18 and Hebrews 1:2). Thirdly, the Holy Spirit, (called God's active force in the New World translation) was also present at creation, moving to and fro over the surface of the waters, Genesis 1:2

When it came to the creation of man the Bible states: Genesis 1:26, 27, (NW) "And God went on to say: 'Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness. And God proceeded to create the man in his image...' Note: In the above passage God is presented as being more than one person, "Us", "Our", and then it presents God in the singular, "his". How can this be?

## **THE BIBLICAL IDIOM OF PERFECT UNITY**

What has confused many people, especially our Jehovah's Witness friends, is the Biblical idiom of perfect unity. God always looks on perfect unity either in man or in God as being one:

Genesis 2:24, (NW) "That is why a man will leave his father and his mother and he must stick to his wife and they must become one flesh". We could comprehend this statement if it said "one in spirit" but not "one flesh"! What do we do about this idiom? We do not try to explain it, - we just accept it. Likewise with the Godhead.

Isaiah 44:6, "Thus said the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and besides me there is no God."

Here the Bible presents two persons, with the name LORD or Jehovah, (in the following chapters it will be shown that there are two Jehovah's). However, these two speak as one person, saying "I" and "me"! This is God's way of presenting to us the unique unity of the persons in the Godhead. He desired the same unity for the original perfect couple he created as "one flesh". Thus these two persons of the Godhead in Isaiah 44:6 working in such close unity, speak as one and say "I" and "Me". The "his redeemer" of Isaiah 44:6 is obviously Jesus in His preexistence. In Revelation 1:11, 17 and 22:13, Jesus claims to be 'the first and

the last'. (Many sincere Witnesses have been led to accept the Biblical teaching of the triune God after wrestling with the above references to both Jehovah and Jesus as 'the first and the last'.)

## **SUMMARY**

When all the Bible texts are examined concerning the Godhead, the evidence is overwhelming that God is triune. The following chapters will confirm the above in greater detail and also deal with some of the problems sincerely raised by our Jehovah's Witness friends. This subject is their greatest stumbling block in accepting Bible truth. They will need a lot of prayer and patience as you work to help them. May God bless you!

## **18. The Divine Names**

The Watchtower Society teaches that God's name is Jehovah or Yahweh. Is this His name, or is it just one of His names?

### **DOES GOD HAVE MORE THAN ONE NAME?**

Two texts are sufficient to answer that question:

Exodus 3:13, 14, (RSV). Then Moses said to God, "If I come to the people of Israel and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they ask me, 'What is his name?' what shall I say to them?" God said to Moses "I AM WHO I AM". And he said. "Say this to the people of Israel, I AM has sent me to you."

Exodus 6:2, 3, (NW). And God went on to speak to Moses and to say to him: "I am Jehovah. And I used to appear to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob as God Almighty, but as respects my name Jehovah, I did not make myself known to them."

The two above texts introduce us to three of God's names. In the Kingdom Interlinear's Foreword, page 15, mention is made of the ten names of God. "And in his 25th letter to Marcena, written at Rome, AD 384 he treats of the ten names of God and says: The ninth [name of God] is a tetragrammaton." The name of God that this early writer listed as ninth of the ten, was the tetragrammaton, YHWH, (Jehovah).

#### **SOME NAMES OF GOD**

Before examining some of the names of God one needs to keep in mind:

A study of the word "name" in the Old Testament reveals how much this word means in Hebrew. The name is no mere label, but is significant of the real personality of him to whom it belongs. Aid to Bible Understanding, page 885. It will now be interesting to note how the various names of God were used to reveal His character and attributes:

#### **SHADDAI**

Translated Almighty is from a verb implying "to display power." It is often used with EL (god) in a compound form of EL-SHADDAI, God Almighty. It first appears in Genesis 17:1, a literal rendering would be, "YAHWEY appeared to Abram and said I am EL-SHADDAL" Of the two names of God found in this verse, it appears EL-SHADDAI was known earlier and more fully to the Patriarchs according to Exodus 6:3, "And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name EL-SHADDAI but by my name YHWH was I not known to them.

#### **YHWH**

Translated Yahweh, Jehovah, Yehowah etc. It is usually written in the King James Version as LORD with large capital. "The name Jehovah is believed to come from the same verb (heyah as does ehyah) and some Hebrew authorities suggest that the name literally means He Causes to Become (or Occur, or Come to Be). Aid to Bible Understanding, page 888. This name would then reveal Jehovah as the Creator and the One who invariably causes His purpose to come to realization. However 'Eh-yeh' a form of the verb 'to be' also implies 'self existing One.

#### **EH-YEH ASHER EH-YEH**

This is usually translated I AM THAT I AM in Hebrew as in English, this name is a form of the verb 'to be' and implies that its possessor is the eternal, self-existing One. In Exodus 3:13, "And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, 'The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you;,' and they shall say to me, 'What is his name?' What shall I say unto them? In verse 14, God's reply in Hebrew was "Eh-yeh asher eh-yeh".

#### **ADONAI**

This translated 'Lord' and written in the KJV as Lord. The Hebrew word 'adon' is usually translated 'lord' or 'master' and is used of a proprietor of property, the master of a household, a governor of a province. But when it is applied to God, the word takes the form Adonai. It sets forth God's lordship, ownership and right to obedience. Thus it is often used by men

addressing God, such as Abraham and Moses etc. Young's Analytical Concordance lists it first appearing in Genesis 15:2,8; Genesis 18:3,27,30,31,32; Genesis 20:4; Exodus 4:10,13.

It is interesting to note that God's servants addressed Him as ADONAI even when in the same chapter He is identified as YHWH. For instance in Genesis 18, God is identified ten times as YHWH, but the five times Abraham addresses Him, he calls Him, ADONAI. However the New World Bible does not allow this fact, for in Genesis 18:3 it reads, "Then he said, 'Jehovah, if now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant.'" However, it should read, "Then he said: 'Adonai, if now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant.'"

Similarly the conversation Moses had with God in Exodus 4:10-13, The KW renders verse 10 consistently as "And Moses said unto the LORD, O my Lord, I am not eloquent." Where as the NW has it: "Moses now said to Jehovah: 'Excuse me, Jehovah, but I am not a fluent speaker.'" Why has the NW not translated it, "Moses now said to Jehovah, Excuse me, Adonai, but I am not a fluent speaker"? Would this fact have destroyed the Watchtower's teaching concerning God having just ONE Divine Name?

Would it have shown that Christians who address God as Lord are following the example given in the Bible by Abraham and Moses? Down through the ages servants have not addressed their superiors by their names, nor children their parents. Could this be the reason why Jesus, who knew the names of God, and especially which was the most frequently recorded name of God, did not suggest Christians using any of the special names of God, but rather taught them to pray addressing God as "our Father"?

The emphasis the Watchtower Society places on Jehovah as the only Divine Name to be used, is not supported by either the teaching of the Bible or the example of Jesus!

### YAHWEH or JEHOVAH?

The exact pronunciation of the name is not known today, but the most popular way of rendering it is Jehovah. The Kingdom Interlinear Translation, page 11. Concerning the way the word Jehovah was constructed the Aid book on page 884 says: "By combining the vowel signs of 'Adho-nay' and 'Elohim' with the four consonants of the Tetragrammaton the pronunciations Yehowah and Yehowih were formed. The first of these provide the basis for the Latinized form Jehovah."

This paragraph continues: "The first recorded use of this form dates from the thirteenth century C.E. Raymundus Martini, a Spanish Monk, of the Dominican Order used it in his book *Pugeo Fidei* of the year 1270."

In the Foreword of The Kingdom Interlinear Translation on page 23, the Watchtower Society admits that the more correct pronunciation is Yahweh. It then makes this astonishing admission as to why they still retain Jehovah:

"While inclining to view the pronunciation 'Yahweh' as the more correct way, we have retained the form 'Jehovah' because of people's familiarity with it since the 14<sup>th</sup> century."

The above statement seems unbelievable coming from an organization that prides itself on advancing with further light and is totally opposed to retaining anything because it has been popular or traditional since the Dark Ages!

Could the real reason for retaining Jehovah be because to adopt Yahweh would be to now call themselves in English speaking countries, Yahweh's Witnesses, which does not sound as acceptable as Jehovah's Witnesses?

This all adds up to the fact that the exact pronunciation of God's name is not even considered important minds of those in leadership at the headquarters of the Watchtower Society. Add to this fact that Jehovah while the most popular of the names of God, was not the only one, and Jesus made no effort to include any name in the Lord's prayer, the Watchtower Society has little case for its emphasis on the name of Jehovah.

## **TO CALL UPON HIS NAME**

In the Bible the expression, call upon God's name meant that one wanted to be associated with God and prepared to obey and serve Him: Isaiah 64:7, (NW) And there is no one calling upon your name, no one rousing himself to lay hold on you."

Zephaniah 3:9, (NW) "In order for them all to call upon the name of Jehovah, in order to serve him." Those who call upon the name of the Lord are those who lay hold on Him and obey Him.

## **CALLED BY HIS NAME**

The expression in the Bible called by His name does not mean that a person, people, building or city takes the name of God as their own name, but rather that they live or function according to God's will:

Isaiah 43:03, 7 (NW) "Bring my sons from afar off, and my daughters from the extremity of the earth, everyone that is called by my name and that I have created for my own glory, that I have formed, yes, that I have made."

These sons and daughters referred to here were not those who merely had the name of God woven into theirs, as many Hebrew words did, - but they included all those God had created who were living lives that reflected His glory.

Jeremiah 14:9, (NW) "Jehovah, and upon us it is that your own name has been called."

These people, the Jews, were called by Jehovah's own name! However, there is no record where they ever took that name literally, that is Children of Jehovah, or Jehovah's Witnesses etc. It meant that they were in harmony with all He stood for, and were happy to obey and serve Him.

Daniel 9:19, (NW) "O Jehovah, O my God, for your own name has been called upon your city and upon your people." (RSV) "thy city and thy people are called by thy name."



Like the Jews, the city of Jerusalem was not called by the literal name of God either. The Aid book, page 908, speaking of the name of Jerusalem says: "But the Hebrew form, which logically ought to govern, apparently means Possession [or foundation] of twofold peace.

Jeremiah 34:15, (NW) "In the house upon which my name has been called. (RSV) "In the house which is called by my name.

Solomon's Temple was also said to be called by my name, yet it did not have a name which literally used the name of God.

The conclusion is obvious that people, cities or temples which are said to be called by God's name are those which are in harmony with Him, serving and obeying Him.

## **A PEOPLE FOR HIS NAME**

In the early Christian church they were told that God was taking out a people for his name: Acts 15:14, 17 (NW) Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name, people who are called by my name, says Jehovah, who is doing these things".

Just as God's previous people, the Jews, the city of Jerusalem, and Solomon's Temple were all called by God's name, not because they took on the name Jehovah but because they loved and served Him, so the early Christian church would also be called by His name. Verse 17, shows the test was obedience by qualifying them: who is doing these things.

The Bible records Christians being called: Christians, brethren, the church of God/Christ etc ... but never Jehovah!

## **THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST**

When one studies the subject of the Divine Name, they would find it a helpful exercise to mark every text in the Greek Scriptures (New Testament) that deals with the name of the Father, and the name of Jesus Christ. This would quickly put into perspective the truth of this subject as taught by Christ and the apostles. Note some of the following texts, quoted from the New World Bible which mention the name of Jesus Christ:

Acts 4:12, "There is not another name by which we must get saved."

John 20:30, "That YOU may believe that Jesus is the Christ. YOU may have life by means of his name."

1 John 5: 13, "YOU have life everlasting, YOU who put YOUR faith in the name of the Son of God."

Matthew 24:9, "YOU will be objects of hatred on account of my name..."

Luke 10:17, "The demons are made subject to us by the use of your name."

Colossians 3:17, "Do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus..."

Acts 8:12, "Philip, who was declaring the name of Jesus Christ..."

Acts 9:15, (Paul) "A chosen vessel to me to bear my name to the nations."

Acts 6:28, 40, 41, "ordered not to keep teaching this name,"

"flogged them and ordered them to stop speaking Jesus' name."

"rejoicing to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

## **THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST v JEHOVAH**

Unless one understands who Jesus Christ is, and who Jehovah is and the relationship of these two names in the Godhead, it would seem as if there is competition or tension between these two names. This is how the Watchtower Society views the situation. When in Phil.2:9, the Bible says that Jesus was given a name above every name, the Society in their New World translation of the Bible added the word other, so the name of Jesus would not be above the name of Jehovah! Note in the Kingdom Interlinear translation how other was not in the original Greek, and has been added:

The above type of tampering with the Bible on the subject of God has been done repeatedly in the New World translation, despite the warnings of Revelation 22:18,19 about those who add or take from the Bible! In the next few chapters as the subject of God is dealt more fully with, further such examples will be seen. Since most sincere and loyal Jehovah's Witnesses, do not use other translations, it is very difficult for them to come to a knowledge of the Truth concerning God, the Persons of the Godhead, and the Divine Names.

## **CONCLUSION:**

There are a number of Divine Names in the Bible. In the Hebrew Scriptures, the one most often used was YHWH, a tetragrammaton, the pronunciation of which is unknown, but thought to be more correctly Yahweh.

In the Greek Scriptures, preaching was mainly in the name of Jesus Christ. It was taught as the only name by which one could be saved. By this name the early Christians lived and died. The names of Jehovah and Jesus Christ are not in competition, but rather a unity, as the next few chapters on the subject of God will prove.

## **19. The Only True God**

The Bible teaches that there is only ONE TRUE GOD. All Christians, including Jehovah's Witnesses agree with this statement. It is at this point of mutual agreement that all discussion on God must begin, and it must then proceed strictly on all that the Bible teaches, on this subject. Our friends, the Jehovah's Witnesses will not only appreciate but welcome this arrangement

### ***THE BIBLE ONLY***

Since this subject has been such a controversial one down through the ages, it must be dealt with strictly from the Bible if one is going to arrive at truth concerning it. Our Witness friends will agree with us on this point, so it is good to also agree to dispense with all man-made creeds and definitions about God. This means even the word Trinity is also not used since it does not appear in the Bible. (To get this expression out of the way at the very outset of one's discussion is very essential, because the concept of the Trinity given the Witnesses by the Watchtower is a very different one from what is understood by most Christians. An example of their concept of the Trinity is given in the illustration opposite.)

Because of this concept the Witnesses have of the Trinity, it is essential that one is careful in answering their question: "Do you believe in the Trinity?" The best answer to give at the outset of any discussion is that one does not believe in a three-headed gargoyle-type representation of God. What one believes is only what the Bible teaches, and as such any discussion must be exclusively from that inspired record! Now return to the Bible teaching of:

### ***ONE TRUE GOD***

Our Witness friends will appreciate it if we use their New World Translation of the Bible: Isaiah 45:5, "I am Jehovah and there is no one else. With the exception of me there is no God. Verse 6, "There is none besides me, I am Jehovah, and there is no one else. Verse 14, "There is no [other] God. There are many texts stating this fact:

**There is only One true God and none others!**

### ***ONLY ONE CREATOR***

Isaiah 44:24, "I Jehovah, am doing everything, stretching out the heavens by myself, laying out the earth."

Isaiah 45:18. "For this is what Jehovah has said, the Creator of the heavens, He the [true] God, the Former of the earth and the Maker of it, He the One who firmly established it, who did not create it simply for nothing, who formed it even to be inhabited. I am Jehovah, and there is no one else". The Bible fact clearly emerges from these and other texts:

**The Creator was the ONE TRUE GOD and no one else!**

### ***ONLY ONE SAVIOUR***

Isaiah 43:11, "I am Jehovah, and besides me there is no savior."

Isaiah 45:21, "Is it not I, Jehovah, besides whom there is no other God; a righteous God and a Savior, there being none excepting me? The Bible now shows clearly that:

**This one true God is the ONLY SAVIOUR!**

### ***THE TRUE GOD DOES NOT SHARE HIS GLORY***

Isaiah 42:13, "I am Jehovah. That is my name; and to no one else shall I give my own glory."

Isaiah 48:11, "And to no one else shall I give my own glory."

Another Bible fact to add to the list

**He does not share His GLORY with anyone else!**

## ***HE IS THE FIRST AND THE LAST***

Isaiah 44:6 “I am the first and I am the last, and besides me there is no God.”

This fact is also very clear:

**The one true God is THE FIRST AND THE LAST!**

## ***HE IS THE ONLY ROCK***

Isaiah 44:8, “Does there exist a God besides me? No, there is no Rock, I have recognized none.”

The true God is often spoken of as the Rock, (See Deuteronomy 32:4, 15, 18, 30, Psalms 92:15 etc.) So this is another fact:

**The one true God is a ROCK, the only ROCK!**

## ***SUMMARY:***

The ONE TRUE GOD is:

1. The ONLY true God.
2. The only CREATOR.
3. The only SAVIOUR.
4. Exclusive in His GLORY.
5. The only FIRST AND LAST.
6. The only ROCK recognized as God.

Our Jehovah’s Witness friends will agree that the above God is the person of Jehovah God the Father exclusively. Take the next step of this study from the Bible with care!

## **20. The Deity Of Christ**

All Christians agree that God the Father is a Divine Person and is fully God. However, Who is Jesus Christ? Was He merely a man? An angel? An Archangel? Or is He more than that? Taking the Bible and the Bible only as our guide we find that:

## ***PREPARATION FOR THIS STUDY***

1. Pray very earnestly that the Holy Spirit will be present to enlighten your Witness friend, because this subject is the most vital one that you can ever take with them. Unless they will yield to the working of the Holy Spirit, it will be impossible for them to see this essential truth!

1 Corinthians 12:4, (RSV) “No one can say “Jesus is Lord” except by the Holy Spirit.”

(This word Lord comes from the same Greek word which the Watchtower Society usually translates Jehovah. This text actually sums up the goal and challenge of this study.)

1. Review the last chapter. Write down the summary on a blackboard or piece of paper.
2. Listen to your Witness friend. It may be necessary to let them talk themselves out, as some become very agitated on this subject. Do not allow yourself to become side-tracked, tell them that any questions they want to ask, you will answer, in time, as you proceed with the study, in finding out ALL that the Bible has to say about the subject of God.

## ***1. THE MIGHTY GOD***

Isaiah 9:6, “For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace.”

(The next chapter, verse 21, identifies Mighty God with Jehovah, in the context of that chapter. Your Witness friend will quickly tell you that it is Mighty not Almighty, but don’t over labor the point at this stage, nor the fact of Jesus being called Eternal Father. Let the rest of the evidence completely overwhelm them first!)

## **2. JESUS WAS THE CREATOR**

John 1:3, "All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence."

See also Colossians 1:16-17, (Check with the K.I.T and you will note that the word other has been added and is not in the original Greek!)

### **1. JESUS IS OUR SAVIOUR**

2 Timothy 1:10, "Through the manifestation of our Savior, Christ Jesus." There are many texts identifying Jesus as the Savior.

### **1. JESUS SHARED THE FATHER'S GLORY**

John 17:15, "So now you, Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was."

### **1. JESUS IS THE FIRST AND THE LAST**

Revelation 1:17-18, "I am the First and the Last, and the living one; and I became dead." Revelation 22:13, "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. (If your Witness friend is not becoming too overwhelmed, you could link this next text into this study, otherwise leave it until later and return to it.)

Revelation 1:8, "I am the Alpha and the Omega" says Jehovah God, "the One who is and who was and who is coming, the Almighty." (Note that in the previous verse Jesus was identified as the one who "is coming")

### **1. JESUS WAS THE ROCK**

1 Corinthians 10:1-4, "Now I do not want YOU to be ignorant, brothers, that our forefathers all got baptized into Moses, the spiritual rock-mass that followed them, and that rock-mass meant the Christ."

(Although Paul did not want people to be ignorant of this great truth, the Watchtower Society certainly does the way they have mutilated the translation of this passage. The K.I.T will offer some help although it translates Rock as rock-mass, it shows the original Greek was 'was' and not meant. It should read and identify: the Rock was Christ.)

1 Corinthians 10:1-4, (RSV) "I want you to know, brethren, the supernatural Rock which followed them, and the Rock was Christ."

When Jesus asked his disciples in Matthew 16, who they thought He was? Peter made his confession that he believed Jesus was the Christ (Messiah). Jesus then took his disciples a step further in identifying Him by saying of Himself, "Upon this Rock."

## **PROBLEMS AND QUESTIONS**

By now our Witness friend should be agitated about this study, as he begins to see that when one starts studying all the Bible says about God, the subject is not as simple as he has been led to believe by the Watchtower Society. He will be mentally fighting every step of the study, and by now some could be in a mild state of panic. You could get these questions hurled at you:

Do you believe that Christ is Jehovah?

Do you believe that Christ is God?

Do you believe that Christ and the Father are one person?

So you believe in that Trinity!

Try not to get side-tracked, and certainly don't try to answer these questions at this stage, let the Witness see the Watchtower has never touched on large sections of the Bible dealing with this subject. Let them see the problems. It is only when they have been convinced of them that they will find the answers and truth do not lie with the Watchtower Society teachings. To reinforce these problems, now revise:

### **1. ONE TRUE GOD OR TWO?**

This is the first problem. The Watchtower Society says there is an Almighty God, which is Jehovah God the Father, and a Mighty God, Jesus Christ the Son. But this now gives us two Gods, the Bible is emphatic there is only one true God! That there is no God besides Him, and no other God created before or after Him, Isaiah 43:10, 11. However, in the New Testament the Bible teaches that Christ was God: Matthew 1:23, "Will give birth to a son, and they will call his name Immanuel, which means, when translated, With Us Is God."

When Jesus was born it meant that God was now with men. Jesus was acknowledged as God: John 20:28, in answer Thomas said to him: "My Lord and my God!" Jesus complimented Thomas on understanding and belief, in making this confession. (The word Lord in the Greek is the same word, the Watchtower Society usually translates as Jehovah but chose not to this time, although it would have been consistent with the word God). Now ask your Witness friend, about this problem. What are his answers? Does he believe in ONE God or TWO?

## **1. ONE CREATOR OR TWO?**

In Isaiah we already discovered that the Bible was very emphatic that everything was created by Jehovah and by no one else. Now in the New Testament we are told very clearly that everything was created by Jesus Christ. How do we reconcile these Bible facts? Has any doctrine of the Watchtower Society got the answer? TO say that Jehovah God the Father was the only creator, and used Jesus Christ creates problem with the Bible statements that Jehovah said He created by myself and there was no one else. So we return to the problem, - ONE Creator or TWO?

## **1. ONE SAVIOUR OR TWO?**

Once again we have the Bible stating that Jehovah is the only Savior and there was none besides Him. Yet in the New Testament, Jesus Christ is the Savior.

## **1. DID JEHOVAH SHARE HIS GLORY?**

From the statements in Isaiah Jehovah states that He gives His glory to no one else. However, when Jesus prayed to His Father, in John 17:5, He states that He had shared that glory, before the world was! How is this problem reconciled?

## **1. CAN TWO BE THE FIRST AND THE LAST?**

Jesus claimed in Revelation 1:17-18, and 22:13, to be the First and the Last in Isaiah 44:6, Jehovah claims to be the First and the Last! As one examines this last text is there two Jehovah's, Jehovah the King of Israel and his redeemer Jehovah of Hosts? Are these two Jehovah's presented as ONE God or TWO?

## **1. IS THERE ONE ROCK OR TWO?**

In Isaiah God says there is no Rock besides Him. But the apostle Paul says that the Rock Who went with Israel was Christ. In Matthew 16 Jesus claimed that He was the Rock on which the church would be built. Is the Bible outlining ONE Rock or TWO? If Christ was the Rock Who went with Israel, was He then Jehovah? If so are there two Jehovah's?

## **ARE THERE TWO JEHOVAHS?**

From the above study your Witness friend will have asked or at least wondered, "Are there two persons called in the Bible?" They should now be ready for the next step in this study, that there are two separate persons who are called Jehovah. (And this truth we will continue to show our Witness friend from their Bible - the New World.):

Genesis 19:24, Then Jehovah made it rain sulfur and fire from Jehovah, from the heavens, upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah." The first Jehovah had been on the earth talking with Abraham, and it is He Who rains down the destruction from the second Jehovah in the heavens.

Here is another passage showing two Jehovah's:

Zechariah 2:9-10, "And you people will certainly know that Jehovah of armies himself has sent me. "Cry out loudly and rejoice O daughter of Zion; for here I am coming, and I will reside in the midst of you," is the utterance of Jehovah." The first Jehovah is Jehovah of armies and He is sending "me", Who in the next verse identifies Himself as I am coming and as this second Jehovah.



## ***DID JESUS APPEAR AS JEHOVAH?***

Before examining the appearances of Jehovah to man in the Bible, we first need to understand this fact:

God the Father has never been seen by human beings. John 6:46, Not that any man has seen the Father, except he who is from God; this one has seen the Father.

John 5:37, "The Father. YOU have neither heard his voice at any time nor seen his figure." From the above texts we know that if there were any appearances of a person called Jehovah, we know that this person was not that of the Father! Now let us look at this appearance of Jehovah to Abraham: Genesis 18:1, "Afterward Jehovah appeared to him among the big trees of Mamre."

Verse 3, "Then he said: "Jehovah, if, now, I have found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant."

Verse 4, "Let a little water be taken, please, and YOU must have YOUR feet washed. Then recline under the tree."

Verse 13-14, "Then Jehovah said to Abraham: Why was it that Sarah laughed, saying, 'Shall I really and truly give birth although I have become old?' Is anything too extraordinary for Jehovah?"

Verse 22, "At this point the men turned from there and got on their way to Sodom; but as for Jehovah, he was still standing before Abraham.

Verse 32, "Finally he said: May Jehovah, please, not grow hot with anger, but let me speak just this once; Suppose ten are found there. In turn he said: 'I shall not bring it to ruin on account of the ten.'"

Verse 33, "Then Jehovah went his way when he had finished speaking to Abraham, and Abraham returned to his place."

Because there were not ten righteous found in Sodom, this Jehovah went ahead and destroyed it, by calling fire and destruction down from the Jehovah in the Heavens. Genesis.19:24. Was this Jehovah with Abraham, Jesus?

## ***WAS THIS JEHOVAH JESUS CHRIST?***

Yes! Jesus when He was on earth, claimed to be the One who had appeared to Abraham and caused him to rejoice John 8:56-58 "Abraham YOUR father rejoiced greatly in the prospect of seeing my day, and he saw it and rejoiced. Therefore the Jews said to him. You are not yet fifty years old, and still you have seen Abraham? Jesus said to them: Most truly I say to YOU, Before Abraham came into existence, I have been." (I have been should have been translated I am see this text below from the Kingdom Interlinear Translation). (N. W. translation)

In the above passage Jesus was not only claiming to be the One who appeared to Abraham, but He was also claiming to be the I AM, the name God gave to Moses, when Moses asked God His name, Exodus 3:13-14. (It will be necessary to check this passage in a number of translations, as the New World translation has endeavored to obscure this great Bible truth.) The Jews had no question as to what Jesus was claiming: To claim to be God was blasphemy, and its penalty was stoning, so the next verse says:

John 8:59, Therefore they picked up stones to hurl [them] at him; but Jesus hid and went out of the temple. So Jesus nearly stoned for having claimed to be the I am, which the Jews knew was a claim to be God and the One Who appeared to Abraham and Moses as Jehovah.

## ***DOES IT MATTER IF JESUS IS GOD OR THE I AM?***

Yes! Jesus warned the Jews that if they did not believe that He was the I am they would die in their sins. Look at this text in the original Greek as it appears in the Kingdom Interlinear Translation. Notice the word he has been added in the New World Bible: (John 8:24)

This above text shows how serious it is if a person does not believe Jesus is the I am. In the next verse He was asked "Who are you?" In verse 53, Jesus was again asked "Who do you claim to be?" When He clearly showed them He was the One who spoke to Abraham and made him rejoice, and that He was the I am, they became angry and tried to of stone Him. These Jewish people were very sincere and loyal to their organization and beliefs. To them Jehovah had said, "You are my witnesses" Isaiah 43:10. Could it be that today those who claim to be Jehovah's modern witnesses are making the same tragic mistake? If they refuse to believe that He is the I am like the Jews of old who rejected His Deity, they will perish in their sins!

## ***FURTHER PROOFS OF THE DEITY OF JESUS***

(Check the following texts in a number of different translations. When using the New World Bible on this subject it is necessary to check every text with the Kingdom Interlinear Translation and the original Greek text, for at best the N.W is a biased translation. Many Greek students would describe it however as being plain dishonest, as it adds, alters and deletes words in the original Greek text, which clearly show the Deity of Jesus Christ!)

1. Jesus is Called God. Isaiah 9:6, John 1:1, 20:28, Romans 9: 5, Titus 2:13, Hebrews 1: 8 etc. Note John 1:1:

Note how in the K.I.T. theos is translated and god. In the N.W it has been added to make it a god. Check now with John 3:16 and you will see that theos is translated God! The literal translation from the Greek should have therefore consistently been and God was the Word, and therefore have been rendered and the Word was God.

2. Jesus is part of the Godhead. "In him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Colossians 2:9.
3. Jesus is Eternal. In Isaiah 9:6 (N.W.) Jesus is called: "Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father."
4. Jesus is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Revelation 17:14: "These will battle with the Lamb, but, because he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, the Lamb will conquer them." In 1 Timothy 6:15, Paul applies these titles to God.
5. Jesus made claims only made by Deity. The prophets all spoke with Thus said the Lord but Jesus said, I say unto you! (See Matthew 5: 28, 32, 34, 39, 44)
6. Jesus is Omnipresent. He said in Matthew 18:20: "For where there are two or three gathered together in my name, there I am in their midst."
7. Jesus is Omniscient (all knowing). Peter said to Him: Lord, you know all things;" (See: John 21:17.)
8. Jesus is Omnipotent He not only created all things, John 1:3, but the preservation of this creation also depends upon his omnipotence. Colossians 1:16-17, Hebrews 1:1
9. Jesus Is To Be Worshipped. When Jesus was born into this world the Father commanded in Hebrews 1:6 (N.W.): "And let all God's angels worship him." Angels will refuse worship Revelation 19:10, 22:8-9 and only God should I be worshipped. Matthew 4: 10.
10. Jesus Invites Prayers to be addressed to Him. In John 14:14, the original Greek text says, if ever anything you should ask me in the name of me this I shall do." Although the New World translation is claimed to be a very accurate translation, note how it deletes the me in the text, which would show Christ was inviting requests to be made to Him: The following are some examples of prayers addressed to Jesus: "And they went on casting stones at Stephen as he made appeal and said: Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." Acts 7:59. The last prayer in the Bible is addressed to Jesus: "Amen! Come, Lord Jesus." Revelation 22:20.

## **21. Is God more than one Person?**

Humanity, a government or a family are all singular expressions denoting a unity of a number of persons. Could the inspired Bible, also reveal that the word "God" is used in a similar manner for a unity of Divine personalities?

From the last two chapters on the subject of God we have discovered that the Bible teaches:

- a. There is only ONE TRUE GOD.
- b. Jesus as well as the Father is revealed as God.
- c. There are two persons called Jehovah. (A third personality will in a later chapter be shown to be known as the Spirit of Jehovah.)

In view of the above clear Bible teachings, we now ask the question:

### ***CAN GOD BE MORE THAN ONE PERSON?***

Once again using the New World Bible we will let it answer this question: Genesis 1:26, And God went on to say: "Let us make man in our Image, according to our likeness." Here the Bible, in its very first chapter, introduces us to the fact that God is more than one person. Since John 1:3, and Colossians 1:15-17, state plainly that everything that was created was made by Jesus Christ, then Jesus was also included in this conversation. This 'us' cannot refer to the Father talking to angels, because angels, even Archangels can not create. Let us make man must be limited to the persons of the Father and the Son, and earlier in Verse 2, we have the Spirit of God present at creation.

It is interesting that the word used here, and the one usually used in the Hebrew for God is Elohim. Words in Hebrew ending in im are plural. Watchtower publications such as United in Worship of the Only True God (1983) pages 17-18 argue that this word Elohim is only used to convey an idea of excellence or majesty, when Elohim is followed by a singular verb. However, in this verse, Elohim is followed by the verb for make which is also plural.

### ***CAN JEHOVAH GOD BE MORE THAN ONE PERSON?***

Genesis 3:22, And Jehovah God went on to say: Here the man has become like one of us in knowing good and bad." The above text needs no comment, along with this text: Genesis 11:6, 7, After that Jehovah said Come now! Let us go down and confuse their language."

### ***HOW CAN MORE THAN ONE PERSON BE ONE GOD?***

It is strange how that our Witness friends do not have any difficulty in accepting that their Government is made up of a number of persons. Likewise their own family unit is made up of at least themselves and two parents, yet they are one family. However, when it comes to the subject of God the Watchtower Society makes it a real stumbling to them, to even suggest that God or the Godhead, (this expression is found in some translations) consists of more than God the Father!

Throughout this study we have been keeping strictly to what the Bible says, and we can begin to understand how the Divine Persons of the Heavenly Family or Government are One, when we see how God speaks of the unity of a married couple: Genesis 2:24, “That is why a man will leave his father and his mother and he must stick to his wife and they must become one flesh.”

One flesh! We could understand it if God said they were to become one in spirit, but not one flesh!

The amazing thing is that although man cannot understand this language of God, everyone seems to have accepted it without question. So far even in the pictures of the Dark Ages, I have never seen a representation of Adam and Eve represented with one body and a man and woman’s head. Yet when the unity of the Godhead is presented as ONE, instead of accepting it as God’s way of describing things”, weird three-headed gargoyle-type representations are made of God! Reacting against this type of “Trinity”, the Watchtower Society and some other Unitarian groups, reject the central truth of the scripture concerning the Deity of Christ, that in essence Jesus, like the Father is God!

## ***BUT ISN'T THE FATHER GREATER THAN THE SON?***

While on earth, Jesus said: John 14:28, “The Father is greater than I am.” Jesus did not say the Father was better than He was. While in rank when Jesus was on earth, the Father was greater, in essence they were both equally Divine or God!

This is easily understood with the married couple which God says is one flesh. Both are equally human yet the Bible says that the husband is greater than the wife. While he is greater than her, he is not better than her, for they are both human. Likewise, the Father in rank was greater than the Son, but both are equally Divine or God!

## ***WAS THE FATHER AND JESUS THE SAME PERSON?***

No! What is more I have never met a person who believed this! Just because the Bible reveals that Father and Son are both God this does not make them the same person anymore than an earthly father and son are the same person because they are both human. This argument is considered a “straw man- put up by the Watchtower Society, to be knocked down.

Jesus prayed to His Father, and always taught that His Father was another person but that He was the very image of His Father. So the Bible teaches that Jesus and the Father were two separate persons, but they were in essence both God.

## ***NO MAN HATH SEEN GOD AT ANY TIME***

In the very text that says no man hath seen God at any time, in the original Greek, Jesus is called the only-begotten god or God. Unfortunately the Watchtower Society chose to translate this word as god to hide this truth about Jesus:

Who was Jesus referring to when He said no man has seen God at any time? The context of the text shows very clearly He was referring to God the Father, not to Himself. John 6:46 also clarifies this statement.

## **22. Personality of the Holy Spirit**

The Watchtower Society teaches that the “Holy Spirit” is not a person but God’s active force. It is argued that in the same way that water is not a person, so “holy spirit” is also not a person. On the other hand most Christians believe that the Bible teaches that the Holy Spirit has both personality and Deity. What does the Bible really teach about the Holy Spirit?

## ***THE PERSONALITY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT***

To have personality one must have:

EMOTION

INTELLECT

A WILL

Now notice what the Bible teaches concerning the Holy Spirit having these attributes of personality:

The Holy Spirit can:

1. Talk and direct. Acts 8:29, 10:19, 20, 13:2-4.
2. Forbid. Acts 16:6, 7.
3. Teach. John 14:26, 16:13.
4. Comfort. John 14:16, 18 Galatians 5:22, 23.
5. Author prophecy. 2 Peter 1:21, 1 Peter 1:11.

6. Give gifts. 1 Corinthians 12:1-11.

The Holy Spirit has:

1. A Will. 1 Corinthians 12:11.
2. A Mind and Thoughts. Romans 8:27.
3. An Intellect. 1 Corinthians 2:11.
4. Love. Romans 15:30.
5. Fellowship. 2 Corinthians 13:14.
6. Feelings. Ephesians 4:30.

The Holy Spirit can be:

13. Tempted. Hebrews 10:29, Acts 5:9.
14. Lied to. Acts 5:3, 4.
15. Vexed. Isaiah 63:10.
16. Despised. Hebrews 10:29.

In view of the above list of personality traits (and the list is far from exhaustive), one wonders how the Watchtower Society can deny the personality of the Holy Spirit. Even in their New World translation this truth is very evident. (Note how that although the Society Would Prefer to refer to the Holy Spirit as just holy spirit, the translators have been forced to put the before the name):

John 14:26, But the helper, the holy spirit, that one will teach YOU all things.

John 16:13, However, when that one arrives, the spirit of the truth, he will guide YOU into all the truth, for he will not speak of his own impulse, but what things he hears, he will speak, and he will declare to YOU the things coming.

Isaiah 63:10, But they themselves rebelled and made his holy spirit feel hurt.

Hebrews 10: 29, and who has outraged the spirit.

When one begins to make a study of what the Bible reveals of the Holy Spirit, it is very obvious that the Holy Spirit is a personality. An active force such as water or electricity can not teach, guide, speak, declare, or feel hurt or outraged! Note also how the New World translation even translates the Spirit as he instead of the impersonal it! Note how this translation also allows the following text: Acts 13:2, As they were publicly ministering to Jehovah and fasting, the holy spirit said. "Of all persons set Barnabas and Saul apart for me for the work to which I have called them."

## ***THE SPIRIT'S NAME IS JEHOVAH***

Throughout this study numerous references are found to the Holy Spirit, being called Jehovah or the Spirit of Jehovah. The fact that the Spirit shares the same family name as the Father and Son is evident from Matthew 28:19: (NW) "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit."

Note the word name is singular! Also that three persons are named, because there are three separate distinct persons!

## ***JESUS AND THE HOLY SPIRIT***

Jesus regarded the Holy Spirit as being another person such as Himself. He spoke of the Holy Spirit as being another representative. The Kingdom Interlinear translates this word literally as paraclete, which the Concise Oxford Dictionary defines as Advocate. This is the same Greek word used in 1 John 2:1, which speaks of Jesus Christ being an advocate with the Father.

## ***THE HOLY SPIRIT IS A SEPARATE PERSON***

The Holy Spirit is a separate person from the Father. He pleads or intercedes with the Father on our behalf. Like Christ He stands between us and the Father to plead for us.

In Romans 8:26-27 it is stated twice that the Spirit "pleads for us" (NW), "makes" intercession for us." In Romans 8:34 it goes on to speak of Christ "who also pleads for us" (NW), "Who also makes intercession for us" (KJV). Two persons plead for us. Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit.

This proves conclusively that the Holy Spirit is not part of the Father or an extension of Him, otherwise the Father would be pleading with Himself! The Holy Spirit is as much a separate personality from the Father as Jesus is.

## **THE HOLY SPIRIT AS GOD**

1. Is God. Acts 5:3,4 (N.W.): “Ananias, why has Satan emboldened you to play false to the holy spirit? You have played false, not to men, but to God.”
  2. As Creator. Job 33:4: (KJV) “The Spirit of God hath made me, (NW) God’s own spirit made me.”
  3. Is Eternal. Hebrews 9:14. The same word in Greek which is translated eternal or everlasting is used in 1 Timothy 1:17, to describe the only God.
  4. Is Jehovah. 2 Corinthians 3:17 (NW) “Now Jehovah is the Spirit.” Isaiah 48:16 (NW) “And now the Lord Jehovah is the Spirit.”
  5. Can Be Blasphemed Against. Matthew 12:31, (NW) “On this account I say to YOU, Every sort of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the spirit will not be forgiven.”
- This last text alone proves the Deity of the Holy Spirit, for one can only blaspheme against a person Who is Divine or God!

### **SUMMARY:**

The evidence is overwhelming that the Holy Spirit is a Person with the attributes of personality. This Person, is Divine and like Jesus Christ is in essence God. Thus the Holy Spirit takes His place with Father and Son, in the Godhead, working for the salvation of mankind. 2 Corinthians 13:14, The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all. Amen.

## **23. Objections To The Trinity**

### **REASONS FOR THE OBJECTIONS**

Many sincere Jehovah’s Witnesses have genuine problems in accepting the truth on the Godhead or Trinity, because:

1. Their Concept of the Trinity. They have been conditioned to think of the Trinity as a three-headed gargoyle, as depicted in a previous chapter on the front of The Watchtower, February 1, 1984. To them it is pagan, illogical and unscriptural. So immediately the word Trinity is mentioned, this is the concept that appears on the video screen of their minds and they want to vehemently oppose it.
2. The New World Bible. This translation produced by the Watchtower Society has not dealt honestly with many of the Scriptures that deal with the Deity of Christ.
3. They Demand to Explain the Infinite. The Witnesses feel comfortable in having just one Person, the Father as God. Jesus Christ is a lesser god, and the Holy Spirit is just an active force. Many Witnesses are not prepared to sit down and study the subject out, even as fully as presented in this Kit! The only way the truth can be found on the subject of the Godhead, is to accept all the Bible says, and leave it at that. Over and over we are told that God is past finding out. The Society places itself in a very serious position when it denies the Deity of Christ and the Personality of the Holy Spirit.
4. Arguments Against the Trinity. The Watchtower Society has prepared a series of arguments and proof texts to deny Christ’s Deity, and the Personality of the Holy Spirit. The major problem texts are:

### **OBJECTIONS TO THE DEITY OF CHRIST**

#### **a. JESUS WAS ONLY A CREATED BEING.**

Revelation 3:1 Jesus Christ is referred to as the beginning of the creation by God (NW). Note this text in the K.I.T. The Greek word (arche) which has been translated beginning, also means the Beginner or origin when used as it is here in an active and not passive sense. This word appears in Titus 3: 1, in the plural as rulers, governments. (Note the original Greek text says creation of God not creation by God, as given in the New World translation!) Most reliable translations, render the text:

(RSV) “...the beginning of God’s creation.” (NIV) “...the ruler of God’s creation.” John 1:21, says that Jesus Christ was the Creator, and that everything that was created was created by Him. He did not create Himself,



but rather was the One who created and rules God's creation, Colossians 1:16-17.

Colossians 1:15. This text says that Jesus is "the first-born of creation." However in the Bible the word first-born does not mean born first. Note these references to those who were called first-born, but none were born first:  
 Psalms 89:20, 27 (NW) "I have found David my servant. I myself shall place him as first-born, The most high of the kings of the earth." (David was the eighth son of Jesse.)  
 Exodus 4:22 (NW) "This is what Jehovah has said: 'Israelis my son, my first-born.'" (Esau was born first)  
 Jeremiah 31:9. (NW) "and as for Ephraim, he is my first-born." (It was Manasseh who was born first!)

None of the above were born first, but each was given a place of pre-eminence or supremacy. Colossians 1:15-18 is showing that Christ was pre-eminent because He had created all things. Once again he did not create Himself, and thus the Bible shows He was not a created being.

The Greek word used for first-born is prototokos, but if Paul wanted to express the idea that Jesus was the first created then he would have used protokistos, from first and create, make: Note how in the New World translation [other] has been added to all things were created by him. This is to give the impression that Jesus was a created being, and He created all other things! In the original 1950 edition of the New World translation, the word other was not even put in brackets! How can loyal and sincere Jehovah's Witnesses ever find the truth when the organization they have put implicit faith in, tampers with the Bible like this?

#### COLOSSIANS 1:14-23

"He is the image of the invisible God, the first born of all creation, 16 because by means of him, all [other] things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All [other] things have been created through him and for him. 17 Also he is before all [other] things and by means of him all [other] things were made to exist, 18 and he is the head' of the body."

When the above passage has each "other" deleted, and the simple truth of the Bible allowed to be revealed untampered by any organization, it then becomes very evident that Jesus Christ was not a created being!

Proverbs 8:23 24. This passage in the New World Bible is translated: "Jehovah himself produced me as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago. From time indefinite I was installed, from the start, from times earlier than the earth."

This passage is used to prove that Christ was created or produced by the Father. There are two fallacies with this:

1. The chapter is referring to Wisdom as a personification, and not to Christ. The heading at the top of the page for Proverbs 8 in the New World Bible says exactly that: Wisdom Personified, a master worker PROVERBS 7: 25-8: 36. Throughout the chapter are the following verses:

2. Jehovah produced or possessed wisdom? The word which the New World Bible has translated produced comes from the Hebrew word Qana. This word is translated in the KJV and NIV as possessed and is the better translation that God always possessed wisdom, otherwise there would have had to be a time when He was without it! Some commentators see a parallel between wisdom and Christ, that both were always with God.

## **OBJECTIONS TO THE DEITY OF CHRIST**

### b. JESUS WAS ONLY a god

John 1:1 (NW) is the verse where the Watchtower Society teaches that Jesus was only god, -a powerful godlike one, However although the New World translation in John 1:1, presents Jesus as a god, this same translation in Isaiah 9:6, has shown Him to be the Mighty God! How can these two texts be harmonized? How many Gods does the Society want, for a Almighty God and a Mighty God make TWO? Isaiah 9:6 is obviously an embarrassment to the Society, who would rather emphasize John 1:1, and reduce Jesus to just a god divested of Deity. However as already shown in a previous chapter, to do this the Society in the (NW) Bible has had to add the word a and inconsistently translate the word for God:

The Bible truth is that Jesus is much more than a god - especially when the Bible shows that men, and even

Satan (2 Corinthians 4:4) is called a god! Jesus is fully Divine, He is God. The text should read: ... and the Word (Christ) was God!

Note also: John 1:1 introduces Christ as “in the beginning the Word was” not was created or came to be! He was already in existence with God (the Father). It is because He always was, and was with God, that John introduces Him as God - a Divine Person. John’s final proof of His Deity was the fact (in verse 3) that all things came into existence through Him, and apart from Him, not even one thing came into existence. This proves that He was God, no angel or man can create. It also proves that He was not created since everything that was created was created by Him. The truth of His Deity could not be clearer!

c. JESUS WAS INFERIOR TO THE FATHER.

John 14:28, Jesus said “My Father is greater than I.” How can the two be equal? (This is answered in the Chapter: Is God More Than One Person.)

John 12:44-49, Jesus was sent by the Father, and does His will. How can He then be equal with God? A royal person is often sent on a Royal Tour to another country by their people to represent them. Those sent are very careful in what they say and do abroad. This does not mean that they are inferior to those who sent them. The fact that Christ did His Father’s will completely only emphasizes the perfect unity of the Godhead.

1 Corinthians 11:3 (NW) “... the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman Is the man; in turn the head of the Christ is God.” Since the head of Christ is God (the Father) does this mean Jesus is inferior to the Father? This question is answered by considering the statement of Paul “...the head of a woman is the man.” In what respect is a woman inferior to a man? Is it in rank or essence? In rank the man is greater, but in essence they are equally human! Because the man is human and greater than the woman, does this mean she is any less human? No, Similarly with the Father and Son. In rank the Father was greater than the Son, but in essence they are both equally Divine. Jesus is not any the less Divine. As the man and woman are both human so Father and Son are both God.

In dealing with this subject one cannot over emphasize the fact that there is perfect unity in the Godhead. There is no tension or competition. If one Person has some task or authority, it does not mean they are superior. In this regard it is well to keep these texts in mind: Matthew 28:18, (NW) And Jesus approached and spoke to them, saying: “All authority has been given me in heaven and on the earth.”

John 5:22, (NW) For the Father judges no one at all, but he has committed all the judging to the Son. Was the Son superior then to the Father because all authority and all judging was committed to Him? No! They are a unity receiving equal honor, and this is brought out in the next verse after the Son being named as the Judge: John 5:23 (NW) “In order that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father. He that does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent him.” How can two people receive the same honor, unless they are equal?

a. ONLY THE FATHER KNOWS THE TIME OF JESUS COMING.

Mark 13:32ANW) “Concerning that day or the hour nobody knows, neither the angels in heaven nor the Son, but the Father.” If Jesus does not know the time of His coming (or Parousia) then He is not equal to the Father, who does. How then can Jesus be God? The answer to this problem lies in determining whether Christ made this statement, because He could not know or chose not to know the time of His coming.

Just before Jesus returned to heaven he was asked: Acts 1:6,7 (NW) “Lord, are you restoring the kingdom to Israel at this time?” He said to them: “It does not belong to YOU to get knowledge of the times or seasons which the Father has placed in his own jurisdiction.”

From the above text it is obvious that Jesus did not tell them the time of His coming, not because he could not but rather because He chose not to, because it was rot for their best good. He knew it was best for His people to live in a state of readiness and expectation of His return. Throughout Christ’s life on earth, there was knowledge and power that was available to Him, which He did not choose to use.

a. GOD CANNOT DIE - BUT JESUS DID.

Habakkuk 1:12 (NW), “Are you not from long ago, O Jehovah? O my God, my Holy One, you do not die.” Christ had a dual nature, He was both the Son of Man, and the Son of God. It was His humanity that died. His divinity could not die. Jesus stated that He had power to lay down His life and power to take it up again, John 10: 18 He also said that if his body temple was destroyed that “in three days I will raise it up.” John 2:19-21

His Divine nature had power to give life to His human nature. Describing His Deity in the Tomb, it has been said, “As in the womb, so in the Tomb.” It was quiescent, however His human nature suffered and was tortured as completely as any other man dying the same death.

f. **THERE IS THE ONLY TRUE GOD AND CHRIST.**

John 17:3, (NW) “This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ.” In this text it is contended that Jesus Christ is excluded from being part of the only true God! That being so, then Christ must be a false ‘god’, for this New World Bible earlier in John 1A, stated that He is ‘a god’. However, a little reflection on this verse soon reveals that this text does not exclude Jesus Christ from being part of this ‘only true God’. The emphasis is in contrast to other false gods, in whom there is no salvation.

If a knowledge of the true God means everlasting life, then Jesus Christ must be part of this only true God because: Acts 4:12 (NW) “Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved.”

1 John 5:13, (NW) “I write these things that YOU may know that YOU have life everlasting YOU who put YOUR faith In the name of the Son of God.” The problem that most people have with John 17:3, is to understand how Jesus Christ can be separate from the only true God, and yet still be a member of that God (or Godhead). This can be illustrated by a telegram that could be addressed to the British Royalty:

“The people of Australia know and appreciate the Royal Family, and the one you have sent to represent you on this royal visit to Australia, your eldest son, Charles.“

A son is still a member of a royal family unit, even though he is separate from them. Furthermore he is still royal. In a similar way, Jesus was still a member of the Godhead, even though he was separated on this earth. He was still Divine, of the same essence as the Father, He was God.

1 Corinthians 13:6, (NW) “There is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him; and there is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things are, and we through him. The Watchtower Society argues that this text means that there is but one God and that this is just the one person of the Father. Therefore any teaching upholding the Deity of Christ or the Trinity can not be true! However, does this text mean that God the Father is God exclusively? Why does the Bible so often use the term, God the Father, if only the person of the Father was God?

Why did Paul write to the Galatians: Galatians 1:1, (NW) “Paul, an apostle neither from men nor through a man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him up from the dead.” Paul could have quite easily have written, “...through Jesus Christ and God, who raised him up from the dead”! Why add the Father? It was because the Son had also been revealed as a Divine Being, - as God!

(An interesting study can be conducted on God the Father: Malachi 2:10 (NW) “Is it not one father that all of us have? Is it not one God that has created us? Our Jehovah’s Witness friends would be quick to agree that this is God the Father, - the only true God! However, now go back to a text mentioned a number of times before and closely examine what it has to say about Father and also about God. Who is it talking about in this verse? Jesus! Isaiah 9:6 (NW) “Mighty God, Eternal Father.” Father and Son are both God. Members of the one true God. Both of them are also Lord!

a. **THE MEDIATOR BETWEEN GOD AND MAN WAS THE MAN CHRIST JESUS**

1 Timothy 2:5 (NW) “There is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.”

The argument is that since Christ is the mediator, - the man Christ Jesus, and He mediates between God and man, He cannot Himself be God. Rather than prove that Jesus cannot be God, this verse shows the value of Jesus being both God and man. Only by being God can Jesus fully comprehend the claims of God, and only by being man can Jesus fully comprehend the needs of Men. He is thus the perfect bridge between God and men, the perfect mediator!

(The Watchtower Society will allow that Jesus was more than a man, their publications will even grant Him a status as high as the Archangel! So any argument that He was only a man, because of this text, is not what they really believe anyway. The truth is of course that this Archangel, was fully Divine, He was God!)

## **OBJECTIONS TO THE PERSON OF THE HOLY SPIRIT**

a. **HOW CAN THE HOLY SPIRIT BE A PERSON AND FILL PEOPLE?**

On the day of Pentecost the Bible says that they were all filled with the Holy Spirit. It is argued that for this to happen, the Holy Spirit would have had to be an active force, and not a person.

Furthermore people are baptized in the Spirit, and once again the Watchtower Society believes this could

not happen if the Spirit was a person. The answer to this question is no problem if we realize that while the Holy Spirit has all the attributes of personality, and as such is a Person, it is still spirit. People can be possessed by evil spirits, so it is no problem for people likewise to be possessed by the Holy Spirit.

## b. HOW CAN THE HOLY SPIRIT BE A PERSON AND BE “POURED OUT”?

The fact that the Holy Spirit is “poured out” is also no problem, because we often speak of people “pouring out themselves” or being “immersed” in someone’s personality. The Bible even speaks of Jesus “pouring out” his soul: Isaiah 53:12, (NW) “...due to the fact that he poured out his soul to the very death.” If the Bible says Jesus could pour out his soul, then the expression that the Person of the Holy Spirit, which after all is spirit, is also poured out, should be no problem to us!

## **SHOULD YOU BELIEVE IN THE TRINITY?**

In 1989 The Watchtower Society published: ‘Should You Believe in the Trinity?’ In this booklet the Society has wrested many of the quotations out of context to make the authors appear to say the opposite of what they believed. Other quotations are taken from liberal scholars who themselves do not believe in the authenticity of the Bible let alone the Trinity. Few quotes give the page or chapter numbers to make it difficult to check the Societies dishonest scholarship.

However, Robot M. Bowman Jr. has done just this in: ‘Why You Should Believe in the Trinity’ Available from Baker Book House or Koorong Books.

## **24. Salvation**

Of all the erroneous teachings of the Watchtower Society, none are more tragic than those involving the subject of salvation. Only one Witness in every three hundred believes it is necessary and professes to be a born-again Christian. The rest are perishing with Bibles in their hands. This tragedy is because the Society teaches:

### **TWO CLASSES**

#### 1. The Heavenly:

This class is made up of a literal 144,000 spiritual Israelites, ie. “born-again” Christians, selected since the time of Christ. These are said to be---those who belong to Christ(See You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth, page 172). They are believed to have gone to heaven as spirits in 1918 in the First Resurrection. This Resurrection is believed to be still taking place today. When these people die it is believed that they are changed in the twinkling of an eye to be spirits and go to heaven, where they will rule and remain for all eternity.

[The Bible presents a problem for such a teaching when it clearly teaches in 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17, that at the First Resurrection, the “dead in Christ” are resurrected and go to heaven “together with” those who are living in Christ. This means that in 1918, all the heavenly class who were living at that time should have been caught up in the air with those who had been resurrected. The Watchtower Society has no answer for this problem!]

In 1996 of the 5,167,258 who claimed to be Witnesses, only 8,757 claimed to be of this 144,000/heavenly class. Most of these are elderly Americans!

#### 1. The Earthly:

This class is made up of people down through the history of mankind. They are not born-again, nor do they -belong to Christ as the heavenly class. Their hope is to survive Armageddon. This should be accomplished if they remain as faithful Jehovah’s Witnesses, obeying God’s Laws as interpreted by the Watchtower Society, and putting in their hours of witnessing each month.

After Armageddon, they expect to live on the earth and stand a final test at the end of the 1000 years when Satan is loosed. If they prove faithful they will be given everlasting life then, for eternity.

Their salvation is largely accomplished by their own works. Little real emphasis is placed on Christ’s atoning death. It is mentioned but in effect is not stressed or of vital importance. In 1996, 5,158,501 of the 5,167,258 Witnesses world-wide, professed to be of this earthly class.

Page 197

## **ALL MUST BE LED BY THE SPIRIT**

The Bible teaches that all must be led by the Spirit, and be spiritual, if they are going to be saved. Romans chapter 8 is very clear that there are only two classes, those who are led by the Spirit, and those who are not. In the New World Bible, these classes are described as those in accord with the spirit or the mind of the spirit, and the others are those in accord with the flesh or the mind of the flesh. For one there is life and peace, and for the other there is death. There is no intermediate group of an earthly class who are neither born-again spirit-led people, nor are they going to be lost! The truth is that if these earthly people are

not led by the Spirit as the heavenly profess to be then according to the Bible they are definitely lost! Read Romans 8:11-17 and there is no other conclusion that one can come to. This passage is an elaboration of the truth that Jesus taught to Nicodemus:

## ***YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN!***

In order to be saved Jesus said: John 3:7 (NW) – “YOU people must be born again.” John 3:3-8 is very clear concerning the necessity of being born-again. The “YOU people” of John 3:7 is not addressed merely to Nicodemus, the disciples or even the 144,000 class. It is addressed to ALL who want to be saved. However the Watchtower Society tragically applies this just to the 144,000 class of whom there was only 8,757 in 1996 in all the world. These then are all among those professing to be Jehovah’s Witnesses, who could be saved!

In this kit, scores of erroneous and changed teachings and mistakes that have been made by the Watchtower Society have been outlined, but none are as serious as this!

## ***JESUS CHRIST MUST BE MADE THE CENTRE OF ONE’S FAITH***

Jehovah’s Witnesses have been taught that Christendom hat made Christ everything to the detriment of the Father. To right what they believe is an imbalance, they have placed the emphasis on Jehovah God the Father, to the exclusion of Jesus Christ. When one understands the Trinity teaching, he understands that there is no tension between Father and Son, but a beautiful relationship and perfect harmony. “God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself.” Jesus said that He was the Way, the Truth and the Life, and that no one could come to the Father except by Him.

## ***ALL SALVATION IS IN JESUS CHRIST***

Acts 4:12 (NW) “Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved.” (See the previous chapters, especially pages 35, 37-39.)

## ***SALVATION BY FAITH IS OURS NOW!***

1 John 5:11-13 (NW) “And this is the witness given, that God gave us everlasting life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has this life: he that does not have the Son of God does not have this life. I write YOU these things that YOU may know that YOU have life everlasting, YOU who put YOUR faith in the name of the Son of God.”

## ***THE ERRORS OF THE WATCHTOWER SOCIETY’S***

1. Christ must be made the Centre of all Doctrine. Paul’s message was “Jesus Christ and Him Crucified” 1 Corinthians 2:1-2.
2. All must be Born Again. John 3:21-5, Romans 8:4-17. Those who are not born-again are eternally lost.
3. Every Believer has a Heavenly Hope. Believers are baptized into the one body of Christ, 1 Corinthians 12:13. There is only one fold and one hope. Eph. 4:4, 5; John 10:14-16. Those outside of this fold are lost.
4. There is Only One Resurrection for Believers. The dead in Christ means all who have exercised faith in Him. Those in Old Testament times did as they stew the lamb which pointed forward to Christ, “the Lamb of God.” Since

**Page 198**

His death believers have been able to have faith in the reality of this event. All these will be resurrected at the last day.

5. There is No Second Chance. Today is the accepted time, 2 Corinthians 6:2. The Bible says that after death is the judgment, Hebrews 9:27. There will be no second chance during the 1000 years. (See Chapter 14.)

## ***FORMER WITNESSES FIND SALVATION***

One of the thrilling things in working for Witnesses, is to see them leave off the Watchtower teachings and saturate themselves with the pure “word of God”. This both sanctifies them (John 17:17, -Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.) and they become born again. (1 Peter 1:23, “Being born again by the word of God.”) As they accept Jesus Christ as their



Lord and Savior, they find assurance of salvation, and the peace that passes understanding! The Watchtower Society teaches only a literal 144,000 people, made up of those living since the time of Christ, will go to heaven. However, the Bible teaches that all who are saved since the time of Adam will go to heaven, both the 144,000 as well as the “great crowd- of all ages.

## **25. The 144,000**

### **A. WHO ARE THE 144,000?**

All the Bible teaches concerning the 144,000 is found in just thirteen verses, Revelation 7:1-8, and 14:1-5:

1. Revelation 7:1-8 teaches this group are sealed while the angels are holding back the winds which will hurt or harm the earth, sea, trees etc. (They are made up just before the Seven Last Plagues of Revelation 16:1-21 of which Armageddon is the 6th). The 144,000 are made up of 12,000 from each of the 12 tribes of Israel.

2. Revelation 14:11-5 teaches that the 144,000 are with Christ -before the throne-having been redeemed ( or bought [NW1 from the earth). They are a faultless group, All other information on the 144,000 is mere interpretation or more often speculation.

### **B. IS THE 144,000 A LITERAL NUMBER?**

Revelation 7:4-8, states the 144,000 are 12,000 from each of the 12 tribes of Israel. Is this to be understood to be a literal or spiritual number? It cannot be both! However the Watchtower Society teaches it is a literal number of spiritual Israelites, that is Jehovah’s Witnesses, which is very inconsistent to say the least!

### **C. THE GREAT CROWD IS ALSO IN HEAVEN!**

The Bible never says specifically that the 144,000 are “in heaven”. This however seems obvious from Revelation 14:1-4 where they are singing “before the throne.” Now in Revelation 7:9-10 after the 144,000 have been introduced a “great crowd” (NW), “great multitude” (KJV) which no man can number, is also depicted in a setting similar to Revelation 14:1-4 and this second group is also said to be “before the throne”. Before the Throne = In Sight of the Throne. In the Kingdom Interlinear translation, where this expression in both Revelation 7:9 for the Great Crowd and Revelation 14:3 for the 144,000 is translated in sight of the throne.) Revelation 1191(NW) leaves no doubt that the -great crowd- are also in heaven praising God: “After these things I heard what was as a loud voice of a great crowd in heaven. They said “Praise Yah.”

### **D. PEOPLE LIVING BEFORE CHRIST WILL BE IN HEAVEN**

Matthew 8:11, 12 (NW) “But I tell YOU that many from eastern parts and western parts will come and recline at the table with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of the heavens; whereas the sons of the kingdom will be thrown into the darkness outside.”

Hebrews 11:10, 16, “They were looking for a heavenly country with a city built by God. (This is not a city

**Page 199**

here on this earth Hebrews 13:14.

### **E. CAN THE GREAT CROWD ALSO BE PRIESTS AND KINGS?**

a. Priests.

1 Peter 2:5,9(NW) “YOU yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.. But YOU are a ‘chosen race, a royal priesthood, that YOU should declare abroad the excellencies’ of the one that called YOU out of darkness into his wonderful light.”

These texts show that all who are called out of darkness into the Truth, are considered “priests” to offer up spiritual sacrifices. These sacrifices which are offered up to God include prayer, praise, thanksgiving as well as one’s whole being. Romans

12:1, 2. If in this life all those who are called out of darkness into the Truth, (this must include the great crowd) are considered “priests” as part of a holy priesthood, would they not continue to offer these spiritual sacrifices throughout all eternity? As shown in Revelation 19:1 they were offering praise to God.

a. Kings.

Note in the above texts it does not mention just priesthood but rather a “royal” priesthood.

Romans 8:17(NW) “If, then, we are children, we are also heirs; heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ.”

John 1:12(NW) “However, as many as did receive him, to them he gave authority to become God’s children.”

From these two texts it is obvious ALL who receive Christ are God’s children and joint-heirs with Christ. When Christ takes up His throne and kingdom, it is obvious that all these “joint-heirs” will inherit this kingdom, sit on His throne as He promised in Revelation 3:21 and naturally rule with Him, who is the “King of Kings” Revelation 17:14. This ruler ship will include a work of judging, Revelation 20:4, which will even include judging angels 1 Corinthians 6:1-3.

## **F. THE BIBLE AND THE 144,000**

Most of the New Testament/Greek Scriptures are considered to apply to only the 144,000 class, and not to the great crowd. Since the Old Testament/Hebrew Scriptures only directly applies to the Jews it means very little of the Bible is considered directly relevant to this great crowd class, of whom nearly every Jehovah’s Witness today belongs. (In 1996 of the 5,167,258 who claimed to be Witnesses, 5,158,501 claimed to belong to the great crowd.

If for instance one reads John 14:1-3 to a Witness, he will not believe the Lord’s promise applies to him, because the Watchtower Society says it is only for the 144,000 class! Yet that passage is addressed to all who believe in God. As one progresses in the chapter, other texts are allowed to be applied to a member of the great crowd class! It is all a matter of interpretation on the part of the Watchtower Society. In such matters the Jehovah’s Witness has implicit faith in the Society.

## **G. THE DANGER OF THE 144,000 TEACHING**

This is the most damning teaching of the Watchtower Society. It is going to lead millions of sincere Jehovah’s Witnesses to destruction. (See the chapter on Salvation, on page 45 of this Kit).

## **H. THE HISTORY OF THE 144,000 TEACHING**

In the very first years of the Watchtower Society, it was expected that a bodily resurrection of the saints would take place in 1878. When this did not happen it was then concluded the resurrection did take place then, but it was invisible. It was then concluded that those who died after 1878, would be instantaneously changed, in the twinkling of an eye, and would be resurrected as spirits. In Thy Kingdom Come, (Volume 3 of Studies in the Scriptures, page 234) Pastor Russell taught that the holy apostles and others had been resurrected and they as well as the Lord are present in the earth, although they could not be seen. (On page 61 there is a photocopy of this statement) Later the date for the Resurrection was changed to 1918, and the number of those who would be

**Page 200**

resurrected to rule in the heavens, was limited to 144,000. In the early 1930’s when\* the Society was already numbering over 144,000 it was decided to bring in the teaching concerning the great crowd. This is why most of the 144,000 class are elderly, having belonged to the Society before this number was made up.

## **26. The Memorial Service**

The Memorial Service, better known in other churches as the Lord’s Supper or Communion Service is held only once a year, round Easter or at the time of the Jewish Passover, by the Watchtower Society.

Only those who believe they are of the heavenly class, the remnant” or the “144,000 class” partake of the emblems of the bread and the cup. The others have been taught that to do so, would be to drink eternal damnation to themselves. The result today is that in most Kingdom Halls when the Memorial Service is celebrated, the emblems are passed around and no one partakes because there are no members of this heavenly class still living in that local congregation.

This evening is one to which every Witness, interest and backslider is urged to attend. Visitors are also warmly welcomed. There is a tradition among Witnesses that Armageddon could come at this time and the “angel of death” would pass over those gathered in a Kingdom Hall. Thus literally millions of backslidden and inactive Witnesses attend that night. (This explains why the 1996 Memorial Attendance was 12,921,931 world-wide when during that year the number of Peak Publishers, was only 5,413,7690.

Of the 12,921,933 who attended that Memorial Service only 8,757 professed to be of the “born-again” heavenly class, and partook of the emblems of the bread and cup. The ordinance of humility or foot washing ceremony is never practiced, and most Witnesses do not even know Christ commanded it. John 13:14, 15.

The Taking of the Emblems is Essential to Salvation!

The Bible teaches that every believer has a solemn responsibility to partake of the emblems of this service. The results of following the teaching of the Watchtower on this subject will mean that millions of their sincere people will be lost, for Jesus taught very plainly that there is no resurrection and everlasting life for those who do not “eat His flesh and drink His blood”!

These are the warning words of Jesus: Accordingly Jesus said to them: “Most truly I say to YOU, Unless YOU eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, YOU have no life in yourselves. He that feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood has everlasting life and I shall resurrect him at the last day.” John 6:53, 54 (NW).

To help your Witness friend:

1. Point out to the Witness, that this is referring to those who are depending on a resurrection to everlasting life and must refer to the earthly class, (since the heavenly class are all in heaven and those still living on the earth do not depend on a resurrection, but believe they are “changed” at the moment of death, to be spirits and go to heaven!)

2. Then show how Jesus left them in no doubt as to how they were to eat His flesh and drink His blood, as He said at the last supper: “Take eat. This means my body.” “Drink out of it, all of YOU, for this means my ‘blood of the covenant.’” Matthew 26:26-28, (NW).

The Society also applies the passage of John 6:52-65 to the “Lord’s evening meal.” See The Watchtower, March 1, 1978, page 10:

“So, In the discussion recorded In John 6:52-65 Jesus was not talking about the world mankind as the ones to drink his blood as well as eating his flesh, figuratively, during his millennial reign. He was talking about believers whom he would bring into the new covenant (**Jeremiah** 31:31-34; Revelation 20:4-6) These would become spiritual Israelites. This is why, when Jesus inaugurated the “lord’s evening meal,” He said to His Israelite apostles: “This is the new covenant by virtue of my which is to be poured out in your behalf.” (Luke 22:20; 1 Corinthians 11:20-25)

Unfortunately in applying John 6:52-56 to the “Lord’s evening meal”, the Society still only allows for the “spiritual Israelite” believers, or the heavenly 144,000 class to partake of the emblems. The earthly class are still not included. So for them there is not the promised “everlasting life” and resurrection of John 6:54.

Now the tragedy of the Watchtower Society with this teaching begins to come together. The example already quoted of the 1991 Memorial Service, as 12,921,933 in attendance world-wide, but only 8,757 partaking of the emblems. It means that 12,913,176 people were sitting in the Kingdom Halls around the world, with Bibles in their hands, but perishing, because they were denied the very emblems of what Jesus said meant “life” to them. He

## Page 201

then qualified this in the next verse as “everlasting life” with the promise of being resurrected at the last day.

This subject is one that cannot be taken lightly. Many of the subjects in this kit will not mean one’s salvation or damnation if they are not understood or followed; however, this subject is different. It is linked with one being “Born-again”, in fellowship with Jesus Christ, and cleansed from sin by their Lord and Savior. Unless they have this understanding and relationship with Jesus Christ, they will be lost! May God help us to save them!

The Three Emblems

At the original Lord’s Supper, Christ used and instituted three emblems: The Bread, the Cup and the Towel.

- A. The Bread. The Society rightly uses at their Memorial Service “unleaven” bread, because leaven or fermentation represents sin, 1 Corinthians 5:6-8. In the New World Bible V.8: “Consequently let us keep the festival, not with unfermented cakes of sincerity and truth.”

- B. The Cup. (The word wine is never used in the Bible in connection with this service). In view of the above symbol being unfermented cakes one would expect the sinless blood of Christ to be symbolized by unfermented grape juice. However the

Watchtower Society uses fermented red wine! When this inconsistency is pointed out to many Witnesses, it comes as a shock to them!

C. The Towel. Read John 13:4-17 (N.W.) especially verses 14 and 15:

“Therefore, if I, although Lord and Teacher, washed YOUR feet, YOU also ought to wash the feet of one another. For I set the pattern for YOU, that, just as I did to YOU, YOU should do also.”

This command of Christ could hardly be more direct! Then show your Witness friend:

1. When Peter at first refused to partake, Verse 8, Jesus said, Unless I wash you, you have no part with me. It is serious not to partake. It is part of our communion with Him.
2. This command cannot be spiritualized away as a custom of the East. It is like baptism, a command of Christ.
3. It is like a partial baptism, a spiritual stocktaking when a man examines himself 1 Corinthians 11:28 makes everything right between himself and God and then symbolizes it with this cleansing. The person is then ready to partake of the emblems of Christ's sinless body, and His death.
4. Jesus said, “If YOU know these things, happy YOU are if YOU do them. “ John 13:17 (NW).

What people are carrying out these instructions of Jesus Christ in this meaningful and solemn service? - Only the Seventh-day Adventists, and a welcome awaits you!

## 27. War and Alternative Military Service

Some Christian organizations have conscientious objections to military service which involves the shedding of blood. Our friends the Jehovah's Witnesses and we Seventh-day Adventists share these convictions. However, in most countries to such religious groups, other alternatives are offered by their respective governments. These alternatives include medical work etc... which Adventists happily accept. On the other hand the Watchtower Society will not allow the Jehovah's Witnesses any alternative service, believing it would be a “compromise” that would break their integrity with God. The Witness position is one that has caused its people much suffering and imprisonment. Which position follows the example of Christ and is scriptural?

### **SOME OBJECTIONS TO ALTERNATIVE MILITARY SERVICE**

Some of the objections offered by the Watchtower Society to such alternative service would be:

1. A Christian should have nothing to do with military service or war otherwise it would be a “compromise”.
2. Such work would be assisting the “war machine
3. Healing the wounded would enable them to return to the battlefield and shed more blood for which the medic would be partly responsible.

### **CHRIST'S EXAMPLE**

In Christ's day Rome had conquered the then known world. Its army of occupation was in Israel, and the

**Page 202**

Jews deeply hated the Romans involved in Military service. So with this background it is interesting to see what Jesus did and the directives he gave on this subject.

a. Matthew 5:41 (NW) “And if someone under authority impresses you into service for a mile, go with him two miles.” The Romans were empowered to make a Jew carry his equipment for a mile. This would be obviously helping the Roman army, but what did Jesus say? He told His followers to carry it for two miles! In the light of the Watchtower Society's arguments, this would have to be considered -compromise” to have anything to do with the army!

b. Matthew 8:5-10 (NW) In this account an army officer, a Roman centurion with a hundred soldiers under his command, came to Jesus and asked for healing for one of his slaves/servants. The officer was quite open with Christ that this servant was also part of the Roman military “war machine- to carry out his commands. Jesus could have refused to have had anything to do with this Centurion, but Jesus complied with his request and healed the servant. Adventists believe that they comply with the requests of governments to be medics and follow the example of Jesus in doing a work of healing. If that Roman servant later had have carried out his master's command to put some Jewish malefactor to death, would Jesus have been responsible for the blood shed, for having healed this servant? No! Adventists take the same attitude today, which is the example Jesus set.

c. Luke 22:50-52(NW) and John 18:10-11(NW). Jesus became involved in a conflict when He was betrayed by Judas in the Garden of Gethsemane. On one side was Judas's crowd armed with swords etc... and Jesus own disciples on the other side.

Peter determined to defend Jesus lunched at Malchus, the servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. Jesus rebuked Peter for this and told him to put his sword up. Jesus then moved forward and took the time and trouble to heal Malchus's ear. Once again the example of Jesus Christ is clear for his people not to use arms, but to do a work of healing.

Seventh-day Adventists believe the position they take is completely scriptural. The position of the Watchtower Society is not only unscriptural, but it is so extreme it has caused sincere Witnesses around the world much hardship, suffering, imprisonment and even death.

## **EXTREMES AND INCONSISTENCIES**

In his book, *Crisis of Conscience*, the author, Raymond Franz tells how on a number of occasions a majority in the Governing Body of the Society wanted to change the position of the Society to "alternative service". However, each time the move failed as a "hard core" felt such a change would be embarrassing, a compromise, or it would be unfair to those who had already suffered for their previous stand.

Franz also tells a heart-rendering story of the needless persecution of thousands of Witnesses in Malawi because of the directive by the Watchtower Society's Governing Body not to buy a required government membership card. However, in his chapter, "Double Standards" he gives documented evidence that at the same time Witnesses in Mexico were allowed to obtain falsified documents of military service by bribery.

## **THE BIBLE ALTERNATIVE**

A large proportion of Christ's ministry was devoted to healing and relieving suffering. This example can be followed in war or in peace. A Christian can do this work and not "shed blood". It is an excellent alternative, and it is scriptural.

The Watchtower Society has changed so many of its teachings down through the years, we can hope and pray this may become another. Then the needless suffering of so many of its people would be stopped. Perhaps if the members of the Governing Body lived in countries which did not enjoy the privileges and freedom of the United States, they might be more "encouraged" to look for these "alternatives" which Christ gave as an example!

### **28. Attitude To Governments**

## **NOT PART OF THE WORLD**

The Watchtower Society encourages its members to adhere strictly to a position of neutrality, not only in regards to war, but also to politics. Because Jesus said, "My Kingdom is not of this world." John 18:36, the

**Page 203**

Watchtower Society interprets this to mean that Christians should not vote for anything to do with governments at any level.

## **GOVERNMENTS ORDAINED BY GOD**

Romans 13:1-7, states that the "higher powers" or governments are set up by God, "ordained" (KJV). Christians are to support such institutions. Voting is one of the ways in doing this a privilege and duty for all Christians. The Society has altered its teaching on the "higher powers" twice. (See page 13). Its attitudes to governments has suffered as a result, and this includes its attitude to voting.

It is interesting that a Witness is allowed to be a member of a militant trade union, and yet not allowed to vote for a political party, even though they are not members of it! The positions generally taken by the Watchtower Society are ones that are extreme, inconsistent and unscriptural. These include not only voting, but attitudes to those in authority, and saluting flags.

## **29. The Ten Commandments**



Down through the years, Watchtower publications have been full of statements which give the impression that they believe and uphold the keeping of the Ten Commandments:

“Anyone today who is familiar with the Bible and the life of Christ can clearly see the profound difference between what Jesus and the early apostles did and what the clergy of Christendom are doing. Nineteen hundred years ago Christians were strong in faith. Where is that faith today in Christendom? God’s book, the Holy Bible, is considered by many as a fine piece of literary work but the Ten Commandments are just to be read, not something to live by.” WATCHTOWER, JANUARY 1, 1963.

“Therefore God gave His law through Moses to the Israelites and which applies to all who want to do right, and the first in order and first in importance of His commandments or fundamental law is this, to wit:

20:1 And God spoke all these words, saying,

20:2 I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

20:3 Thou shalt have no other gods before me.

20:4 Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:

20:5 Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;

20:6 And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

“The law of God never changes, because God never changes. (Malachi 3:6) His law points out the way to everlasting life. No creature will ever be given life everlasting who willfully, that is, intentionally violates God’s law. If man chooses another for his God, Jehovah will not grant to that man life. For a man to violate the fundamental law of God means that that man puts himself on the side of the Devil, who therefore leads him to destruction. For the benefit man, then, God provided in his law that man should have no other god before Him, because God alone is the source of life.” ENEMIES, Page 94

“Jehovah’s witnesses respect the flag, their Biblical obligations and relationship to God strictly forbid them to salute any image. To Jehovah’s servants this would be an act of worship contrary to the principles set forth In the Ten Commandments. (Exodus 20: 6)” Yearbook, 1975, Page 169.

“In all parts of the world, Jehovah’s Witnesses do not take part in such ceremonies as the saluting of the flag and the singing of national anthems. Why not? Because to them this would constitute an act of worship in direct violation of the first and second of the Ten Commandments. Exodus 20:3-5.” AWAKE! - SEPTEMBER 22, 1978

“Is the use of images, for example, worship “with spirit and truth”? Does it please God? At Exodus 20:4, 5, in one of the Ten Commandments, God Himself says: “You shall not make yourself a carved image or any likeness of anything in heaven or on earth.” THE TRUTH THAT LEADS TO ETERNAL LIFE, PAGE 25.

## Page 204

“God Forbids Making Any Image Before Which People Bow In Worship. Exodus 20:4, 5 You must not make for yourself a carved Image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion.” MAKE SURE OF ALL THINGS, Page 247.

In helping Witnesses on the subject of the commandments:

1. Firmly point out that either a person keeps “the commandments of God” or he does not! There is no middle road of quoting them when it suits (to show Catholics they should not worship images, or the government why they do not salute flags etc.) and then discard them at will when confronted with the commandment of God to keep the seventh-day Sabbath.

2. Use the Bible expression, “commandments”, as a law code separate from other laws of the Bible, and show the commandments of God are to be kept by Christians, Revelation 14: 12; Revelation 12:17; 1 John 5:2,3; 1 Corinthians 7:19.

3. Many have accepted Ephesians 6:1, 2 as a powerful passage in proving that the New Testament writers believed that the Ten Commandments were still to be obeyed. “Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous. Honor your father and your mother, which is the first command with a promise.” (NW)

4. The Two Laws. God wrote the Ten Commandments on tables of stone with His own hand, and these were kept separate in the Ark of the Covenant. The entire law code for Israel was written by Moses and kept in the side of the Ark. For

almost a 1,000 years the Ten Commandments were singled out in this manner. In the minds of the early Christians, who had largely come out of Judaism, there was no question that the expression, commandments of God, were all of the Ten!

5. In the New Testament. Show that James 2:10-12 points out there is a whole law which forbids killing or committing adultery. By this law Christians are going to be judged. Then show there is another whole law including circumcision which must not be kept by Christians. Galatians 5:1-3. Obviously there must be Two Laws in the New Testament. 1 Corinthians 7:19 (N.W.) explains this: "Circumcision does not mean a thing, and uncircumcision means not a thing, but observance of God's commandments [does]."

See Is it the Watchtower? by E. B. Price, page 56, for a summary and illustration of the Two Laws. Use charts, visuals or even rough drawings like this to illustrate this Bible truth.

## ***The Ten Commandments Are God's Character***

1. God is **JUST** - Romans 3:26. His law is **JUST** - Romans 7:12.
2. God is **TRUE** - John 3:33. His law is **TRUE** - Nehemiah 9:13.
3. God is **PURE** - 1 John 3:3. His law is **PURE** - Psalm 19:7, 8.
4. God is **LIGHT** - 1 John 1:5. His law is **LIGHT** - Proverbs 6:23.
5. God is **FAITHFUL** - 1 Corinthians 1:9. His law is **FAITHFUL** - Psalms 119:86.
6. God is **GOOD** - Nahum 1:7. His law is **GOOD** - Romans 7:12, 16.
7. God is **SPIRITUAL** - John 4:24. His law is **SPIRITUAL** - Romans 7:14.
8. God is **HOLY** - Isaiah 6:3, 1 Peter 1:15. His law is **HOLY** - Exodus 20:8, Romans 7:12.
9. God is **TRUTH** - John 14:6. His law is **TRUTH** - Psalms 119:142,151.
10. God is **LIFE** - John 14:6. His law is **LIFE** - Matthew 19:17.
11. God is **RIGHTEOUSNESS** - Jeremiah 23:6. His law is **RIGHTEOUSNESS** - Psalm 119:172.
12. God is **PERFECT** - Matthew 5:48. His law is **PERFECT** - James 1:25.
13. God is **ETERNAL** - John 8:35. His law is **ETERNAL** - Psalms 111:7, 8.
14. God is **PEACE** - Isaiah 9:6. His law is **PEACE** - Psalm 119:165.
15. God is **THE WAY** - John 14:6 His law is **THE WAY** - Psalm 119:30-32
16. God is **SURE** - 2 Timothy 2:19 His law is **SURE** - Psalm 19:7, 111:7, 8
17. God is **UNCHANGING** - Malachi 3:6 His law is **UNCHANGING** - Psalm 111:7, 8
18. God is **SWEET** - Psalm 34:8 His law is **SWEET** - Psalm 19:10, 119:103

**Page 205**

19. God is **WISE** - Psalm 111:10 His law is **WISE** - Psalm 19:7
20. God is **OUR MEDITATION** - Psalm 63:6 His law is **OUR MEDITATION** - Psalm 1:2
21. God is **JUDGE** - Psalm 50:6 His law is **JUDGE** - James 2:12
22. God is **ENLIGHTENMENT** - Psalm 18:27 His law is **ENLIGHTENMENT** - Psalm 19:8
23. God is **LOVE** - 1 John 4:7, 8 His law is **LOVE** - Romans 13:8-10
24. God is **CLEAN** - Psalm 19:9 His law is **CLEAN** - Ezekiel 22:26
25. God is **BLESSED** - Psalm 28:6 His law is **BLESSED** - Exodus 20:11
26. God is **DELIGHT** - Psalm 37:4 His law is **DELIGHT** - Psalm 1:2
27. God is **WONDERFUL** - Isaiah 9:6 His law is **WONDERFUL** - Psalm 119:18
28. God is **LIBERTY** - Isaiah 61:1 His law is **LIBERTY** - James 1:25, Psalm 119:45
29. God is **COMFORT** - Psalm 23:4 His law is **COMFORT** - Psalm 119:50
30. God is **OUR SONG** - Revelation 15:3 His law is **OUR SONG** - Psalm 119:54
31. God is **MERCIFUL** - Exodus 34:5 His law is **MERCIFUL** - Psalm 119:58
32. God is **KNOWLEDGE** - Isaiah 11:2 His law is **KNOWLEDGE** - Psalm 119:66
33. God is **HOPE** - Psalm 130:7 His law is **HOPE** - Psalm 119:74
34. God is **LIFE** - Psalm 36:9 His law is **LIFE** - Proverbs 3:1, 2
35. God is **SOUND** - Proverbs 8:13, 14 His law is **SOUND** - Psalm 119:80
36. God is **UNDERSTANDING** - Psalm 147:5 His law is **UNDERSTANDING** - Psalm 119:99
37. God is **HAPPINESS** - Psalm 146:5 His law is **HAPPINESS** - Proverbs 29:18
38. God is **JOY** - Psalm 16:11 His law is **JOY** - Psalm 119:162

## ***God's Law is Eternal***

Psalms 1:1-3	Our meditation all the day long.
Psalms 19:7-8	The law of God is perfect converting the soul.
Psalms 40:8	God's law is a delight within our heart.
Psalms 78:1-7	The Ten Commandments are for His people.
Psalms 111:7,8	The eternal law of God.
Psalms 103:18-20	The angels keep the commandments of God.
Psalms 105:8-10	The Ten Commandments are binding for 20,000 years [Until 19,000 AD].
Psalms 119:126,150	God will destroy the lawless ones.
Psalms 119:105	The law is our guide and lamp.
Psalms 119:165,174	It is our peace and delight.
Isaiah 8:16	God will seal the law among His disciples.
Isaiah 8:20	The commandments are a test of truth and error.
Isaiah 66:22-24	The Sabbath will be kept in heaven.
Matthew 5:17-19	Jesus came to uphold the Ten Commandments - not abolish them.
Matthew 19:17-19	Keep the Ten Commandments to enter heaven Jesus said.
John 14:15	If you love Jesus keep the Commandments.
John 15:10	Jesus is our example and He kept the law of God.
Luke 23:56	The Sabbath commandment still existed after Jesus died on the cross.
Romans 2:13	The doers of the law are justified.
Romans 3:20	The law gives a knowledge of right and wrong.
Romans 3:31	We establish the law.
Romans 4:15	Sin is the breaking of the law.
Romans 5:13	Sin is the breaking of the law.
Romans 7:7	Sin is the breaking of the law.
Romans 7:12	The law is holy, just and good.
Romans 7:25	The true Christian serves the law of God.
Romans 8:1-4	The true Christian obeys the righteous law of God.
Romans 8:7	The evil mind rejects keeping the commandments of God.
Romans 13:8-10	True love is obeying the law of God.
1 Corinthians 7:19	Keeping the Commandments is what really matters.
1 Corinthians 10:1-4	Jesus gave the Ten Commandments at Mount Sinai.
1 Timothy 1:8	The Ten Commandment Law is good in Paul's day.

**Page 206**

Hebrews 4:4, 9	The Sabbath rest remains on the seventh day.
Hebrews 8:8-10	Keeping the Ten Commandment Law is part of the New Covenant.
James 1:25	Those who keep the perfect Law are blessed by God in what they do.
James 2:8 - 12	We will be judged by the Ten Commandments [Revelation 20:11-15].
1 John 2:3, 4	We must keep the Commandments to know Jesus.
1 John 3:22, 24	We must keep the Commandments to abide in Jesus and the Holy Spirit.
1 John 5:2, 3	The love of God is to keep His Commandments.
Revelation 11:19	The Ark of the Ten Commandment Covenant still in heaven.
Revelation 15:5	The Ark of the Ten Commandment Covenant still in heaven.
Revelation 12:17	God's saints keep the commandments.
Revelation 14:12	God's saints keep the commandments.
Revelation 21:8	Commandment breakers cast into the Lake of Fire.
Revelation 22:14	God's saints keep the commandments.
Revelation 22:15	Lawless people are excluded from the Paradise of God.

## ***Ten Commandments In The Gospels***

### **Commandment 1**

Matthew 6:24  
Matthew 14:33  
Mark 12:24-32  
Luke 12:8, 9  
John 19:15  
**Commandment 2**

Matthew 22:37  
Matthew 10:37, 38  
Mark 8:33  
Luke 1:16  
John 17:3

Matthew 19:17  
Matthew 10:32, 33  
Luke 2:14  
Luke 11:2  
John 11:25

Matthew 4:10  
Matthew 6:33  
Luke 4:8  
Luke 12:31  
John 4:24

John 4:24

**Commandment 3**

Matthew 27:29  
Matthew 27:39-43  
Mark 3:28, 29  
Luke 12:10

Matthew 6:9, 10  
Mark 15:18, 19  
Luke 11:2  
Luke 23:39

Matthew 15:19  
Mark 14:65  
Luke 22:64, 65  
John 19:3

Matthew 12:31, 32  
Mark 7:22  
Luke 23:36, 37

**Commandment 4**

Matthew 12:2  
Matthew 12:11  
Matthew 12:1  
Mark 16:1  
Mark 2:27  
Mark 15:42  
Luke 6:7  
Luke 4:16  
Luke 14:1  
Luke 23:54  
John 19:31  
John 7:22  
John 7:23

Matthew 12:5  
Matthew 12:12  
Mark 3:4  
Mark 6:2  
Mark 2:24  
Luke 4:31  
Luke 6:6  
Luke 13:15  
Luke 14:3  
Luke 23:56  
John 20:1  
John 5:18  
John 20:19

Matthew 12:8  
Matthew 24:20  
Mark 16:9  
Mark 1:21  
Mark 2:23  
Luke 13:10  
Luke 6:5  
Luke 13:16  
Luke 14:5  
Luke 24:1  
John 9:16  
John 5:10

Matthew 12:10  
Matthew 28:1  
Mark 16:2  
Mark 2:28  
Mark 3:2  
Luke 6:9  
Luke 6:1  
Luke 6:2  
Luke 18:12  
Luke 13:14  
John 9:14  
John 5:9

**Commandment 5**

Matthew 19:18, 19

Matthew 15:3, 4

Matthew 12:31

Mark 10:19

**Commandment 6**

Matthew 21:38  
Matthew 27:1

Matthew 27:22, 23  
Matthew 26:59

Matthew 27:20  
Matthew 5:21

Matthew 27:3-5  
Matthew 26:14-16

Matthew 26:4  
Matthew 26:66  
Matthew 11:12  
Matthew 19:18  
Mark 12:5  
Mark 6:16  
Mark 13:12  
Mark 14:1  
Mark 14:21  
Luke 10:30  
Luke 23:33  
Luke 20:14  
Luke 11:47-51  
John 19:6, 7  
John 7:19, 20  
John 12:10

Matthew 24:9  
Matthew 20:18, 19  
Matthew 10:28  
Matthew 15:19  
Mark 7:21  
Mark 6:19  
Mark 15:20  
Mark 15:13-15  
Mark 14:10, 11  
Luke 18:20  
Luke 23:23  
Luke 19:47  
Luke 9:22  
John 16:2  
John 19:15  
John 11:50

Matthew 27:35  
Matthew 17:23  
Matthew 10:21  
Matthew 23:34, 35  
Mark 10:19  
Mark 10:33, 34  
Mark 9:31  
Mark 14:64  
Mark 6:24-27  
Luke 9:9  
Luke 22:5, 6  
Luke 18:33  
Luke 4:29  
John 8:44  
John 7:1

Matthew 23:31  
Matthew 14:8, 10  
Matthew 22:6  
Matthew 26:52  
Mark 3:6  
Mark 12:7,8  
Mark 15:24  
Mark 14:55  
Luke 22:2  
Luke 24:7  
Luke 20:19  
Luke 13:31  
Luke 12:4, 5  
John 13:2  
John 8:37

**Commandment 7**

Matthew 12:39  
Matthew 14:4  
Mark 8:38  
Luke 16:18

Matthew 19:9, 18  
Matthew 5:8  
Mark 10:2-12  
Luke 7:37

Matthew 15:19  
Matthew 16:4  
Mark 7:21  
Luke 15:30

Matthew 5:27-32  
Mark 6:18  
Mark 10:19  
John 8:3, 4

### **Commandment 8**

Matthew 19:18  
Matthew 6:19, 20  
Mark 12:40  
Luke 3:13  
John 2:16

Matthew 23:14  
Matthew 15:19  
Mark 11:17  
Luke 19:8

Matthew 21:38  
Mark 7:22  
Luke 18:20  
Luke 10:30

Matthew 21:12, 13  
Mark 10:19  
Luke 19:46  
Luke 20:14

### **Commandment 9**

Matthew 7:15  
Matthew 26:24, 25  
Matthew 11:18, 19  
Matthew 19:18  
Matthew 24:4  
Mark 13:22  
Mark 14:1  
Mark 14:41  
Mark 13:5, 6  
Luke 20:20  
Luke 6:16  
Luke 22:34  
John 8:44, 55  
John 18:17

Matthew 27:63  
Matthew 26:14, 16  
Matthew 27:12, 13  
Matthew 5:11  
Matthew 26:48  
Mark 3:22  
Mark 14:10, 11  
Mark 14:66-72  
Luke 22:5, 6  
Luke 6:22  
Luke 7:33, 34  
Luke 23:2  
John 10:20  
John 13:38

Matthew 26:69-75  
Matthew 24:23, 24  
Matthew 24:10, 11  
Matthew 5:33  
Mark 13:21, 22  
Mark 7:22  
Mark 14:21  
Mark 15:3, 4  
Luke 22:54-62  
Luke 22:21  
Luke 11:15-20  
John 3:19-21  
John 18:25-27

Matthew 26:34, 35  
Matthew 28:13  
Matthew 26:59, 60  
Matthew 15:19  
Mark 10:19  
Mark 13:12  
Mark 14:30, 31  
Mark 14:56, 57  
Luke 19:8  
Luke 21:16  
Luke 21:8  
John 13:2  
John 6:71

### **Commandment 10**

Matthew 26:14-16  
Mark 4:19  
Mark 10:22  
Luke 16:14  
Luke 20:14

Matthew 19:22  
Mark 7:22  
Luke 11:39  
Luke 16:19-22  
Luke 22:5, 6

Matthew 21:38  
Mark 12:7, 8  
Luke 12:16-21  
Luke 18:23  
John 8:44

Matthew 5:28  
Mark 14:10, 11  
Luke 12:15  
Luke 19:8  
John 2:16

**Page 208**

## ***Paul Kept The Ten Commandments***

### **1.**

Acts 24:14  
Romans 3:30  
1 Corinthians 10:20, 21  
Philippians 3:3  
1 Timothy 1:17  
Hebrews 12:28

Acts 27:23  
Romans 3:18  
2 Corinthians 6:15  
Colossians 2:18  
1 Timothy 2:5  
Hebrews 9:14

Romans 1:21-32  
1 Corinthians 14:25  
Ephesians 4:6  
1 Thessalonians 1:9  
1 Timothy 1:3  
Hebrews 3:12

Romans 1:9  
1 Corinthians 8:4, 6  
Philippians 3:19  
2 Thessalonians 2:4  
2 Timothy 3:4

### **2.**

Acts 15:20, 29  
Romans 2:22  
1 Corinthians 10:7, 14

Acts 19:35  
Romans 11:4  
1 Corinthians 6:9

Acts 17:16, 29  
Romans 1:23  
1 Corinthians 10:20, 21

Acts 21:25  
Romans 11:4  
1 Corinthians 10:19



1 Corinthians 5:10, 11  
Colossians 3:5

2 Corinthians 6:16  
Colossians 5:21

Galatians 5:20  
1 Thessalonians 1:9

Ephesians 5:5

**3.**

Acts 18:6  
1 Timothy 1:13  
Titus 2:5

Acts 26:11  
1 Timothy 6:1

Romans 2:24  
1 Timothy 1:20

Colossians 3:8  
2 Timothy 3:2

**4.**

Acts 13:42  
Acts 16:13  
Acts 15:21

Acts 20:7  
Acts 13:44  
Hebrews 4:4, 9

Acts 18:4-11  
Acts 13:27

Acts 17:2  
Acts 13:14

**5.**

Romans 1:30  
1 Timothy 3:12

Ephesians 6:2  
1 Timothy 3:4

Colossians 3:20  
2 Timothy 3:2

1 Timothy 5:4

**6.**

Romans 3:15  
Galatians 5:21

Romans 11:3  
1 Thessalonians 2:15

Romans 1:29  
1 Timothy 1:9

Romans 13:9

**7.**

Acts 15:20  
Romans 7:2, 3  
1 Corinthians 7:2  
1 Corinthians 5:10  
1 Corinthians 10:11, 13  
Ephesians 5:23, 33  
1 Timothy 3:2  
Titus 2:4, 5

Acts 15:29  
1 Corinthians 5:11  
1 Corinthians 10:8, 10  
1 Corinthians 6:15  
2 Corinthians 11:2  
Colossians 3:18, 19  
1 Timothy 1:10  
Titus 1:6

Romans 1:29  
1 Corinthians 6:13  
1 Corinthians 5:9  
1 Corinthians 10:34, 36,  
Galatians 5:19  
Colossians 3:5  
1 Timothy 3:12  
Hebrews 13:4

Romans 2:22  
1 Corinthians 6:18  
1 Corinthians 5:1  
1 Corinthians 6:9  
Ephesians 5:3, 5  
1 Thessalonians 4:3  
2 Timothy 3:6  
Hebrews 12:16

**8.**

Romans 13:9  
1 Corinthians 7:5  
1 Thessalonians 4:6

Romans 2:21  
1 Corinthians 6:10  
1 Timothy 1:10

Romans 2:22  
2 Corinthians 11:8

1 Corinthians 6:8  
Ephesians 4:28

**9.**

Acts 13:6  
Romans 1:25  
2 Corinthians 11:3  
Ephesians 4:25  
1 Thessalonians 4:6

Romans 3:4  
1 Corinthians 6:8  
Galatians 1:20  
Ephesians 4:14  
2 Thessalonians 2:11

Romans 3:13  
2 Corinthians 11:13  
Galatians 1:6-8  
Colossians 3:9  
1 Timothy 2:7

Romans 13:9  
2 Corinthians 11:31  
Ephesians 5:6  
1 Thessalonians 2:3  
1 Timothy 4:2

1 Timothy 6:10, 21

1 Timothy 1:10

2 Timothy 2:18

2 Timothy 4:4

2 Timothy 3:13  
Hebrews 6:18

2 Timothy 3:3

Titus 1:2

Titus 2:3

#### 10.

Romans 13:14

Romans 6:12

Ephesians 4:19, 22

1 Timothy 6:10

2 Timothy 2:22

Hebrews 13:5

Romans 7:7

1 Corinthians 10:6

Colossians 3:5

1 Timothy 6:9

2 Timothy 3:2

Romans 13:9

Galatians 5:16, 24

1 Thessalonians 2:5

2 Timothy 4:3

Titus 2:12

Romans 1:24

Ephesians 2:3

1 Timothy 3:3, 8

2 Timothy 3:6

Titus 3:3

## 30. The Sabbath

The Watchtower Society emphasizes in its publications the need for Christians to obey and please God. It therefore is a shock to many to learn that Jehovah's Witnesses are not taught to observe the Bible Sabbath for Jehovah God. In fact they do not observe any day at all, be it the seventh day Sabbath or Sunday. (They did once regard Sunday as a holy day, in their early years.) "Studies" Volume 6, Page 386-387. Their refusal to keep the Sabbath is because they are taught that the weekly Sabbath finished with Christ's death. To do this they must also concede that the Ten Commandments were done away with at that time.

Furthermore, the Watchtower Society teaches that each day of creation was a period of 7,000 years, including the seventh-day, which God blessed and sanctified ("made sacred" Genesis 2:2,3 N.W.) at that time. It is therefore contended that we are still in this Sabbath period which has extended from the time of Adam, and Witnesses are therefore taught that everyday is the Sabbath now.

To help Witnesses see the truth on the Sabbath:

1. Point out the inconsistency of the Watchtower Society as it upholds the Ten Commandments when it suits them, and will even disfellowship its members for breaking some of them. However, when the seventh-day Sabbath is presented, they immediately contend these "commandments of God" were done away with, along with the Jewish laws.

2. Show that each day of creation was a twenty-four hour period of "an evening and a morning". (See the next Chapter for a study on this subject.)

3. Give a study on the Sabbath throughout the Ages, using the outline at the bottom of this page. They will agree with most of your presentation before the time of Christ, but believe this only applied to the Jews. However the example of Sabbath-keeping by Christ, His apostles and the early church will impress them, along with the fact that God's people in the Last Days will be keeping all God's commandments, and the Sabbath will also be observed in the New World.

These are some points to emphasize:

- a. It was Christ's custom to keep the Sabbath. Luke 4:16.
- b. Jesus expected it would still be, being kept long after His death, when Jerusalem would be destroyed. Matthew 24:20.
- c. Jesus claimed it was His. He had created it, and He is therefore, "Lord of the Sabbath". Mark 2:27, 28.
- d. Many years after Christ's death, Luke a Gentile referred to the seventh-day Sabbath as, "the Sabbath according to the commandment". Luke 23:54-56.
- e. Paul said Christians should keep the "commandments of God" but not the Jewish laws like circumcision. 1 Corinthians 7: 19.
- f. Paul preached to the Gentiles as well as the Jews on the Sabbath. In Antioch, Acts 13:44, "The next Sabbath nearly all the city gathered together to hear the word of Jehovah."(NW) Note: this would have been in the city market place, not the synagogue. It was a Gentile city.
- g. At Philippi, Paul acknowledged the Sabbath in a quiet place by the riverside outside the city. Acts 16:13. Why did Luke the writer of Acts mention it was the Sabbath if it had no significance to Christians?
- h. Hebrews 4:9 (N.W) says, "So there remains a Sabbath resting (Gr. sabbatismos means "sabbathising" or "keeping a weekly Sabbath") for the people of God." Verse 10 warns of unbelief/disobedience for those who do not

**Page 210**

rest just as God did." see verse 4. While the passage has a spiritual application it also has a very literal one dealing with disobedience.

i. If people profess to be Christians but refuse to keep God's commandments, then the Bible says they are liars, and they do not have the truth. 1 John 2:3, 4.

j. Christians are to love God and keep His commandments. “For this is what the love of God means, that we observe His commandments, and yet His commandments are not burdensome.” 1 John 5:1

k. The Devil does not want people to keep God’s Commandments. He is violently opposed to them. In the Last Days he will war against the -remnant church- of the ages which observe the commandments of God”. Revelation 12:17.

l. God has a people living in the Last Days before Christ returns who “observe the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12, 14. One can not argue that it is impossible to observe the Commandments of God, because the Bible says His people are “observing” them!

m. In the New World, the Sabbath will be observed, with everyone coming to worship Jehovah, Sabbath by Sabbath throughout Eternity. Isaiah 66:22, 23.

To answer objections:

Colossians 2:16,17. The Jewish holy days such as the Passover, were called “Sabbaths” and they foreshadowed with their blood sacrifices, the ministry and life of Christ. These were no longer to be kept after Christ died. However the seventh-day Sabbath was not one of these “shadows” since it was instituted “made sacred” (Genesis 2:2, NW) before man sinned, sacrifices were commenced and the Messiah was promised.

Acts 15:28, 29. The Sabbath was not included in this list. However, the Ten Commandments was obviously not under discussion since there was nothing mentioned about lying, stealing, killing etc.

Romans 10:4. “Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness.” God’s laws define sin and are needed as such, but only Christ can give us righteousness.

Ephesians 2:15. It was the “law of commandments contained in ordinances that was abolished (see KJV). The context (verse 11) shows that it was not the Ten Commandments under discussion but laws contained in ordinances dealing with Jewish decrees such as circumcision. See 1 Corinthians 7:19.

For further helpful information read Chapters 6 and 8, in *Is it The Watchtower*, by E. B. Price.

## 31. The Days Of Creation

### **A. Literal 24 Hour days**

The Watchtower Society has taught in the past that each day of Creation consisted of a period of 7,000 years. They now teach that they are billions of years long. Show your Witness friends that they could not have been periods of thousands or billions of years because:

1. God Spoke Everything into Existence. Hebrews 11:1

It happened as soon as He spoke. Psalm 33:6, 9. The Genesis account bears this out “And God said.” Genesis 1:3, 6, 9, 11, 14, 20. “and it was so.” Genesis 1:7, 9, 11, 15 etc. The New World Bible has been translated in the first chapters of Genesis to give the impression that each day of Creation was a long period of time. Thus Genesis 1:3 is translated: “And God proceeded to say: Let light come to be. Then there came to be light.” Most translations translate this verse: “And God said, ‘Let there be light: and there was light.’”

1. The Day of Creation in Every Case was a Period of Darkness and a Period of Light.

For each of the six days in which God was doing a creative work, we are told at the conclusion of the events, that the evening and the morning were the day. This is used for emphasis, to emphasize the fact that these days were not long periods of time. Genesis 1:4, 5 tell how God created light, and divided it into light and darkness. This light no doubt shone from Himself and as the earth turned on its axis in the 24 hour period, it was thus divided into day and night, the period of the morning and the evening. The Bible does not say, evenings and mornings, it was just one evening, or night, and the one morning or the period of light.

**Page 211**

3. Vegetation Was Created on the Third Day, and the Sun on the Fourth.

While light was created by God on the First Day, sunlight from the sun, which is vital to living plants, was not created until the fourth day, which was after plants were created. It would have meant that vegetation would have had to have lived for 7,000 years etc. without sunlight.

1. Vegetation Cannot Exist Without Insects to Pollinate Them.

Genesis 1:25 tells that the creeping things were created on the Sixth Day. If each day of creation were 7,000 years, then vegetation created on the Third Day would have had to wait 21,000 years before there were any insects such as bees, moths, butterflies etc. which science has proved are absolutely essential for the life of plants.

1. God Spoke Everything into Existence Fully Matured.

Adam and Eve were created fully mature human beings. They were not created babies to then grow up. Great whales were also spoken into existence, Genesis 1:20, 21. Grass yielding seed, fruit trees yielding fruit were created.

1. The Bible Refers Elsewhere to the Days of Creation as Being Six Literal Days of the Week.

In the fourth Commandment of the Ten Commandments, God reminded them to remember to keep the seventh day of the week as the Sabbath, Exodus 20:8-11. With His own finger He wrote: Six days shall thou labor, which they understood to be six-days of 24 hours, but He continued: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day.

1. The Sun Only Divides a Literal Day.

Keeping to the context of Genesis 1, the sun was to rule the day, and to divide the darkness from the light. The sun only divides a literal 24-hour day, not long periods of time!

1. If the Days of Creation Were to be Long Periods of

Time, God Would Have Stated It. There is not a text in the Bible to say that each day of Creation was 7,000 years long. That is only a theory, and like the evolutionary theory to which it is closely related, it cuts across the Bible truth: "For He spoke, and it done; He commanded and it stood fast." Psalm 33:9.

1. God Is Not Still Resting.

Practically every reliable translation says God rested and not God proceeded to rest or has been resting as translated in Genesis 2:2, 3 in the New World Bible. It is of interest to note that this Bible has not been consistently translated on this point, because in Hebrews 4:4, when quoting this passage from Genesis 2, it has translated it "God rested"! (It would be wise in taking this study with a Witness to use a number of translations, especially the American Standard Version which has been printed and distributed by the Watchtower Society. The Witness can then see that the New World Bible is a biased translation on this teaching.)

1. The Events Of The Sixth Day.

There is no problem with all these events taking place in a 24 hour period. The animals could all have been spoken into existence by early on the morning of the Sixth Day. Adam could have been created by mid-morning. Then the animals could have walked to Adam to be named by him in a few hours. (Less than the time it takes to walk around the average Zoo.) By mid-afternoon Adam's request for a mate could have been dealt with, and Eve created long before the evening of the seventh-day, which was made for them. Mark 2:27, 28. The Sabbath, which God then rested on, blessed and sanctified, was then set aside for their holy use as a blessing to them each week, after six literal days of toiling in the Garden.

1. When a Day in the Bible Has a Numeral in Front of It, It is Always Referring to a Literal Day of 24 Hours. Whenever a day has a numeral in front of it in the Bible, such as first day, or fortieth day, it never means any period other than a twenty-four hour day. In a concordance there are scores of references to day but there is never any exception to this rule.

Each day of Creation in the account of Genesis 1, plainly states it was the first day, the second day, third day etc. Besides this, as already mentioned each day was also stated to be the evening and the morning. God in leaving us an account of His work of Creation could hardly have taken more care to ensure that there would never be any mistake about the fact that each day of Creation was a period of just twenty-four hours! Most Christian people

**Page 212**

believe that Jesus Christ died on a cross which had a crossbeam. However, the Watchtower Society teaches that it was only a simple pole, which it terms a torture stake, and this term is used throughout their publications.

## SCIENCE AND THE BOOK OF GENESIS

<http://www.answersingenesis.org/home/area/qa.asp>

<http://www.answersingenesis.org/home/area/faq/dating.asp>

<http://www.answersingenesis.org/home/area/faq/young.asp>

[www.ChristianAnswers.net](http://www.ChristianAnswers.net)

[www.icr.org](http://www.icr.org)

### **B. Watchtower Quotes**

The first part of Genesis indicates that the earth could have existed for **billions of years** before the first Genesis "day," though it does not say for how long. However, it does describe what earth's condition was just before that first May" began: "Now the earth proved to be formless and waste and there was darkness upon the surface of the watery deep; and God's active force was moving to and fro over the surface of the waters."-Genesis 1:2. **[Evolution Or Creation, Watchtower Society, 1985, Page 26]**

A well-known geologist said this about the Genesis creation account: "If I as a geologist were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of the origin of the earth and the development of life on it to a simple, pastoral people, such as the tribes to whom the Book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis." This geologist, **Wallace Pratt, [Theistic Evolutionist]** also noted that the order of events-from the origin of the oceans, to the emergence of land, to the appearance of marine life, and then to birds and mammals-is essentially the sequence of the principal **divisions of geologic time**. **[Evolution Or Creation, Watchtower Society, 1985, Page 36]**

Creation of the heavens and the earth, and the preparation of the earth for human habitation (Genesis 1:1-2 to 2 5). Reaching back evidently through **billions of years of time**, Genesis opens with impressive simplicity: "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." Significantly, this opening sentence identifies God as the Creator and his material creation as the heavens and the earth. In majestic, well-chosen words, the first chapter continues on to give a general account of the creative work relative to the earth. This is accomplished in six time periods called days, each beginning with an evening, when the creative work for that period is undefined, and ending in the brightness of a morning, as the glory of the creative work becomes clearly manifest. **[All Scripture Inspired, Watchtower Society, 1990, Page 14]**

The planet's coming into existence is recounted in the Bible with the simple statement: "In the beginning God created the heavens and the Earth." (Genesis 1:1) Just how long ago the starry heavens and the earth were created is not stated in the Bible. Therefore, there is no basis for Bible scholars to take issue with scientific calculations of the age of earth's rock-mass. Scientists variously estimate the age of the rocks as **three and a half to four thousand million or more years**. **[Aid To Bible Understanding, Watchtower Society, Page 476]**

Was all physical creation accomplished in just six days sometime within the past 6,000 to 10,000 years? The facts disagree with such a conclusion: (1) Light from the Andromeda nebula can be seen on a clear night in the northern hemisphere. It takes about 2,000,000 years for that light to reach the earth, indicating that the universe must



be at least millions of years old. (2) End products of radioactive decay in rocks in the earth testify that some rock formations have been undisturbed for **billions of years**. [*Reasoning From The Scriptures, Watchtower Society, 1989, Page 88*]

Page 213

## **C. Watchtower Endorsement of Theistic Evolutionists**

The Watchtower Society now endorses Theistic Evolutionists [Francis Collins,

Wallace Pratt] on its official website and publications.

[www.Watchtower.org](http://www.Watchtower.org).

## **Theistic Evolutionist Francis Collins**

[http://www.watchtower.org/library/g/2002/6/8/article\\_01.htm](http://www.watchtower.org/library/g/2002/6/8/article_01.htm)

### **Jehovah's Witnesses Reconciling Science and Religion**

"Science and religion [are] no longer seen as incompatible."— The Daily Telegraph, London, May 26, 1999.

BOTH science and religion, in their noblest forms, involve the search for truth. Science discovers a world of magnificent order, a universe that contains distinctive marks of intelligent design. True religion makes these discoveries meaningful by teaching that the mind of the Creator lies behind the design manifest in the physical world.

"I find my appreciation of science is greatly enriched by religion," says **Francis Collins**, a molecular biologist. He continues: "When I discover something about the human genome, I experience a sense of awe at the mystery of life, and say to myself, 'Wow, only God knew before.' It is a profoundly beautiful and moving sensation, which helps me appreciate God and makes science even more rewarding for me." What will help one to reconcile science and religion? Science has discovered a world full of distinctive marks of intelligent design

For example, when we understand that the Bible uses the term "day" to represent various periods of time, we see that the account of the six creative days in Genesis need not conflict with the scientific conclusion that **the**

**age of the earth is about four and a half billion years**. According to the Bible, the earth existed for an unstated period before the creative days began. (See the box "The Creative Days—24 Hours Each?") Even if science corrects itself and suggests a different age for our planet, the statements made in the Bible still hold true. Instead of contradicting the Bible, science in this and many other cases actually provides us with voluminous supplemental information about the physical world, both present and past.

Commenting on claims that the creative days were only 24 literal hours in length, molecular biologist

**Francis Collins [Theistic Evolutionist]** remarks: "Creationism has done more harm to serious notions of belief than anything in modern history."

<http://www.saintmarkpresby.org/pagecollinstalk.htm>

## Personal Faith and Public Life Series – Francis Collins

If you look at the mouse genome in great detail compared to human based on the identified sequences of both, you can find ancient relics, DNA fossils that entered the common ancestors of human and mouse some **80 to 90 million years ago**. These DNA elements became immediately nonfunctional as soon as they landed in the genome. These relics, DNA fossils, have been carried along through **80 or 90 million years**.

Knowing and guiding the outcome of a random process such as evolution, extending over **4 billion years**, is no problem for Him.

God through the process of reading the scriptures and prayer, is referred to as **theistic evolutionism**.

**More On Francis Collins And Theistic Evolution**  
<http://www.asa3.org/ASA/PSCF/2003/PSCF9-03Collins.pdf>

## Theistic Evolutionist Wallace Pratt

Page 214

A well-known geologist said this about the Genesis creation account: "If I as a geologist were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of the origin of the earth and the development of life on it to a simple, pastoral people, such as the tribes to whom the Book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis." This geologist, **Wallace Pratt**, also noted that the order of events—from the origin of the oceans, to the emergence of land, to the appearance of marine life, and then to birds and mammals—is essentially the sequence of the principal **divisions of geologic time**. [*Evolution Or Creation, Watchtower Society, 1985, Page 36*]

Can You Trust the Genesis Record? But can you really put faith in this account of creation and the prospects it holds out? As we noted, modern genetic research is moving toward the conclusion stated in the Bible long ago. Also, some scientists have taken note of the order of events presented in Genesis. For example, noted geologist **Wallace Pratt** commented: "If I as a geologist were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of the origin of the earth and the development of life on it to a simple, pastoral people, such as the tribes to whom the Book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis." He also observed that the order as described in Genesis for the origin of the oceans and the emergence of land, as well as for the appearance of marine life, birds, and mammals, is in essence the sequence of the principal **divisions of geologic time**. [*Is There A Creator Who Cares?, Watchtower Society, 1998, Pages 101,102*]

<http://www.aapg.org/explorer/2000/05may/sermoninstone.html>

### God And Theistic Evolution – Wallace Pratt

"If I as a geologist," I told my audience, "were called upon to explain briefly our modern ideas of earth origin and the development of life on earth to a simple, pastoral people, such as the tribes to whom the book of Genesis was addressed, I could hardly do better than follow rather closely much of the language of the first chapter of Genesis." I then proceeded to draw a parallel between the account of creation in Genesis and our own modern theory of earth **origin and evolution**.

Geologically speaking, the period of man's dominance over his environment has been, so far, of only the briefest duration. **Man first became a weapon-making creature perhaps a million years ago.** But, according to James Breasted's *The Dawn of Conscience*, the time men began to feel the power of conscience to such a degree that it became a potent social force was only 5,000 years ago. Ralph Waldo Emerson, in his *Essay on Politics* says: "We think our civilization near its meridian, but we are yet only at the cock-crowing and the morning star. In our barbarous society the influence of character is in its infancy."

## 32. The Cross Or Torture Stake

Most Christians would argue that it does not matter what Jesus died on, it is the fact He died and shed His blood for our sins that matters. However, for a Jehovah's Witness, the instrument of Christ's death is made to be important because they believe only they have the truth on this event.

### **THE BIBLE EVIDENCE**

The Bible does not state definitely whether it was a cross or a simple stake or pole. However, the evidence does favor the accepted "T" type cross:

#### a. The Inscription Above Christ's Head.

Matthew 27:37 (NW) Also they posted above his head the charge against him in writing: "This Jesus the King of the Jews." John 19:19, 20 (NW) Pilate wrote a title also and put it on the torture stake. It was written: "Jesus the Nazarene the King of the Jews. Therefore many of the Jews read this title because the place where Jesus was impaled was near the city: and it was written in Hebrew, in Latin, in Greek." It was usual to write on an inscription

**Page 215**

the name, address and charge against the criminal being crucified. Because Pilate insisted on writing Christ's inscription in three languages, His would have been a very large one. This the Bible states was posted above his head.

This drawing appeared in the Watchtower publication *The Harp of God* (1927 Edition) before the cross was rejected. However, from this illustration it becomes obvious that Christ's inscription could only have been posted

above his head if the arms were outstretched on a crossbeam. On a simple stake, an inscription placed above the head could be dislodged by the victim flexing his arms. If it had been just a simple stake or pole, the inscription would have had to have been nailed above his upraised hands or body and not what the inspired Bible writer wrote: above his head! (The illustration is from, *The Harp of God*, page 114.)

#### b. Peter's Death.

Jesus in foretelling Peter's death, said to Him: John 21:18, 19 (NW) "When you have grown old you will stretch out your hands and another man will gird you and bear you where you do not wish. This he said to signify by what kind of death he would glorify God." Christ Jesus foretold that Peter's death would be one involving his hands being outstretched, which would have been death on a cross with a cross-beam.

Tradition states this prophecy was fulfilled about AD 67 when Peter was crucified. It is said that because Peter had denied his Lord, he felt unworthy to be crucified exactly like Jesus and requested to be crucified upside down, which request was granted. In the 16th century, Justus Lipsius in his book *De Cruce Liber Primus* gave many illustrations of different types of crosses and methods of crucifixion. The two illustrations from his book, (on the right) show how Peter could have been crucified. There is no real historical evidence to doubt the fulfillment of Christ's prophecy nor the traditional account of the details of Peter's crucifixion.

#### a. A Cross of Shame.

The Bible pictures the type of death that Christ died as being one of tremendous shame. Philippians 2:8 indicates it was the lowest to which He could humble Himself. Galatians 5:11 outlines it was an offence or stumbling block. If the "T" cross was considered more pagan and degrading than the simple stake, is it not logical that this is the one the Bible writers were referring to when they kept emphasizing the degradation and shame connected with the instrument of Christ's death and torture? Thus the Bible evidence related to Christ's death supports the so-called pagan cross with a cross-beam and not just the simple pole or "torture stake".

#### a. More than one nail was used on Jesus' hands

John 20:25 "The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them,

Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.”

A torture stake would only need one nail through both hands rather than a separate nail for each hand.

## **HISTORICAL EVIDENCE**

The PATIBULUM (Cross-beam) and EARLY HISTORIANS. Historians state that when the Romans crucified slaves on a “t” cross it was customary for them to be forced to carry the horizontal cross-beam called a Patibulum to the place of execution. So common was this that Roman authors even used Patibulum synonymously with Crux. The Biblical Quarterly, Volume 13, Number 4, October 1951, on page 442 gives as an example: Seneca, De Vita Beata 193, Epiktola 101:12 and Tacitus, Historiae 4, 3. This volume also mentions that Irenaeus (second century A.D.) speaks of Jesus’ cross as having a cross-beam, and the Epistle of Barnabus 10, 8 which was written earlier speaks of the cross as having the shape of a Greek TAU (“T”).

## **ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE**

### a. Skeletal Remains of a Man Who had Died by Crucifixion.

In 1968 during road construction, just north of Jerusalem, a bulldozer exposed an ancient cemetery at Giv’at HaMitar. Here Israeli archaeologists unearthed the skeleton of a man Yehohanan (John) son of Chagqoi, who had been crucified between the age of 24 and 28, about the same time as Christ. From the book Buried History Volume 9, Number 2, (June 1973) pages 38,39, (Australian Institute of Archaeology): “The victim was nailed to the

**Page 216**

cross in a sitting position, both his legs slung sideways, with the nail penetrating the sides of both feet just below the heels.. The knees were doubled in a semi-flexed position... the trunk was contorted and the arms stretched out each apparently stabbed with a nail in the forearm ... the arm bones were scratched around the nails, by Yehohanan’s writings, some two inches above the wrist bones .. Scholars in Jerusalem believe that the posture revealed in the anatomical report indicated the usual position for crucifixion used in the city at that time. Since these scholars who carried out the study were Israeli experts, they could not be accused of being biased orthodox Christians supporting a traditional stand.” Dr. Siegfried Horn wrote the above article In the Adventist Review Mar. 2, 1972. This Illustration was of the crucifixion of Yehohanan.

### b. Drawings in the Catacombs.

In the previously quoted book, Buried History, on pages 40 and 41, it makes the statement that although “the early Christians shrank from all representation of the Passion, a score of crosses can be collected from the graffiti of the catacombs.” It goes on to state that, “In one or two rare catacomb inscriptions, the cross, in the form of a capital T, seems to be inserted in the midst of a martyr’s name. The graffito below comes from the Palace of the Caesars in Rome. The author of this kit viewed it in a Museum on the Palatine Hill, in the Forum in Rome in 1983. It is a mockery of a Christian worshipping a crucified ass, and is labeled: Alexamenos worships his God

This early graffito reveals the fact that the crucifixion was a cross of the traditional form, and not just a stake as now contended by the Watchtower Society. The popular World Book Dictionary uses an illustration of this drawing, to illustrate the word graffito. It also appears in Buried History, Volume 9, Number 2, page 41. For further information see, Ancient Times Volume 5 Number 3, March 1961, page 12, of (Australian Institute of Archaeology).

## **THE CROSS IN THE HISTORY OF THE WATCHTOWER**

For many years the Watchtower Society wrote and sang about the Cross of Christ and as late as the time of Judge Rutherford, it was still depicted in the Society’s publications as a “T” cross. When “new light” came to the Society on this subject, it began to teach that Christ had not been nailed to the widely accepted cross with a crossbeam. This type of cross it now taught, was associated with paganism, and the sun-god. It was also said to be associated with the phallic symbol of life. This teaching was designed to claim for itself purity of doctrine, and at the same time isolate itself from other Christians. It made the publications, churches, hymns and worship of such Christians abhorrent to the Witnesses, since it centered around them glorying or boasting (see Galatians 6:14) in such a repugnant pagan cross.

## **WATCHTOWER'S CHALLENGE FAILS**

The article torture stake in the Appendix of The Kingdom interlinear Translation ends with this prophetic challenge: "The passing of time and further archeological discoveries will be certain to prove its correctness. Even now the burden rests upon all to prove that Jesus died on more than a simple stake." However, when these words were being prepared for publication in the Interlinear (1968-1969), the bulldozer laid bare the skeleton of a man who had been crucified on such a cross, and this took place about the time of Christ's life! (See opposite page). It would seem that Jehovah God took up the challenge immediately to reveal the truth on the subject of the type of cross Christ was crucified on.

## **THE WATCHTOWER'S HISTORICAL SUPPORT**

a. Justus Lipsius.

In Watchtower publications such as The New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures, (1950) page 770, and The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures, (1969), page 1156, an illustration of the Crux Simplex (Stake) is reproduced from the writings of the Roman Catholic scholar, Justus Lipsius of the 16th Century, to support the Watchtower Society's case. On page 1155 of The Kingdom Interlinear, the statement is made: "Jesus was crucified on a crux simplex." However, nowhere in the book, De Cruce Liber Primus, does Justus Lipsius say that Jesus was impaled on a crux simplex! On the contrary, he outlines that Jesus was crucified on a cross with a cross-beam and this accompanying illustration was depicted! Many sincere Jehovah's Witnesses are deeply shocked to learn these facts. Justus Lipsius'

**Page 217**

book gave many illustrations of methods of crucifixion, and most of them, had cross-beams.

Summary:

The evidence of:

- a. The Bible.
- b. History.
- c. Archaeology.

Does not support the Watchtower Society's Position! The scholarship of the Society on the subject of the torture stake reveals either ignorance, dishonesty or both! The cross of Jesus Christ is neither to be revered nor is it to be repudiated. Readers are urged to be careful that while they are contending over the method of Christ's crucifixion, that they are not missing out on a personal relationship with the One who was crucified, and the benefits of this most wonderful outworking of Divine love! After having made these claims for nearly 20 and 40 years respectively, the new editions of Watchtower publications have attest deleted them!

## **33. Vaccinations And Blood Transfusions**

In 1935 the Watchtower Society taught that Vaccination was a direct violation of the law of Jehovah God. Many sincere Witnesses, especially children, died as a result. Within twenty years the Society admitted that this prohibition was without scriptural support, and vaccinations were then allowed. However, by this time, the Society was teaching it was a violation of the law of Jehovah God to have a blood transfusion, and many Witnesses have since died as a result of this doctrine.

### **VACCINATIONS**

The Watchtower law which forbade them:

"As vaccination is a direct in of animal matter in the blood stream, vaccination is a direct violation of the law of Jehovah God." The Golden Age, page 465. April 24, 1935.

The Watchtower admission which allowed them:

Is vaccination a violation of God's law forbidding the taking of blood into the system? C., North Carolina.

The matter of vaccination is one for the individual that has to face it to decide for himself. Each individual has to take the consequences for whatever position and action he takes toward a case of compulsory vaccination, doing so according to his own



conscience and his appreciation of what is for good health and the interests of advancing God's work. And our Society cannot afford

Most certainly it cannot reasonably or scripturally be argued and proved that, by being vaccinated, the inoculated person is either eating or drinking blood and consuming it as food or receiving a blood transfusion. Vaccination does not bear any relationship to or any likeness to the intermarriage of angelic "sons of God" with the daughters of men, as described in Genesis 6:14. Neither can it be put in the same class as described at Leviticus 18: 23, 24 which forbids the mingling of humans with animals. It has nothing to do with sex relations. Hence all objection to vaccination on Scriptural grounds seems to be lacking" - The Watchtower, 1952, page 764.

Results of this Watchtower teaching:

Many Witnesses and especially their children died as a result of this irresponsible teaching. One woman I met had migrated from Scotland to New Zealand, where she and her husband became Jehovah's Witnesses. As such they refused to have their son vaccinated against diphtheria, and at the time of commencing school he contracted this disease and died. The husband grieving over the loss of their only child along with his work and witnessing commitments, developed a stomach ulcer. One night the ulcer hemorrhaged with a massive blood loss. He refused what would have been a life-saving blood transfusion, and died. Shortly after his death the grief-stricken widow, only in her early forties, suffered a stroke, and was left permanently paralyzed. This whole tragic chain of events was set off by the Watchtower Society's irresponsible misinterpretation of scripture. When the Society finally admitted they had made a mistake and allowed vaccinations, it was too late for this family and many others like it, who had implicitly believed in the Watchtower Society as a spokesman for Jehovah God. (This story is in Witness

**Page 218**

Volume 3, Number 3, 1977, by E. B. Price.)

## **WHY DID THE WATCHTOWER CHANGE ITS ATTITUDES**

Many believe it was because the Society's leadership found they could not visit international conventions in foreign countries unless they were vaccinated. A. H. MacMillan, one of the Society's outstanding leaders, gives a clue in his book, Faith On The March, Page 188-189:

"One of the more serious problems I had to deal with, as I remember, was vaccinations. An order was received from the health department in Washington for all the inmates and guards to be vaccinated. Some of our boys in one prison in particular considered this the same as blood transfusion and refused to submit. This caused considerable trouble. Then the order came from Washington to put all the men who refused to be vaccinated in solitary confinement. This did not change our men. The prison authorities hesitated to be overly strict about it; still they had their orders from headquarters. Well, during the excitement I arrived on my regular visit. Now the matter was put up to me to advise our men. Our discussion lasted about two hours, then the men decided to submit to vaccination after making a token resistance. Furthermore they agreed to write a letter of apology for the trouble they had caused through their first stand taken."

The story of the Watchtower Society and Vaccinations is an incredible one! The above is just one chapter in the saga. Behind it is untold suffering and tragedy, yet those who made the laws, were the first to break them when it suited them. On the other hand those who believed the Society and refused to have a vaccination were considered by the leadership such as A. H. MacMillan as being trouble makers and were encouraged to write a letter of apology! How can one trust such an organization?

## **BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS**

The second infamous chapter of the Watchtower Society, which has cost the lives of many of its faithful "foot-step followers", is that concerning blood transfusions. Like vaccinations, it is also dependent upon the Society's interpretation of scripture, which, as has already been observed, leaves much to be desired.

## **"NOT TO EAT BLOOD"**

The Watchtower Society's prohibition against blood transfusions is dependent upon the interpretation of the Biblical command, not to eat blood.

Man's original diet given to him in Eden was a meatless diet. However after the Flood, God told man he could eat of everything that moved on the face of the earth (this obviously did not include man), but that they were not to eat the blood. Moses

later elaborated on the types of flesh they could eat for food, but they were not allowed to eat the blood of this flesh, nor were they, allowed to eat anything strangled. Leviticus 17:13-15. (Note that verse 13 qualifies the flesh under discussion as beast or fowl).

In the early Christian church when these laws were under discussion, it was decided that the Gentiles joining the church should also abstain from things strangled and from blood. Acts 15:20, 29.

The above Biblical injunctions are those the Watchtower Society interprets to prohibit a person receiving a blood transfusion. Is this another of its misinterpretation of scripture?

## **“TO EAT”**

The Concise Oxford Dictionary, defines eat thus: Masticate & swallow. This definition is exactly that which is understood by most people today, and also what was understood in Bible times. It leads to a well defined metabolic process, which is entirely destructive as regards the food itself, as it is acted upon by various chemicals within the body. This action entirely breaks it up and converts it into a form in which it can be absorbed into the body. What is not absorbed is excreted. There is no way in which a blood transfusion can honestly be said to be eaten by the body. By contrast the transfused blood mixes with that of the patient and supplements it, without being in any way altered itself!

**Page 219**

## **TWO DIFFERENT PROCESSES**

One wonders how an organization such as the Watchtower Society, which professes to take the commands of the Bible literally, could stumble over such a simple instruction: not to eat blood! It is tragic to realize this misinterpretation of scripture has caused so much suffering and death.

## **WHAT KIND OF BLOOD WAS NOT TO BE EATEN?**

Human blood is never mentioned in this connection!

## **OF BEASTS AND FOWLS ONLY**

Genesis 9:34. The every moving thing of the KJV is rendered every moving animal in the N.W. All would agree that the context does not allow flesh or blood in this Biblical passage to refer to human flesh or blood. Leviticus 17:13-15. This passage qualifies the flesh and blood under discussion as beast and fowl.

Verse 11. Mentions concerning the blood that:

... the soul of the flesh is in the blood..

... the blood that makes an atonement by the soul in it.

This is true of a beast or fowl that has been killed, but it does not apply to a blood transfusion, because the donor did not die.

Acts 15:20, 29. The context of the blood they were to abstain from along with the things strangled, were the above beast and fowl. It did not even include fish as Jesus and the early disciples ate fish that had been caught in nets, which meant they had been strangled, and certainly not bled! The Watchtower Society understands this, and does not forbid its people to eat fish such as herrings or sardines. To try and introduce the thought that humans and human blood was included is too ridiculous for further discussion!

## **EATING MEAT AND BLOOD!**

The Watchtower Society is very inconsistent on the subject of eating blood. Many sincere Witnesses have died rather than have a drop of blood transfused into their veins. Yet those same people ate gallons of blood in the meat they consumed every year! Authorities state that only about half the blood of an animal is removed by bleeding:

Even with effective bleeding only about 50 per cent of the total blood is removed. Meat Science, (19 74) pages 132-133, by R.A. Lawrie, Ph.D., D.Sc., F.R.S.E., F.F.S.T. In the five animal about 7 per cent of the body weight is represented by blood, but

only about half of this blood can be removed by bleeding. Aspects of Meat Inspection, (19 73) Chapter2. by Horace Thornton, B. V.Sc., D. V.11., F.R.S.H.

Strict Jews who have followed the command not to eat blood eat Kosher meat. The animal is specially killed to expel the maximum blood from the body, then the meat is soaked in brine and the blood is wrung out. Seventh-day Adventists recommend to their people to return to the original diet of the Creator, which was a completely meatless and thus bloodless one. They produce excellent tasty meat substitutes, and a delicious bloodless gravy.

## **BLOOD SUBSTITUTES**

As yet no adequate blood substitute has been found to do the work of the red blood cells which carry the vital oxygen from the lungs to all the cells of the body, especially the brain. A. D. Farr, F.I.M.L.T., in *God, Blood and Society*, outlines on pages 35-36, some of the blood “substitutes” used on Witnesses, and shows some could be carcinogenic, and others have adverse side-effects, such as prolonged bleeding time for the patient and allergic reactions. However, these “substitutes” are still inadequate when there has been a massive blood loss. Without a blood transfusion, in such a case, the patient will die.

## **WHAT OF THE FUTURE?**

Like Vaccinations, the scriptural evidence against blood transfusions as “lacking”. However the Society has gone too far to alter now, although If It did change this teaching, all would accept it with joy. The only way the Society can save face, As If a satisfactory blood substitute could be found to phase blood transfusions out. Perhaps the dangers of diseases like Aids may help to speed up such research. The Watchtower Society discourages its members from supporting any charities other than its own organization.

## **34. Giving To Charities**

### **WHY THE SOCIETY ONLY GIVES TO ITS OWN**

1. Its Biblical Interpretation. In Matthew 25:31-45, Jesus gives a picture of the Judgment, when all will be asked how they fed the hungry, clothed the naked, visited the sick and those in prison etc. However verse 40 (NW) says: “To the extent that YOU did it to one of the least of these my brothers, YOU did it to me.” The my brothers is interpreted to mean those who Christ would claim as “brothers”, that is Jehovah’s Witnesses. So this is the scriptural basis of why the Witnesses believe they need to only help their own. Matthew 5:46-47, however condemns this attitude of only loving, greeting, helping etc. one’s own. There is the parable of the Good Samaritan, which outlines that one even helps those of different ethnic and religious groups.

2. Denigrating Charities. In its magazines the Society takes every opportunity to publicize any mismanagement of charities. Each Index has a list of such articles listed under Contributions, charitable organizations:

3. Stating that Preaching is More Important than Giving. This attitude of the Watchtower Society is summed up at the conclusion of an article which appeared in the *Awake* magazine, January 22, 1966, on page 4: “The preaching of the good news of God’s kingdom may be said to be the most deserving of all philanthropies.”

4. Giving to Charities, Would Assist the Work of the Devil. This is possibly the strongest reason why Witnesses feel they should not assist organizations other than their own. It is strange however, that they feel it is alright to receive assistance from these same “organizations of the Devil”, when they are in need. The following story is an example in case:

### **WITNESS MISSIONARY SAVED BY ADVENTISTS**

Seventh-day Adventists were the first to commence work in the Wabag Valley, Papua New Guinea. Other missions followed and eventually Tom and Rowena Kitto arrived to establish the work of Jehovah’s Witnesses in the area.

In 1964, Pastor Len Barnard pioneered Adventist aviation in New Guinea. Sometime afterwards, Tom Kitto rolled his car over the side of a mountain, and was unable to find adequate help until he went to the Adventist hospital at Sopas, near Wabag, where the Adventist doctor, Dr. Charles Hammond discovered he needed urgent brain surgery. The only hospital able to perform this delicate operation was at Goroka, over 200 miles away.

Tom’s problem was now transportation, as no airline would carry a man in his critical condition, especially as a plane would have to fly over a mountain range which towered up to 15,000 feet, to reach Goroka. The Adventist doctor radioed Tom Kitto’s plight to Pastor Len Barnard. He immediately altered his busy schedule, and offered to fly to Wabag and pick up Tom. By

flying a circuitous route along the highland valleys, he was able to circumnavigate the high mountain ranges to avoid what would have meant to Tom fatal variations of air pressures.

By the time, the Adventist mission plane touched down at the Goroka airport on its mission of mercy, Len had radioed for an ambulance, notified the hospital, and had everything in readiness. The operation was a success. Torn Kitto was reunited with his wife Rowena, and they gave many more years of service to the Watchtower Society. Their story is in the 1078 Yearbook, pages 66-67. Each year throughout Australia, Seventh-day Adventists call on the public for financial help to run such hospitals as the one at Sopas, and also to make mercy flights such as the one that saved Tom Kitto's life. Most people in the public respond happily, with one outstanding exception, our friends the Jehovah's Witnesses!

## **THE GOLDEN RULE & THE WATCHTOWER**

### **SOCIETY**

This attitude of the Watchtower Society is one that is certainly not supported by scripture. Many people in the public who do not profess to be Christians, but know the Golden Rule, are appalled by the stand that Jehovah's Witnesses are led to take by the Watchtower Society.

### **OUR TASK**

To try and show these sincere people (many of whom are otherwise very generous), that as the Watchtower Society has made many mistakes in the past, and many misinterpretations of scripture, that they should have another look at this question of giving. In the instructions of Christ, and the Bible writers, they will find a true Christian gives to alleviate pain and suffering, irrespective of who the sufferer might be. Jesus, our Example even said: Love Your Enemies.. Do Good to Them that Hate You!

Pastor Lan Barnard Inspecting preparations for another mercy flight by the Adventist mission plane, "Andrew Stewart". It was In this plane that he flew Tom Kitto, the pioneer missionary of the Jehovah's Witnesses, from the Sopas Adventist hospital In Wabag, to Goroka, PNG, for specialized surgery which saved Tom's life. However, Jehovah's Witnesses, while happy to receive such assistance, feel It would be wrong to support such a program!

## **35. Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days**

Birthdays, Christmas, Mother's Days etc were commemorated by the Watchtower Society during the first fifty years of its history, as times of praise and thanksgiving to God. Since 1928 this has all been discarded.

The reasons why the Society celebrated Christmas for so many years is given in the 1925 Manna book reading for December 25. (See Figure 1.) Most Christians would still believe that this was a balanced and sane approach. Their attitude to Birthdays and Mother's Day was likewise. Those old Bible Students were a happy loving group, who found such occasions proved a blessing to them. But then it all changed:

"At our early conventions, between sessions, as the friends were chatting together," writes Anna E. Zimmerman, "you might have seen some friends handing you their 'Manna' book (Daily Heavenly Manna for the Household of Faith), asking to please write your name and address in their 'Manna.' You would write it on the blank page opposite the date of your birthday, and when your birthday came around and they read their text that morning for the day they might decide to write you a card or letter, wishing you a happy birthday."

Yes, in those earlier days, dedicated Christians commemorated birthdays. Well, then, why not celebrate the supposed birthday of Jesus? This they also did for many years. In Pastor Russell's day, Christmas was celebrated at the old Bible House in Allegheny, Pennsylvania. Ora Sullivan Wakefield recalls Brother Russell gave members at the Bible House five or ten-dollar gold pieces at Christmas. Mabel P. M. Philbrick remarks: "A custom that certainly would not be carried on today was the celebration of Christmas with a Christmas tree in the Bethel dining room. Brother Russell's usual 'Good morning, all' was changed to 'Merry Christmas, all.' What caused the Bible Students to stop celebrating Christmas? Richard H. Barber gave this answer: "I was asked to give an hour talk over a [radio] hookup on the subject of Christmas. It was given December 12, 1928, and published in The Golden Age, number 241 and again a year later in number 268. That talk pointed out the pagan origin of Christmas. After that, the brothers at Bethel never celebrated Christmas again!"

"Did we mind putting those pagan things away?" asks Charles John Brandlein. "Absolutely not. This was just complying with new things learned, and we had never known before they were pagan. It was just like taking a soiled garment off and throwing it away." Next, birthday celebrations and Mother's day were discarded-more creature worship. Sister Lillian Kamrude recalls: "How readily the brothers all dropped these holidays and admitted they were glad to be free. New truths always make us happy and we felt we were privileged to know things that others were Ignorant about." 1975 yearbook, Page 147.

Pastor C.T. Russell, the founder of the Watchtower Society, along with all the heavenly class at that time, all celebrated Christmas, Birthdays, Mother's Days etc... It is believed that when they died they went to heaven to rule in the heavens and direct the Society on earth. Pastor Russell's birthday was recorded in the 1925 Manna:

DECEMBER is..

**Page 222**

Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, which is Christ the Lord. Luke 2:10, 11.

Although we cannot agree that this is the proper day for celebrating the birth of our dear Redeemer, but must insist that it was about October first (Millennial Dawn, Volume 2, Page 54), nevertheless since he did not intimate his desire that we should celebrate his birthday. It is quite immaterial upon what day that event of so great importance to all, is celebrated. Upon this day, so generally celebrated. we may properly enough join with all whose hearts are in the attitude of love and appreciation toward God and toward the Savior. The habit of giving little remembrance another at this time of year seems to us especially appropriate. God is the giver of every perfect gift. He is continually giving and we are continually receiving from him; but amongst all his gifts the one of greatest importance to us is the gift of his Son to be our Redeemer."

DAILY

Heavenly Manna for the Household of Faith

SCRIPTURE TEXTS

from

THE WATCH TOWER

A Birthday Record

1925

## ***IS IT EVIL TO CELEBRATE BIRTHDAYS, MOTHER'S DAY, ETC?***

There are no texts in the Bible, either commanding or forbidding such celebrations. What is forbidden, are evil practices concerning such occasions. The deciding factor is how they are celebrated. See Romans 14:5-6.

Practices can not be forbidden merely because the pagans do them. Pagans have weddings and from them came the wedding ring custom. However, the Watchtower Society allows its members to perform weddings and have wedding rings. They would argue that there is nothing evil about such celebrations. Why then do they not take the same attitude to Birthdays?

Mother's Days and Father's Day are even harder for them to condemn, because the Bible commands us to honor our fathers and our mothers. To say this is creature worship and thus evil is neither scriptural or sane. If the Society is anxious to discard all that is pagan, then why do they use the pagan names for the days and months of the year, commence the day at midnight instead of at sunset as outlined in the Bible? Why are their major meetings all held on the day dedicated by the pagans to the Sun god etc? One soon realizes as they examine this subject that the Society is very inconsistent, and often without Biblical support for its attitudes of what is evil.